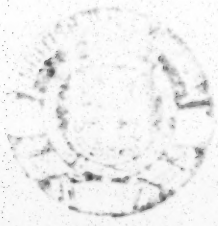
TOM JONES.

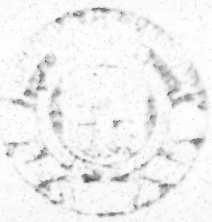
VOLUME THIRD.



TOM JONES.

IN

THREE VOLUMES.



THE HISTORY OF TOM JONES A FOUNDLING.

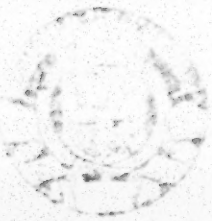
BY

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOLUME THIRD.

LONDON:
Printed for JOHN BELL, No 132. Strand.
M. DCC. LXXV.



THE HISTORY OF TOM JONES A FOUNDLING.

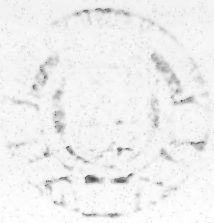
BY

HENRY FIELDING, Esq;

IN THREE VOLUMES.

VOLUME THIRD.

LONDON:
Printed for JOHN BELL, No 132. Strand.
M. DCC. LXXV.



CONTENTS

OF

VOLUME THIRD.

BOOK XV.

In which the history advances about two days.

CHAP. I.

Too short to need a preface. Page 1

CHAP. II.

In which is opened a very black design against Sophia. 2

CHAP. III.

A further explanation of the foregoing design. 3

CHAP. IV.

By which it will appear how dangerous an advocate a lady is, when she applies her eloquence to an ill purpose. 12

CHAP. V.

Containing some matters which may affect, and others which may surprise the reader. 14

CHAP. VI.

By what means the 'Squire came to discover his daughter. 21

CHAP. VII.

In which various misfortunes befel poor Jones. 26

CHAP. VIII.

Short and sweet. 34

CHAP. IX.

Containing love-letters of several sorts. 36

CHAP. X.

Consisting partly of facts, and partly of observations upon them. 43

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

Containing curious but not unprecedented matter. p. 48.

CHAP. XII.

A discovery made by Partridge. 50

BOOK XVI.

Containing the space of five days.

CHAP. I.

Of prologues. 55

CHAP. II.

A whimsical adventure which befel the 'squire, with the distressed situation of Sophia. 57

CHAP. III.

What happened to Sophia during her confinement. 65

CHAP. IV.

In which Sophia is delivered from her confinement. 69

CHAP. V.

In which Jones receives a letter from Sophia, and goes to a play with Mrs Miller and Partridge. 74

CHAP. VI.

In which the history is obliged to go back. 82

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr Western pays a visit to his sister, in company with Mr Blifil. 85

CHAP. VIII.

Schemes of lady Bellaston for the ruin of Jones. 88

CHAP. IX.

In which Jones pays a visit to Mrs Fitzpatrick. 92

CHAP. X.

The consequence of the preceding visit. 98

BOOK XVII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

Containing a portion of introductory writing. 101

CHAP

CHAP. II.

The generous and grateful behaviour of Mrs Miller. Page 103

CHAP. III.

The arrival of Mr Western, with some matters concerning the paternal authority. 107

CHAP. IV.

An extraordinary scene between Sophia and her aunt. 115

CHAP. V.

Mrs Miller and Mr Nightingale visit Jones in the prison. 120

CHAP. VI.

In which Mrs Miller pays a visit to Sophia. 124

CHAP. VII.

A pathetic scene between Mr Allworthy and Mrs Miller. 127

CHAP. VIII.

Containing various matters. 130

CHAP. IX.

What happened to Mr Jones in the prison. 137

BOOK XVIII.

Containing about six days.

CHAP. I.

A farewel to the reader. 144

CHAP. II.

Containing a very tragical incident. 146

CHAP. III.

Allworthy visits old Nightingale; with a strange discovery that he made on that occasion. 151

CHAP. IV.

Containing two letters in very different stiles. 156

CHAP. V.

In which the history is continued. 160

CHAP. VI.

In which the history is further continued. 166

CHAP VII.

Continuation of the hiſtory. Page 171

CHAP. VIII.

Further continuation. 176

CHAP. IX.

A further continuation. 185

CHAP. X.

Wherein the hiſtory begins to draw towards a concluſion. 193

CHAP. XI.

The hiſtory draws nearer to a concluſion. 199

CHAP. XII.

Approaching ſtill nearer to the end. 206

CHAP. *The laſt.*

In which the hiſtory is concluded. 213

Philoſophical Tranſactions. 221

The firſt Olynthiac of Demoſthenes. 237

Of the Remedy of Affliction for the loſs of our Friends. 247

A Dialogue between Alexander the Great, and Diogenes the Cynic. 263

An Interlude. 275

The True Patriot. 282

The Jacobite's Journal. 339

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XV.

In which the history advances about two days.

CHAP. I.

Too short to need a preface.

THERE are a set of religious, or rather moral writers, who teach that virtue is the certain road to happiness, and vice to misery, in this world. A very wholesome and comfortable doctrine, and to which we have but one objection, namely, that it is not true.

Indeed, if by virtue these writers mean the exercise of those cardinal virtues, which like good housewives stay at home, and mind only the business of their own family, I shall very readily concede the point; for so surely do all these contribute and lead to happiness, that I could almost wish, in violation of all the ancient and modern sages, to call them rather by the name of wisdom, than by that of virtue; for with regard to this life, no system, I conceive, was ever wiser than that of the ancient Epicureans, who held this wisdom to constitute the chief good: nor foolisher than that of their opposites, those modern Epicures, who place all felicity in the abundant gratification of every sensual appetite.

But if by virtue is meant (as I almoſt think it ought) a certain relative quality, which is always buſying itſelf without doors, and ſeems as much intereſted in purſuing the good of others as its own; I cannot ſo eaſily agree that this is the ſureſt way to human happineſs; becauſe I am afraid we muſt then include poverty and contempt, with all the miſchiefs which backbiting, envy, and ingratitude can bring on mankind, in our idea of happineſs; nay, ſometimes, perhaps, we ſhall be obliged to wait upon the ſaid happineſs to a gaol; ſince many by the above virtue have brought themſelves thither.

I have not now leiſure to enter upon ſo large a field of ſpeculation, as here ſeems opening upon me; my deſign was to wipe off a doctrine that lay in my way; ſince while Mr Jones was acting the moſt virtuous part imaginable, in labouring to preſerve his fellow creatures from deſtruction, the devil, or ſome other evil ſpirit, one perhaps cloathed in human fleſh, was hard at work to make him completely miſerable in the ruin of his Sophia.

This therefore would ſeem an exception to the above rule, if indeed it was a rule; but as we have in our voyage through life ſeen ſo many other exceptions to it, we chuſe to diſpute the doctrine on which it is founded, which we don't apprehend to be Chriſtian, which we are convinced is not true, and which is indeed deſtructive of one of the nobleſt arguments that reaſon alone can furniſh for the belief of immortality.

But as the reader's curioſity (if he hath any) muſt be now awake, and hungry, we ſhall provide to feed it as faſt as we can.

CHAP. II.

In which is opened a very black deſign againſt Sophia.

I Remember a wiſe old gentleman, who uſed to ſay, 'When children are doing nothing they are doing 'miſchief.' I will not enlarge this quaint ſaying to the moſt beautiful part of the creation in general; but ſo far I may be allowed, that when the effects of female jealouſy

jealouſy do not appear openly in their proper colours of rage and fury, we may ſuſpect that miſchievous paſſion to be at work privately, and attempting to undermine what it doth not attack above ground.

This was exemplified in the conduct of Lady Bellaſton, who, under all the ſmiles which ſhe wore in her countenance, concealed much indignation againſt Sophia; and as ſhe plainly ſaw that this young lady ſtood between her and the full indulgence of her deſires, ſhe reſolved to get rid of her by ſome means or other; nor was it long before a very favourable opportunity of accompliſhing this preſented itſelf to her.

The reader may be pleaſed to remember, that when Sophia was thrown into that conſternation at the playhouſe, by the wit and humour of a ſet of young gentlemen who call themſelves *the town*, we informed him, that ſhe had put herſelf under the protection of a young nobleman, who had very ſafely conducted her to her chair.

This nobleman, who frequently viſited Lady Bellaſton, had more than once ſeen Sophia there, ſince her arrival in town, and had conceived a very great liking to her; which liking, as beauty never looks more amiable than in diſtreſs, Sophia had in this fright ſo encreaſed, that he might now, without any great impropriety, be ſaid to be actually in love with her.

It may eaſily be believed, that he would not ſuffer ſo handſome an occaſion of improving his acquaintance with the beloved object as now offered itſelf, to elapſe, when even good breeding alone might have prompted him to pay her a viſit.

The next morning, therefore, after this accident, he waited on Sophia, with the uſual compliments, and hopes that ſhe had received no harm from her laſt night's adventure.

As love, like fire, when once thoroughly kindled, is ſoon blown into a flame; Sophia in a very ſhort time compleated her conqueſt. Time now flew away unperceived, and the noble lord had been two hours in company with the lady, before it entered into his head that he had made too long a viſit. Though this circumſtance alone would have alarmed Sophia, who was

ſomewhat more a miſtreſs of computation at preſent; ſhe had indeed much more pregnant evidence from the eyes of her lover of what paſt within his boſom; nay, though he did not make any open declaration of his paſſion, yet many of his expreſſions were rather too warm, and too tender, to have been imputed to complaiſance, even in the age when ſuch complaiſance was in faſhion; the very reverſe of which is well known to be the reigning mode at preſent.

Lady Bellaſton had been appriſed of his lordſhip's viſit at his firſt arrival; and the length of it very well ſatisfied her, that things went as ſhe wiſhed, and as indeed ſhe had ſuſpected the ſecond time ſhe ſaw this young couple together. This buſineſs ſhe rightly, I think, concluded, that ſhe ſhould by no means forward by mixing in the company while they were together; ſhe therefore ordered her ſervants, that when my lord was going, they ſhould tell him ſhe deſired to ſpeak with him; and employed the intermediate time in meditating how beſt to accompliſh a ſcheme which ſhe made no doubt but his lordſhip would very readily embrace the execution of.

Lord Fellamar (for that was the title of this young nobleman) was no ſooner introduced to her ladyſhip, than ſhe attacked him in the following ſtrain: 'Bleſs 'me, my lord, are you here yet? I thought my ſer- 'vants had made a miſtake, and let you go away; and 'I wanted to ſee you about an affair of ſome import- 'ance.'——'Indeed, Lady Bellaſton,' ſaid he, 'I 'don't wonder you are aſtoniſhed at the length of my 'viſit: for I have ſtaid above two hours, and I 'did not think I have ſtaid above half a one.'—— 'What am I to conclude from thence, my lord?' ſaid ſhe: 'The company muſt be very agreeable which 'can make time ſlide away ſo very deceitfully.'—— 'Upon my honour,' ſaid he, 'the moſt agreeable I 'ever ſaw. Pray tell me, Lady Bellaſton, who is this 'blazing ſtar which you have produced among us all 'of a ſudden?'——'What blazing ſtar, my lord?' ſaid ſhe, affecting a ſurprize. 'I mean,' ſaid he, 'the lady I ſaw here the other day, whom I had la- 'night in my arms at the playhouſe, and to whom I 'have

'have been making that unreaſonable viſit.'—— 'O, my couſin Weſtern!' ſaid ſhe, 'why that blazing 'ſtar, my lord, is the daughter of a country booby 'ſquire, and hath been in town about a fortnight, 'for the firſt time.'——'Upon my ſoul,' ſaid he, 'I ſhould ſwear ſhe had been bred up in a court; 'for beſides her beauty, I never ſaw any thing ſo 'genteel, ſo ſenſible, ſo polite.'——'O brave!' cries the lady, 'my couſin hath you, I find.'—'Upon 'my honour,' anſwered he, 'I wiſh ſhe had: for I 'am in love with her to diſtraction.'——'Nay, my 'lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'it is not wiſhing yourſelf very ill 'neither, for ſhe is a very great fortune; I aſſure you 'ſhe is an only child, and her father's eſtate is a good '3000l. a-year.' 'Then I can aſſure you, Madam,' anſwered the lord, 'I think her the beſt match in 'England.' 'Indeed, my lord,' replied ſhe, 'if you 'like her, I heartily wiſh you had her.' 'If you 'think ſo kindly of me, Madam,' ſaid he, 'as ſhe is 'a relation of yours, will you do me the honour to 'propoſe it to her father?' 'And are you really 'then in earneſt?' 'cries the lady, with an affected gravity. 'I hope, Madam,' anſwered he, 'you have 'a better opinion of me, than to imagine I would jeſt 'with your ladyſhip in an affair of this kind.' 'Indeed then,' ſaid the lady, 'I will moſt readily pro-'poſe your lordſhip to her father; and I can, I be-'lieve, aſſure you of his joyful acceptance of the pro-'poſal; but there is a bar which I am almoſt aſhamed 'to mention; and yet it is one you will never be able 'to conquer. You have a rival, my lord, and a rival 'who, though I bluſh to name him, neither you, 'nor all the world, will ever be able to conquer.' 'Upon my word, lady Bellaſton,' cries he, 'you 'have ſtruck a damp to my heart, which hath almoſt 'deprived me of being.' 'Fie! my lord,' ſaid ſhe; 'I ſhould rather hope I had ſtruck fire into you. A 'lover, and talk of damps in your heart! I rather 'imagined you would have aſked your rival's name, 'that you might have immediately entered the liſts 'with him.' 'I promiſe you, Madam,' anſwered he, 'there are very few things I would not undertake

'for your charming couſin: but pray who is this 'happy man?'——' Why he is,' ſaid ſhe, 'what I 'am ſorry to ſay moſt happy men with us are, one of 'the loweſt fellows in the world. He is a beggar, 'a baſtard, a foundling, a fellow in meaner circum-'ſtances than one of your lordſhip's footmen.' 'And 'is it poſſible,' cried he, 'that a young creature 'with ſuch perfections ſhould think of beſtowing her-'ſelf ſo unworthily?' 'Alas! my lord,' anſwered ſhe, 'conſider the country — the bane of all young 'women is the country. There they learn a ſet of 'romantic notions of love, and I know not what 'folly, which this town and good company can ſcarce 'eradicate in a whole winter.'——'Indeed, Madam,' replied my lord, 'your couſin is of too immenſe a 'value to be thrown away; ſuch ruin as this muſt be 'prevented.' 'Alas!' cries ſhe, 'my lord, how can 'it be prevented? The family hath already done all 'in their power; but the girl is, I think, intoxicat-'ed, and nothing leſs than ruin will content her. 'And to deal more openly with you, I expect every 'day to hear ſhe is run away with him.' 'What 'you tell me lady Bellaſton,' anſwered his lordſhip, 'affects me moſt tenderly, and only raiſes my com-'paſſion inſtead of leſſening my adoration of your 'couſin. Some means muſt be found to preſerve ſo 'ineſtimable a jewel. Hath your ladyſhip endea-'voured to reaſon with her?' Here the lady affected a laugh, and cried, 'My dear lord, ſure you know 'us better than to talk of reaſoning a young woman 'out of her inclinations? Theſe ineſtimable jewels 'are as deaf as the jewels they wear; time, my lord, 'time is the only medicine to cure their folly; but 'this is a medicine, which I am certain ſhe will not 'take; nay, I live in hourly horrors on her account.' 'In ſhort, nothing but violent methods will do.' 'What is to be done?' cries my lord, 'What me-'thods are to be taken? — Is there any method upon 'earth?——Oh! lady Bellaſton! there is nothing 'which I would not undertake for ſuch a reward.' ——'I really know not,' anſwered the lady, after a pauſe; and then pauſing again, ſhe cried out,——

'Upon

'Upon my ſoul, I am at my wit's end on this girl's account.——If ſhe can be preſerved, ſomething muſt be done immediately: and, as I ſay, nothing but violent methods will do.——If your lordſhip hath really this attachment to my couſin, (and to do her juſtice, except in this ſilly inclination, of which ſhe will ſoon ſee her folly, ſhe is every way deſerving), I think there may be one way, indeed it is a very diſagreeable one, and what I am almoſt afraid to think of.——It requires great ſpirit, I promiſe you.' 'I am not conſcious, Madam,' ſaid he, 'of any defect there; nor am I, I hope, ſuſpected of any ſuch. It muſt be an egregious defect, indeed, which could make me backward on this occaſion.' 'Nay, my lord,' anſwered ſhe, 'I am ſo far from doubting you, I am much more inclined to doubt my own courage; for I muſt run a monſtrous riſque. In ſhort, I muſt place ſuch a confidence in your honour as a wiſe woman will ſcarce ever place in a man on any conſideration.' In this point likewiſe my lord very well ſatisfied her; for his reputation was extremely clear, and common fame did him no more than juſtice in ſpeaking well of him. 'Well then,' ſaid ſhe, 'my lord.——I ——I vow, I can't bear the apprehenſion of it.——No, it muſt not be.——At leaſt every other method ſhall be tried. Can you get rid of your engagements, and dine here to-day? Your lordſhip will have an opportunity of ſeeing a little more of Miſs Weſtern.——I promiſe you, we have no time to loſe. Here will be no body but lady Betty, and Miſs Eagle, and colonel Hamſted, and Tom Edwards; they will all go ſoon——and I ſhall be at home to no body. Then your lordſhip may be a little more explicit. Nay, I will contrive ſome method to convince you of her attachment to this fellow.' My lord made proper compliments, accepted the invitation, and then they parted to dreſs, it being now paſt three in the morning, or to reckon by the old ſtyle, in the afternoon.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A further explanation of the foregoing design.

THOUGH the reader may have long ſince concluded lady Bellaſton to be a member (and an inconſiderable one) of the great world, ſhe was in reality a very conſiderable member of the little world, by which appellation was diſtinguiſhed a very worthy and honourable ſociety which not long ſince flouriſhed in this kingdom.

Among other good principles upon which this ſociety was founded, there was one very remarkable; for as it was a rule of an honourable club of heroes who aſſembled at the cloſe of the late war, that all the members ſhould every day fight once at leaſt: 'twas in this, that every member ſhould, within twenty-four hours, tell at leaſt one merry fib, which was to be propagated by all the brethren and ſiſterhood.

Many idle ſtories were told about this ſociety, which from a certain quality may be, perhaps, unjuſtly ſuppoſed to have come from the ſociety themſelves. As, that the devil was the preſident; and that he ſet in perſon in an elbow-chair at the upper end of the table; but upon very ſtrict enquiry, I find there is not the leaſt truth in any of thoſe tales, and that the aſſembly conſiſted in reality of a ſet of very good ſort of people, and the fibs which they propagated were of a harmleſs kind, and tended only to produce mirth and good humour.

Edwards was likewiſe a member of this comic ſociety. To him therefore lady Bellaſton applied as a proper inſtrument for her purpoſe, and furniſhed him with a fib, which he was to vent whenever the lady gave him her cue, and this was not to be till the evening, when all the company but lord Fellamar and himſelf were gone, and while they were engaged in a rubber at whiſt.

To this time then, which was between ſeven and eight in the evening, we will convey our reader, when lady Bellaſton, lord Fallamar, Miſs Weſt-

and Tom being engaged at whiſt, and in the laſt game of their rubbers, Tom received his cue from lady Bellaſton, which was, 'I proteſt, Tom, you are 'grown intolerable lately; you uſed to tell us all the 'news of the town, and now you know no more of 'the world than if you lived out of it.'

Mr Edwards then began as follows: 'The fault 'is not mine, Madam; it lies in the dulneſs of the 'age, that doth nothing worth talking of.——O la! 'though now I think on't there hath a terrible ac-'cident befallen poor colonel Wilcox.——Poor Ned. '——You know him, my lord, every body knows 'him; faith! I am very much concerned for him.'

'What is it, pray?' ſays lady Bellaſton.

'Why, he hath killed a man this morning in a 'duel, that's all.'

His lordſhip, who was not in the ſecret, aſked gravely, whom he had killed? To which Edwards anſwered, 'A young fellow we none of us know; a 'Somerſetſhire lad juſt come to town, one Jones his 'name is; a near relation of one Mr Allworthy, of 'whom your lordſhip I believe hath heard. I ſaw 'the lad lie dead in a coffee-houſe.—Upon my ſoul 'he is one of the fineſt corpſes I ever ſaw in my 'life.'

Sophia, who had juſt began to deal as Tom had mentioned that a man was killed, ſtopt her hand, and liſtened with attention, (for all ſtories of that kind affected her); but no ſooner had he arrived at the latter part of the ſtory, then ſhe began to deal again; and having dealt three cards to one, and ſeven to another, and ten to a third, at laſt dropt the reſt from her hand, and fell back in her chair.

The company behaved as uſually on theſe occaſions. The uſual diſturbance enſued, the uſual aſſiſtance was ſummoned, and Sophia at laſt, as it is uſual, returned again to life, and ſoon after was, at her earneſt deſire, led to her own apartment; where, at my lord's requeſt, lady Bellaſton acquainted her with the truth, attempted to carry it off as a jeſt of her own, and comforted her with repeated aſſurances, that neither

his

his lordſhip, nor Tom, though ſhe had taught him the ſtory, were in the true ſecret of the affair.

There was no farther evidence neceſſary to convince lord Fellamar how juſtly the caſe had been represented to him by lady Bellaſton; and now, at his return into the room, a ſcheme was laid between the two noble perſons, which though it appeared in a very heinous light to his lordſhip, (as he faithfully promiſed, and faithfully reſolved too, to make the lady all the ſubſequent amends in his power by marriage;) yet many of our readers, we doubt not, will ſee with juſt deteſtation.

The next evening at ſeven was appointed for the fatal purpoſe, when lady Bellaſton undertook that Sophia ſhould be alone, and his lordſhip ſhould be introduced to her. The whole family were to be regulated for the purpoſe, moſt of the ſervants diſpatched out of the houſe; and for Mrs Honour, who, to prevent ſuſpicion, was to be left with her miſtreſs till his lordſhip's arrival, lady Bellaſton herſelf was to engage her in an apartment as diſtant poſſible from the ſcene of the intended miſchief, and out of the hearing of Sophia.

Matters being thus agreed on, his lordſhip took his leave, and her ladyſhip retired to reſt, highly pleaſed with a project, of which ſhe had no reaſon to doubt the ſucceſs, and which promiſed ſo effectually to remove Sophia from being any future obſtruction to her amour with Jones, by a means of which ſhe ſhould never appear to be guilty, even if the fact ſhould appeared to the world: but this ſhe made no doubt of preventing by huddling up a marriage, to which ſhe thought the ravithed Sophia would eaſily be brought to conſent, and at which all the reſt of her family would rejoice.

But affairs were not in ſo quiet a ſituation in the boſom of the other conſpirator: his mind was toſſed with all the diſtracting anxiety ſo nobly deſcribed by Shakſpear.

" Between the acting of a dreadful thing,
" And the firſt motion, all the interim is
" Like a phantaſma, or a hideous dream:

" The genius and the mortal inſtruments
" Are then in council; and the ſtate of man,
" Like to a little kingdom, ſuffers then
" The nature of an inſurrection." ——

Though the violence of his paſſion had made him eagerly embrace the firſt hint of this deſign, eſpecially as it came from a relation of the lady, yet when that friend to reflection, a pillow, had placed the action itſelf in all its natural black colours before his eyes, with all the conſequences which muſt, and thoſe which might probably attend it; his reſolution began to abate, or rather indeed to go over to the other ſide; and after a long conflict which laſted a whole night between honour and appetite, the former at length prevailed, and he determined to wait on lady Bellaſton, and to relinquiſh the deſign.

Lady Bellaſton was in bed, though very late in the morning, and Sophia ſitting by her bed ſide, when the ſervant acquainted her that lord Fellamar was below in the parlour; upon which her ladyſhip deſired him to ſtay, and that he would ſee him preſently; but the ſervant was no ſooner departed than poor Sophia began to intreat her couſin not to encourage the viſits of that odious lord (ſo ſhe called him, though a little unjuſtly) upon her account. 'I ſee his deſign,' ſaid ſhe; 'for he made downright love to me yeſterday morning; but as I am reſolved never to admit it, I beg your ladyſhip not to leave us alone together any more, and to order the ſervants that, if he enquires for me, I may be always denied to him.'

'La! child,' ſays lady Bellaſton, 'you country girls have nothing but ſweet-hearts in your head; you fancy every man who is civil to you is making love. He is one of the moſt gallant young fellows about town, and I am convinced means no more than a little gallantry. Makes love to you indeed! I wiſh with all my heart he would, and you muſt be an arrant mad woman to refuſe him.'

'But as I ſhall certainly be that mad woman,' cries Sophia, 'I hope his viſits ſhall not be intruded upon me.'

'O child,

'O child,' ſaid lady Bellaſton, 'you need not
'ſo fearful; if you reſolve to run away with the
'Jones, I know no perſon who can hinder you.'

'Upon my honour, Madam,' cries Sophia, 'your
'ladyſhip injures me. I will never run away with
'any man; nor will I ever marry contrary to my fa-
'ther's inclinations.'

'Well, Miſs Weſtern,' ſaid the lady, 'if you are
'not in a humour to ſee company this morning, you
'may retire to your own apartment; for I am
'frightened at his lordſhip, and muſt ſend for him
'up into my dreſſing-room.'

Sophia thanked her ladyſhip, and withdrew: and
preſently afterwards Fellamar was admitted up ſtairs.

CHAP. IV.

By which it will appear how dangerous an advocate a lady is, when ſhe applies her eloquence to an ill purpoſe.

WHEN lady Bellaſton heard the young lord's ſcruples, ſhe treated them with the ſame diſdain with which one of thoſe ſages of the law, called Newgate ſolicitors, treats the qualms of conſcience in a young witneſs. 'My dear lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'you 'certainly want a cordial. I muſt ſend to Mrs 'Edgely for one of her beſt drams. Fie upon it, 'have more reſolution. Are you frightened by a 'word rape? Or are you apprehenſive——? Why, 'if the ſtory of Helen was modern, I ſhould think 'it unnatural. I mean the behaviour of Paris. It is 'the fondneſs of the lady; for all women love a 'man of ſpirit. There is another ſtory of three Sa-'bine ladies.——and that too, I thank Heaven, is 'very ancient. Your lordſhip, perhaps, will admi-'mire my reading; but I think Mr Hooke tells 'us, they made tolerable good wives afterwards. 'I fancy few of my married acquaintance were ra-'viſhed by their huſbands.' 'Nay, dear lady Bel-'laſton,' cried he, 'don't ridicule me in this man-'ner.' 'Why, my good lord,' anſwered ſhe,

'you think any woman in England would not laugh 'at you in her heart, whatever prudery ſhe might 'wear in her countenance?—— You force me to uſe 'a ſtrange kind of language, and to betray my ſex 'moſt abominably: but I am contented with knowing 'my intentions are good, and that I am endeavour-'ing to ſerve my couſin; for I think you will make 'her a good huſband notwithſtanding this; or, upon 'my ſoul, I ſhould not even perſuade her to fling 'herſelf away upon an empty title. She ſhould not 'upbraid me hereafter with having loſt a man of 'ſpirit; for that his enemies allow this poor young 'fellow to be.'

Let thoſe who have had the ſatisfaction of hearing reflections of this kind from a wife or a miſtreſs, declare whether they are at all ſweetened by coming from a female tongue. Certain it is, they ſunk deeper into his lordſhip than any thing which Demoſthenes or Cicero could have ſaid on the occaſion.

Lady Bellaſton perceiving ſhe had fired the young lord's pride, began now, like a true orator, to rouſe other paſſions to its aſſiſtance. 'My lord,' ſays ſhe, in a graver voice, 'you will be pleaſed to remem-'ber, you mentioned this matter to me firſt; for I 'would not appear to you in the light of one who 'is endeavouring to put off my couſin upon you. 'Fourſcore thouſand pounds do not ſtand in need of 'an advocate to recommend them.' 'Nor doth Miſs 'Weſtern,' ſaid he, 'require any recommendation 'from her fortune; for, in my opinion, no woman 'ever had half her charms' 'Yes, yes, my lord,' replied the lady, looking in the glaſs, 'there have 'been women with more than half her charms, I 'aſſure you; not that I need leſſen her on that ac-'count: ſhe is a moſt delicious girl, that's certain; 'and within theſe few hours ſhe will be in the arms 'of one, who ſurely doth not deſerve her, though I 'will give him his due, I believe he is truly a man of 'ſpirit.'

'I hope ſo, Madam,' ſaid my lord; 'though I 'muſt own he doth not deſerve her; for unleſs Hea-

'ven, or your ladyſhip diſappoint me, ſhe ſhall with-
'in that time be in mine.'

'Well ſpoken, my lord,' anſwered the lady, 'I
'promiſe you no diſappointment ſhall happen from
'my ſide; and within this week I am convinced I
'ſhall call your lordſhip my couſin in public.'

The remainder of this ſcene conſiſted entirely of raptures, excuſes, and compliments, very pleaſant to have heard from the parties; but rather dull when related at ſecond hand. Here, therefore, we ſhall put an end to this dialogue, and haſten to the fatal hour, when every thing was prepared for the deſtruction of poor Sophia.

But this being the moſt tragical part of our whole hiſtory, we ſhall treat it in a chapter by itſelf.

CHAP. V.

Containing ſome matters which may affect, and others which may ſurpriſe the reader.

THE clock had now ſtruck ſeven, and poor Sophia, alone and melancholy, ſat reading a tragedy. It was the Fatal Marriage; and ſhe was now come to that part where the poor diſtreſſed Iſabella diſpoſes of her wedding-ring.

Here the book dropt from her hand, and a ſhower of tears ran down into her boſom. In this ſituation ſhe had continued a minute, when the door opened, and in came lord Fellamar. Sophia ſtarted from her chair at his entrance; and his lordſhip advancing forwards, and making a low bow, ſaid, 'I am afraid, 'Miſs Weſtern, I break in upon you abruptly.' 'In-'deed, my lord,' ſays ſhe, 'I muſt own myſelf a 'little ſurpriſed at this unexpected viſit.' 'If this 'viſit be unexpected, Madam,' anſwered lord Fella-mar, 'my eyes muſt have been very faithleſs in-'terpreters of my heart, when laſt I had the honour 'of ſeeing you: for ſurely you could not otherwiſe 'have hoped to detain my heart in your poſſeſſion 'without receiving a viſit from its owner.' Sophia, confuſed as ſhe was, anſwered this bombaſt (and very properly

properly I think) with a look of inconceivable diſdain. My lord then made another and a longer ſpeech of the ſame ſort. Upon which Sophia, trembling, ſaid, 'Am I really to conceive your lordſhip to be out of your ſenſes? Sure, my lord, there is no other excuſe for ſuch behaviour.' —— 'I am, indeed, Madam, in the ſituation you ſuppoſe,' cries his lordſhip; 'and ſure you will pardon the effects of a frenzy which you yourſelf have occaſioned: for love hath ſo totally deprived me of reaſon, that I am ſcarce accountable for any of my actions.' 'Upon my word, my lord,' ſaid Sophia, 'I neither underſtand your words nor your behaviour.'—— Suffer me then, Madam,' cries he, 'at your feet to explain both, by laying open my ſoul to you, and declaring that I doat on you to the higheſt degree of diſtraction. O moſt adorable, moſt divine creature! what language can expreſs the ſentiments of my heart!' 'I do aſſure you, my lord,' ſaid Sophia, 'I ſhall not ſtay to hear any more of this.' 'Do not,' cries he, 'think of leaving me thus cruelly: could you know half the torments which I feel, that tender boſom muſt pity what thoſe eyes have cauſed.' Then fetching a deep ſigh, and laying hold of her hand, he ran on for ſome minutes in a ſtrain which would be little more pleaſing to the reader than it was to the lady; and at laſt concluded with a declaration, 'That if he was maſter of the world, he would lay it at her feet.' Sophia then forcibly pulling away her hand from his, anſwered with much ſpirit, 'I promiſe you, Sir, your world and its maſter, I ſhould ſpurn from me with equal contempt.' She then offered to go, and lord Fellamar again laying hold of her hand, ſaid, 'Pardon me, my beloved angel, freedoms which nothing but deſpair could have tempted me to take.—— Believe me, could I have had any hope that my title and fortune, neither of them inconſiderable, unleſs when compared with your worth, would have been accepted, I had in the humbleſt manner preſented them to your acceptance.—— But I cannot loſe you. —By Heaven, I will ſooner part with my ſoul.—

'You are, you muſt, you ſhall be only mine.' 'My 'Lord,' ſays ſhe, 'I intreat you to deſiſt from a vain 'purſuit; for, upon my honour, I will never hear 'more on this ſubject. Let go my hand, my Lord; 'for I am reſolved to go from you this moment; 'nor will I ever ſee you more.' 'Then, Madam, cries his lordſhip, 'I muſt make the beſt uſe of this 'moment; for I cannot live, nor will I live without 'you.'—'What do you mean, my lord?' ſaid So- 'phia; 'I will raiſe the family.' 'I have no fear 'Madam,' anſwered he, 'but of loſing you, and that 'I am reſolved to prevent, the only way which de- 'ſpair points to me.'——He then caught her in his arms: upon which ſhe ſcreamed ſo loud, that ſhe muſt have alarmed ſome one to her aſſiſtance, had not lady Bellaſton taken care to remove all ears.

But a more lucky circumſtance happened for poor Sophia: another noiſe now broke forth, which almoſt drowned her cries; for now the whole houſe rang with, 'Where is ſhe? D——n me, I'll unkennel her 'this inſtant. Shew me her chamber, I ſay. Where 'is my daughter? I know ſhe's in the houſe, and I 'ſee her if ſhe's above ground. Shew me where ſhe 'is.'—At which laſt words the door flew open, and in came 'ſquire Weſtern, with his parſon, and a few of myrmidons at his heels.

How miſerable muſt have been the condition of poor Sophia, when the enraged voice of her father was welcome to her ears! Welcome indeed it was, and luckily did he come; for it was the only accident upon earth which could have preſerved the peace of her mind from being for ever deſtroyed.

Sophia, notwithſtanding her fright, preſently knew her father's voice; and his lordſhip, notwithſtanding his paſſion, knew the voice of reaſon, which peremptorily aſſured him, it was not now a time for the perpetration of his villainy. Hearing, therefore, the voice approach, and hearing likewiſe whoſe it was (for as the 'ſquire more than once roared forth the word daughter, ſo Sophia, in the midſt of her ſtruggling, cried out upon her father;) he thought proper to relinquiſh his prey, having only diſordered her

hair

handkerchief, and with his rude lips committed violence on her lovely neck.

If the reader's imagination doth not aſſiſt me, I ſhall never be able to deſcribe the ſituation of theſe two perſons when Weſtern came into the room. Sophia tottered into her chair, where ſhe ſat diſordered, pale, breathleſs, burſting with indignation at lord Fellamar; affrighted, and yet more rejoiced at the arrival of her father.

His lordſhip ſat down near her, with the bag of his wig hanging over one of his ſhoulders, the reſt of his dreſs being ſomewhat diſordered, and rather a greater proportion of linen than is uſual appearing at his boſom. As to the reſt, he was amazed, affrighted, vexed, and aſhamed.

As to 'ſquire Weſtern, he happened at this time, to be overtaken by an enemy, which very frequently purſues, and ſeldom fails to overtake moſt of the country-gentlemen in this kingdom. He was, literally ſpeaking, drunk; which circumſtance, together with his natural impetuoſity, could produce no other effect, than his running immediately up to his daughter, upon whom he fell foul with his tongue in the moſt inveterate manner; nay, he had probably committed violence with his hands, had not the parſon interpoſed, ſaying, 'For Heaven's ſake, Sir, animadvert 'that you are in the houſe of a great lady. Let me 'beg you to mitigate your wrath; it ſhould minuter 'a fulneſs of ſatisfaction that you have found your 'daughter; for as to revenge, it belongeth not unto 'us. I diſcern great contrition in the countenance of 'the young lady. I ſtand aſſured, if you will forgive 'her, ſhe will repent her of all paſt offences, and re-'turn unto her duty.'

The ſtrength of the parſon's arms had at firſt been of more ſervice than the ſtrength of his rhetoric. However, his laſt words wrought ſome effect, and the 'ſquire anſwered, 'I'll forgee her if ſhe will ha un. If wot ha un, Sophy, I'll forgee thee all. Why doſt un't ſpeak? Shat ha un? d——d me, that ha un? Why doſt unt anſwer? Was ever ſuch a ſtubborn tuoad?'

'Let me intreat you, Sir, to be a little more mode-
'rate,' ſaid the parſon; 'you frighten the young lady
'ſo, that you deprive her of all power of utterance.'

'Power of mine a——,' anſwered the 'ſquire. 'You
'take her part then, you do? A pretty parſon truly,
'to ſide with an undutiful child. Yes, yes, I will gee
'you a living with a pox. I'll gee un to the devil
'ſooner.'

'I humbly crave your pardon,' ſaid the parſon; 'I
'aſſure your worſhip, I meant no ſuch matter.'

My Lady Bellaſton now entered the room, and came
up to the 'ſquire, who no ſooner ſaw her, than re-
ſolving to follow the inſtructions of his ſiſter, he made
her a very civil bow, in the rural manner, and paid
her ſome of his beſt compliments. He then immedi-
ately proceeded to his complaints, and ſaid, 'There,
'my lady couſin: there ſtands the moſt undutiful child
'in the world: ſhe hankers after a beggarly raſcal, and
'won't marry one of the greateſt matches in all Eng-
'land that we have provided for her.'

'Indeed, couſin Weſtern,' anſwered the lady, 'I
'am perſuaded you wrong my couſin. I am ſure ſhe
'hath a better underſtanding. I am convinced ſhe
'will not refuſe what ſhe muſt be ſenſible is ſo much
'to her advantage.'

This was a wilful miſtake in lady Bellaſton; for ſhe
well knew whom Mr Weſtern meant; though per-
haps ſhe thought he would eaſily be reconciled to his
lordſhip's propoſals.

'Do you hear there,' quoth the 'ſquire, 'what her
'ladyſhip ſays? All your family are for the match.
'Come Sophy, be a good girl, and be dutiful, and
'make your father happy.'

'If my death will make you happy, Sir,' anſwered
Sophia, 'you will ſhortly be ſo.'

'It's a lye, Sophy; it's a d——n'd lye, and you
'know it,' ſaid the 'ſquire.

'Indeed, Miſs Weſtern,' ſaid lady Bellaſton, 'you
'injure your father; he hath nothing in view but
'your intereſt in this match; and I and all your
'friends muſt acknowledge the higheſt honour done
'to your family in the propoſal.'

'As

'Ay, all of us,' quoth the 'ſquire; 'nay, it was no propoſal of mine. She knows it was her aunt propoſed it to me firſt. Come, Sophy, once more let me beg you to be a good girl, and gee me your conſent before your couſin.'

'Let me give him your hand, couſin;' ſaid the lady. 'It is the faſhion now-a days to diſpenſe with time and long courtſhips.'

'Pugh,' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'what ſignifies time; won't they have time enough to court afterwards? People may court very well after they have been a bed together.'

As lord Fellamar was very well aſſured, that he was meant by lady Bellaſton, ſo never having heard nor ſuſpected a word of Blifil, he made no doubt of his being meant by the father. Coming up therefore to the 'ſquire, he ſaid, 'Though I have not the honour, Sir, of being perſonally known to you; yet, as I find I have the happineſs to have my propoſals accepted, let me intercede, Sir, in behalf of the young lady, that ſhe may not be more ſolicited at this time.'

'You intercede, Sir!' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'why, who the devil are you?'

'Sir, I am lord Fellamar,' anſwered he, 'and am the happy man, whom I hope you have done the honour of accepting for a ſon-in law.'

'You are a ſon of a b——,' replied the 'ſquire, 'for all your laced coat. You my ſon in-law, and be d—n'd to you!'

'I ſhall take more from you, Sir, than from any man,' anſwered the lord; 'but I muſt inform you, that I am not uſed to hear ſuch language without reſentment.'

'Reſent my a——,' quoth the 'ſquire. 'Don't think I am afrad of ſuch a fellow as thee art! becauſe haſt got a ſpit there dangling at thy ſide. Lay by your ſpit, and I'll give thee enough of meddling with what doth not belong to thee.—— I'll teach you to father in-law me. I'll lick thy jacket.'

'It's

'It's very well, Sir,' ſaid my lord, 'I ſhall make
'no diſturbance before the ladies. I am very well
'ſatisfied. Your humble ſervant, Sir; lady Bella-
'ſton, your moſt obedient.'

His lordſhip was no ſooner gone, than lady Bellaſton coming up to Mr Weſtern, ſaid, 'Bleſs me, Sir,
'what have you done? You know not whom you
'have affronted: he is a nobleman of the firſt rank
'and fortune, and yeſterday made propoſals to your
'daughter; and ſuch as I am ſure you muſt accept
'with the higheſt pleaſure.'

'Anſwer for yourſelf, lady couſin,' ſaid the 'ſquire,
'I will have nothing to do with any of your lords.
'My daughter ſhall have an honeſt country gentle-
'man; I have pitched upon one for her——and ſhe
'ſhall ha' un.—I am ſorry for the trouble ſhe has
'given your ladyſhip with all my heart.' Lady Bellaſton made a civil ſpeech upon the word trouble, to which the 'ſquire anſwered, 'Why that's kind,—and
'I would do as much for your ladyſhip. To be ſure
'relations ſhould do for one another. So I with your
'ladyſhip a good night.—Come, Madam, you muſt
'go along with me by fair means, or I'll have you
'carried down to the coach.'

Sophia ſaid, ſhe would attend him without force, but begged to go in a chair, for ſhe ſaid ſhe thought not be able to ride any other way.

'Prithee,' cries the 'ſquire, 'wout unt perſuade
'me canſt not ride in a coach, wouldſt? That's a
'pretty thing ſurely. No, no, I'll never let thee out
'of my ſight any more till art married, that I pro-
'miſe thee.' Sophia told him, ſhe ſaw he was reſolved to break her heart. 'O break thy heart and
'be d——n'd,' quoth he, 'if a good huſband will
'break it. I don't value a braſs vardan, not a half-
'penny of any undutiful b—— upon earth.' He then took violently hold of her hand; upon which the parſon once more interfered, begging him to uſe gentle methods. At that the 'ſquire thundered out a curſe, and bid the parſon hold his tongue, ſaying, 'At'n't in pulpit now? when art a got up there I never
'mind

'mind what doſt ſay; but I won't be prieſt-ridden, 'nor taught how to behave myſelf by thee I with 'your ladyſhip a good-night. Come along, Sophy; 'be a good girl, and all ſhall be well. Shat ha un, 'd—n me, ſhat ha un.'

Mrs Honour appeared below ſtairs, and with a low curteſy to the 'ſquire, offered to attend her miſtreſs; but he puſhed her away, ſaying, 'Hold, Madam, 'hold, you come no more near my houſe.' 'And 'will you take my maid away from me?' ſaid Sophia. 'Yes indeed, Madam, will I,' cries the 'ſquire: 'you 'need not fear being without a ſervant; I will get 'you another maid, and a better maid than this, who, 'I'd lay five pounds to a crown is no more a maid 'than my grannum. No, no, Sophy, ſhe ſhall con-'trive no more eſcapes, I promiſe you.' He then packed up his daughter and the parſon into the hackney coach, after which he mounted himſelf, and ordered it to drive to his lodgings. In the way thither he ſuffered Sophia to be quiet, and entertained himſelf with reading a lecture to the parſon on good manners, and a proper behaviour to his betters.

It is poſſible he might not ſo eaſily have carried off his daughter from lady Bellaſton, had that good lady deſired to have detained her; but, in reality, ſhe was not a little pleaſed with the confinement into which Sophia was going: and as her project with Lord Fellamar had failed of ſucceſs, ſhe was well contented that other violent methods were now going to be uſed in favour of another man.

CHAP. VI.

By what means the 'ſquire came to diſcover his daughter.

THOUGH the reader in many hiſtories is obliged to digeſt much more unaccountable appearances than this of Weſtern, without any ſatisfaction at all; yet, as we dearly love to oblige him whenever it is in our power, we ſhall now proceed to ſhew by what method the 'ſquire diſcovered where his daughter was.

In

In the third chapter then of the preceding book, we gave a hint (for it is not our cuſtom to unfold at a time more than is neceſſary for the occaſion) that Mr Fitzpatrick, who was very deſirous of reconciling himſelf to her uncle and aunt Weſtern, thought the hath a probable opportunity, by the ſervice of preſerving Sophia from committing the ſame crime which had drawn on herſelf the anger of her family. After much deliberation therefore ſhe reſolved to inform her aunt Weſtern where her couſin was, and accordingly ſhe writ the following letter, which we ſhall give the reader at length, for more reaſons than one.

" Honoured Madam,

" The occaſion of my writing this will perhaps " make a letter of mine agreeable to my dear aunt " for the ſake of one of her nieces, though I have " little reaſon to hope it will be ſo on the account of " another.

" Without more apology, as I was coming to throw " my unhappy ſelf at your feet, I met, by the ſtrang- " geſt accident in the world, my couſin Sophy, whoſe " hiſtory you are better acquainted with than myſelf, " though, alas! I know infinitely too much; enough " indeed to ſatisfy me, that unleſs ſhe is immediately " prevented, ſhe is in danger of running into the ſame " fatal miſchief which, by fooliſhly and ignorantly " refuſing your moſt wiſe and prudent advice, I have " unfortunately brought on myſelf.

" In ſhort, I have ſeen the man, nay I was in his " part of yeſterday in his company, and a charming " young fellow I promiſe you he is. By what acci- " dent he came acquainted with me is too tedious to " tell you now; but I have this morning changed " my lodgings to avoid him, leſt he ſhould by ſome " means diſcover my couſin; for he doth not yet " know where ſhe is, and it is adviſeable he ſhould " not till my uncle hath ſecured her.—— No time " therefore is to be loſt; and I need only inform you " that ſhe is now with lady Bellaſton, whom I have

" ſee

"ſeen, and who hath, I find, a deſign of concealing "her from her family. You know, Madam, ſhe is a "ſtrange woman; but nothing could miſbecome me "more, than to preſume to give any hint to one of "your great underſtanding, and great knowledge of "the world, beſides barely informing you of the mat-"ter of fact.

"I hope, Madam, the care which I have ſhewn "on this occaſion for the good of my family, will "recommend me again to the favour of a lady who "hath always exerted ſo much zeal for the honour "and true intereſt of us all; and that it may be a "means of reſtoring me to your friendſhip, which "hath made ſo great a part of my former, and is ſo "neceſſary to my future happineſs. I am,

"With the utmoſt reſpect,

"honoured Madam,

"your moſt dutiful obliged niece,

"and moſt obedient

"humble ſervant,

"HARRIET FITZPATRICK."

Mrs Weſtern was now at her brother's houſe, where ſhe had reſided ever ſince the flight of Sophia, in order to adminiſter comfort to the poor 'ſquire in his affliction. Of this comfort, which ſhe doled out to him in daily portions, we have formerly given a ſpecimen.

She was now ſtanding with her back to the fire, and with a pinch of ſnuff in her hand, was dealing forth this daily allowance of comfort to the 'ſquire, while he ſmoaked his afternoon pipe, when the re-ceived the above letter; which ſhe had no ſooner read than ſhe delivered it to him, ſaying, 'There, Sir, there is an account of your loſt ſheep. For-tune hath again reſtored her to you, and if you will be governed by my advice, it is poſſible you may yet preſerve her.'

The 'ſquire had no ſooner read the letter than he leaped from his chair, threw his pipe into the fire, and gave

gave a loud huzza for joy. He then ſummoned ſervants, called for his boots, and ordered the C valier and ſeveral other horſes to be ſaddled, and parſon Supple ſhould be immediately ſent for. ving done this, he turned to his ſiſter, caught in his arms, and gave her a cloſe embrace, ſay 'Zounds! you don't ſeem pleaſed; one would i 'gine you was ſorry I have found the girl.'

'Brother,' anſwered ſhe, 'the deepeſt politici 'who ſee to the bottom, diſcover often a very a 'rent aſpect of affairs, from what ſwims on the 'face. It is true, indeed, things do look rather 'deſperate than they did formerly in Holland, w 'Lewis the Fourteenth was at the gates of Am 'dam; but there is a delicacy required in this m 'ter, which you will pardon me, brother, if I ſu 'you want. There is a decorum to be uſed wi 'woman of figure, ſuch as lady Bellaſton, br 'which requires a knowledge of the world, ſupe 'I am afraid to yours.'

'Siſter,' cries the 'ſquire, 'I know you have 'opinion of my parts; but I'll ſhew you on this 'caſion who is a tool. Knowledge quotha! 'not been in the country ſo long without having 'knowledge of warrants and the law of the land 'know I may take my own wherever I can fin 'Shew me my own daughter, and if I don't k 'how to come at her, I'll ſuffer you to call me 'as long as I live. There be juſtices of peac 'London, as well as in other places.'

'I proteſt,' cries ſhe, 'you make me tremble 'the event of this matter, which, if you will pro 'by my advice, you may bring to ſo good an i 'Do you really imagine, brother, that the hou 'a woman of figure is to be attacked by warrants 'brutal juſtices of the peace? I will inform you 'to proceed. As ſoon as you arrive in town, 'have got yourſelf into a decent dreſs (for ind 'brother, you have none at preſent fit to appea 'you muſt ſend your compliments to lady Bella 'and deſire leave to wait on her. When you are 'mitted to her preſence, as you certainly wi

and have told her your ſtory, and have made proper uſe of my name. (for I think you only juſt know one another by ſight, though you are relations,) I am confident ſhe will withdraw her protection from my niece, who hath certainly impoſed upon her. This is the only method.—Juſtices of peace, indeed! do you imagine any ſuch event can arrive to a woman of figure in a civilized nation?'

'D—n their figures,' cries the ſquire; 'a pretty civilized nation, truly, where women are above the law. And what, muſt I ſtand finding a parcel of compliments to a confounded whore, that keeps away a daughter from her own natural father? I tell you, ſiſter, I am not ſo ignorant as you think me.——— I know you would have women above the law, but it is all a lie; I heard his lordſhip ſay at aſſize, that no one is above the law. But this of yours is Hanover law, I ſuppoſe.'

'Mr Weſtern,' ſaid ſhe, 'I think you daily improve in ignorance. ——— I proteſt you are grown an arrant bear.'

'No more a bear than yourſelf, ſiſter Weſtern,' ſaid the ſquire.—'Pox! you may talk of your civility an you will. I am ſure you never ſhew any to me. I am no bear, no, nor no dog neither, though I know ſomebody, that is ſomething that begins with a b—; but pox! I will ſhew you I have got more good manners than ſome folks.'

'Mr Weſtern,' anſwered the lady, 'you may ſay what you pleaſe, *Je vous meſpriſe de tout mon cœur.* I ſhall not therefore be angry ——Beſides, as my couſin with that odious iriſh name juſtly ſays, I have that regard for the honour and true intereſt of my family, and that concern for my niece, who is a part of it, that I have reſolved to go to town myſelf upon this occaſion; for indeed, indeed, brother, you are not a fit miniſter to be employed at a polite court.—Greenland—Greenland ſhould always be the ſcene of the tramontane negotiation.'

'I thank Heaven,' cries the ſquire, 'I don't underſtand you now. You are got to your Hanoverian linguo. However, I'll ſhew you I ſcorn to be be-

'hind-hand in civility with you; and as you are n
'angry for what I have ſaid, ſo I am not angry
'what you have ſaid. Indeed I have always the
'it a folly for relations to quarrel; and if the
'now and then give a haſty word, why people ſho
'give and take; for my part, I never bear ma
'and I take it very kind of you to go up to Lond
'for I never was there but twice in my life, and th
'I did not ſtay above a fortnight at a time, and to
'ſure I can't be expected to know much of the ſtre
'and the folks in that time. I never denied that y
'know'd all theſe matters better than I. For m
'diſpute that, would be all as one, as for you to di
'the management of a pack of dogs, or the fa
'ing a hare ſitting with me.'—'Which I pro
'you,' ſays ſhe, 'I never will.'—'Well, and I pr
'miſe you,' returned he, 'that I never will diſpu
't'other.'

Here then a league was ſtruck (to borrow a phr
from the lady) between the contending parties: a
now the parſon arriving, and the horſes being rea
the ſquire departed, having promiſed his ſiſter to f
low her advice, and ſhe prepared to follow him t
next day.

But having communicated theſe matters to the pa
ſon on the road, they both agreed that the pre cri
formalities might very well be diſpenſed with; a
the ſquire having changed his mind, proceeded in th
manner we have already ſeen.

CHAP. VII.

In which various misfortunes befel poor Jones.

AFFAIRS were in the aforeſaid ſituation wh
Mrs Honour arrived at Mrs Miller's, and call
Jones out from the company, as we have before ſee
with whom, when ſhe found herſelf alone, ſhe bega
as follows:

'O my dear Sir, how ſhall I get ſpirits to tell yo
'you are undone, Sir, and my poor lady's un
'and I am undone.' 'Hath any thing happene
'Sophia?' cries Jones, ſtaring like a madman. 'A
'th

'that is bad,' cries Honour: 'O, I ſhall never get 'ſuch another lady! O that I ſhould ever live to ſee 'this day!' At theſe words Jones turned pale as aſhes, trembled and ſtammered: but Honour went on 'O, Mr Jones, I have loſt my lady for ever.' 'How! what! for Heaven's ſake tell me.——O my 'dear Sophia!'—'You may well call her ſo,' ſaid Honour; 'ſhe was the deareſt lady to me.——I ſhall 'never have ſuch another place.——'D—n your 'place,' cries Jones; 'where is? what! what is be-'come of my Sophia!' 'Ay, to be ſure,' cries ſhe, 'ſervants may be d—n'd. It ſignifies nothing what 'becomes of them, though they are turned away, 'and ruined ever ſo much. To be ſure they are not 'fleſh and blood like other people. No, to be ſure, 'it ſignifies nothing what becomes of them.'——'If 'you have any pity, any compaſſion,' cries Jones, 'I beg you will inſtantly tell me what hath hap-'pened to Sophia?' 'To be ſure I have more pity 'for you than you have for me,' anſwered Honour; 'I don't damn you becauſe you have loſt the ſweeteſt 'lady in the world. To be ſure you are worthy to 'be pitied, and I am worthy to be pitied too: for 'to be ſure if ever there was a good miſtreſs.'—— 'What hath happened?' cries Jones, in almoſt a ra-ving fit——'What?——What?' ſaid Honour; why the worſt that could have happened both for you and for me——Her father is come to town, and hath carried her away from us both.' Here Jones fell on his knees in thankſgiving that it was no worſe.—'No worſe!' repeated Honour, 'what could be worſe for either of us? He carried her off, ſwear-ing ſhe ſhould marry Mr Blifil; that's for your com-fort: and for poor me, I am turned out of doors.' Indeed, Mrs Honour,' anſwered Jones, 'you fright-ened me out of my wits. I imagined ſome moſt dreadful ſudden accident had happened to Sophia; ſomething, compared to which, even the ſeeing her married to Blifil would be a trifle; but while there is life, there are hopes, my dear Honour. Women in this land of liberty cannot be married by actual brutal force.' 'To be ſure, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'that's

'true. There may be some hopes for you; but alas
'a day! what hopes are there for poor me? And
'be sure, Sir, you must be sensible I suffer all
'upon your account. All the quarrel the 'squire has
'to me is for taking your part, as I have done, and
'Mr Blifil.' 'Indeed, Mrs Honour,' answered
'I am sensible of my obligations to you, and
'leave nothing in my power undone to make you
'amends.' 'Alas, Sir,' said she, 'what can
'a servant amends for the loss of one place, but
'getting another altogether as good!'—'Do not
'despair, Mrs Honour,' said Jones, 'I hope to
'state you again in the same.' 'Alack a day,'
said she, 'how can I flatter myself with such
'when I know 'tis a thing impossible? for the 'squire
'is so set against me; and yet, if you should ever
'my lady, as to be sure I have hopes heartily you
'for you are a generous good-natured gentleman,
'and I am sure you loves her, and to be sure
'loves you as dearly as her own eyes; it is a mat-
'vain to deny it; because as why, every body that
'the least acquainted with my lady must see it;
'poor dear lady, she can't dissemble; and if two people
'who loves one another ain't happy, why who should
'be so? Happiness don't always depend upon
'people has; besides, my lady has enough for both
'To be sure, therefore, as one may say, it would
'all the pity in the world to keep two such lovers
'asunder; nay, I am convinced for my part,
'will meet together at last; for if it is to be, there
'is no preventing it. If a marriage is made in
'ven, all the justices of peace upon earth can't break
'it off To be sure I withes that parson Supple had
'a little more spirit to tell the 'squire of his wicked-
'ness in endeavouring to force his daughter contrary
'to her liking; but then his whole dependance is
'the 'squire, and so the poor gentleman, though
'is a very religious good sort of man, and tells
'the badness of such doings behind the 'squire's back,
'yet he dares not say his soul in his own to his face.
'To be sure I never saw him make so bold as
'now; I was afeard the 'squire would have

'him.—I would not have your honour be melancholy, 'Sir, nor deſpair; things may go better, as long as 'you are ſure of my lady, and that I am certain you 'may be; for ſhe never will be brought to conſent 'to marry any other man. Indeed, I am terribly 'afeard the 'ſquire will do her a miſchief in his paſ-'ſion: for he is a prodigious paſſionate gentleman, 'and I am afeard too the lady will be brought to 'break her heart; for ſhe is as tender-hearted as a 'chicken; it is pity, methinks, ſhe had not a little of 'my courage. If I was in love with a young man, 'and my father offered to lock me up, I'd tear his 'eyes out but I'd come at him; but then there's a 'great fortune in the caſe, which it is in her father's 'power either to give her or not; that, to be ſure, 'may make ſome difference.'

Whether Jones gave ſtrict attention to all the fore-going harrangue, or whether it was for want of any vacancy in the diſcourſe, I cannot determine; but he never once attempted to anſwer, nor did ſhe once ſtop till Partridge came running into the room, and inform-ed him that the great lady was upon the ſtairs.

Nothing could equal the dilemma to which Jones was now reduced. Honour knew nothing of any ac-quaintance that ſubſiſted between him and lady Bel-laſton, and ſhe was almoſt the laſt perſon in the world to whom he would have communicated it. In this hurry and diſtreſs, he took (as is common enough) the worſt courſe, and inſtead of expoſing her to the lady, which would have been of little conſequence, he choſe to expoſe the lady to her; he therefore reſolved to hide Honour, whom he had but juſt time to convey behind the bed, and to draw the curtains.

The hurry in which Jones had been all day engaged on account of his poor landlady and her family, the terrors occaſioned by Mrs Honour, and the confuſion into which he was thrown by the ſudden arrival of lady Bellaſton, had altogether driven former thoughts out of his head; ſo that it never once occurred to his memory to act the part of a ſick man; which, indeed, neither the gaiety of his dreſs, nor the freſhneſs of his countenance, would have at all ſupported.

He received her ladyſhip therefore rather agreeably to her deſires, than to her expectations, with all the good humour he could muſter in his countenance, and without any real or affected appearance of the leaſt diſorder.

Lady Bellaſton no ſooner entered the room, than ſhe ſquatted herſelf down on the bed: 'So, my dear 'Jones,' ſaid ſhe, 'you find nothing can detain me 'long from you. Perhaps I ought to be angry with 'you, that I have neither ſeen nor heard from you 'all day; for I perceive your diſtemper would have 'ſuffered you to come abroad: nay, I ſuppoſe you 'have not ſat in your chamber all day dreſſed up like 'a fine lady to ſee company after a lying-in; but 'however, don't think I intend to ſcold you: for I 'never will give you an excuſe for the cold behaviour 'of a huſband, by putting on the ill humours of a 'wife.'

'Nay, lady Bellaſton,' ſaid Jones, 'I am ſure your 'ladyſhip will not upbraid me with neglect of duty, 'when I only waited for orders. Who, my dear crea-'ture, hath reaſon to complain? Who miſſed an ap-'pointment laſt night, and left an unhappy man to 'expect, and wiſh, and ſigh, and languiſh?'

'Do not mention it, my dear Mr Jones,' cried ſhe, 'If you knew the occaſion, you would pity me. In 'ſhort, it is impoſſible to conceive what women of 'condition are obliged to ſuffer from the impertinence 'of fools, in order to keep up the farce of the world. 'I am glad, however, all your languiſhing and wish-'ing have done thee no harm: for you never looked 'better in your life. Upon my faith! Jones, you 'might at this inſtant ſit for the picture of Adonis.'

There are certain words of provocation which men of honour hold can only properly be anſwered by a blow. Among lovers poſſibly there may be ſome expreſſions which can only be anſwered by a kiſs. The compliment which lady Bellaſton now made Jones, ſeems to be of this kind, eſpecially as it was attended with a look in which the lady conveyed more ſoft ideas than it was poſſible to expreſs with her tongue.

Jones

Jones was certainly at this inſtant in one of the moſt diſagreeable and diſtreſs'd ſituations imaginable; for to carry on the compariſon we made uſe of before, though the provocation was given by the lady, Jones could not receive ſatisfaction, nor ſo much as offer to aſk it, in the preſence of a third perſon; ſeconds in this kind of duels not being according to the law of arms. As this objection did not occur to lady Bellaſton, who was ignorant of any other woman being there but herſelf, ſhe waited ſome time in great aſtoniſhment for an anſwer from Jones, who, conſcious of the ridiculous figure he made, ſtood at a diſtance, and not daring to give the proper anſwer, gave none at all. Nothing can be imagined more comic, nor yet more tragical than this ſcene would have been, if it had laſted much longer. The lady had already changed colour two or three times; had got up from the bed and ſat down again, while Jones was wiſhing the ground to ſink under him, or the houſe to fall on his head, when an odd accident freed him from an embarraſſment out of which neither the eloquence of a Cicero, nor the politics of a Machiavel, could have delivered him, without utter diſgrace.

This was no other than the arrival of young Nightingale dead drunk; or rather in that ſtate of drunkenneſs which deprives men of the uſe of their reaſon, without depriving them of the uſe of their limbs.

Mrs Miller and her daughters were in bed, and Partridge was ſmoaking his pipe by the kitchen fire; ſo that he arrived at Mr Jones's chamber door without any interruption. This he burſt open, and was entering without any ceremony, when Jones ſtarted from his ſeat, and ran to oppoſe him; which he did ſo effectually, that Nightingale never came far enough within the door to ſee who was ſitting on the bed.

Nightingale had in reality miſtaken Jones's apartment for that in which himſelf had lodged; he therefore ſtrongly inſiſted on coming in, often ſwearing that he would not be kept from his own bed. Jones, however, prevailed over him, and delivered him into the hands of Partridge, whom the noiſe on the ſtairs ſoon ſummoned to his maſter's aſſiſtance.

And now Jones was unwillingly obliged to return to his own apartment, where at the very inſtant of his entrance he heard lady Bellaſton venting an exclamation, though not a very loud one; and at the ſame time, ſaw her flinging herſelf into a chair in a vaſt agitation, which in a lady of a tender conſtitution would have been an hyſteric fit.

In reality, the lady, frightened with the ſtruggle between the two men, of which ſhe did not know what would be the iſſue, as ſhe heard Nightingale ſwear many oaths he would come to his own bed, attempted to retire to her known place of hiding, which to her great confuſion ſhe found already occupied by another.

'Is this uſage to be borne, Mr Jones?' cries the lady, '——baſeſt of men?——What wretch is this 'to whom you have expoſed me?' 'Wretch!' cries Honour, burſting in a violent rage from her place of concealment——'marry come up!——Wretch for-'ſooth!——as poor a wretch as I am, I am honeſt 'that is more than ſome folks who are richer can 'ſay.'

Jones, inſtead of applying himſelf directly to take off the edge of Mrs Honour's reſentment, as a more experienced gallant would have done, fell to curſing his ſtars and lamenting himſelf as the moſt unfortunate man in the world; and preſently after, addreſſing himſelf to lady Bellaſton, he fell to ſome very abſurd proteſtations of innocence. By this time the lady having recovered the uſe of her reaſon, which ſhe had as ready as any woman in the world, eſpecially on ſuch occaſions, calmly replied, 'Sir, you need 'make no apologies, I ſee now who the perſon is; 'did not at firſt know Mrs Honour; but now I do 'I can ſuſpect nothing wrong between her and you 'and I am ſure ſhe is a woman of too good ſenſe 'put any wrong conſtructions upon my viſit to you 'I have been always her friend, and it may be in my 'power to be much more ſo hereafter.'

Mrs Honour was altogether as placable, as ſhe was paſſionate. Hearing therefore lady Bellaſton [illegible]

ſume the ſoft tone, ſhe likewiſe ſoftened hers.——— 'I'm ſure, Madam,' ſays ſhe, 'I have been always 'ready to acknowledge your ladyſhip's friendſhip to 'me; ſure I never had ſo good a friend as your lady-'ſhip——and to be ſure now I ſee it is your ladyſhip 'that I ſpoke to, I could almoſt bite my tongue off 'for very mad.——I conſtructions upon your lady-'ſhip——to be ſure it doth not become a ſervant as 'I am to think about ſuch a great lady——I mean I 'was a ſervant; for indeed I am nobody's ſervant now, 'the more miſerable wretch is me——I have loſt the 'beſt miſtreſs.'——Here Honour thought fit to pro-duce a ſhower of tears.——'Don't cry, child,' ſays the good lady, 'Ways perhaps may be found to make 'you amends. Come to me to-morrow morning.' She then took up her fan which lay on the ground, and without even looking at Jones, walked very ma-jeſtically out of the room: there being a kind of dig-nity in the impudence of women of quality, which their inferiors vainly aſpire to attain to in circumſtances of this nature.

Jones followed her down ſtairs, often offering her his hand, which ſhe abſolutely refuſed him, and got into her chair without taking any notice of him as he ſtood bowing before her.

At his return up ſtairs, a long dialogue paſſed be-tween him and Mrs Honour, while ſhe was adjuſting herſelf after the diſcompoſure ſhe had undergone. The ſubject of this was his infidelity to her young lady; on which ſhe enlarged with great bitterneſs; but Jones at laſt found means to reconcile her, and not only ſo, but to obtain a promiſe of moſt invio-lable ſecrecy, and that ſhe would the next morning endeavour to find out Sophia, and bring him a further account of the proceedings of the 'ſquire.

Thus ended this unfortunate adventure to the ſatis-faction only of Mrs Honour; for a ſecret (as ſome of my readers will perhaps acknowledge from experience) is often a very valuable poſſeſſion: and that not only to thoſe who faithfully keep it, but ſometimes to ſuch as whiſper it about till it comes to the ears of every one,

one, except the ignorant perſon, who pays for the ſuppoſed concealing of what is publicly known.

CHAP. VIII.

Short and ſweet.

NOtwithſtanding all the obligations ſhe had received from Jones, Mrs Miller could not forbear in the morning ſome gentle remonſtrances on the hurricane which had happened the preceding night in his chamber. Theſe were however ſo gentle and ſo friendly; profeſſing, and indeed truly, to aim at nothing more than the real good of Mr Jones himſelf, that he, far from being offended, thankfully received the admonition of the good woman, expreſſed much concern for what had paſt, excuſed it as well as he could, and promiſed never more to bring the like diſturbances into the houſe.

But though Mrs Miller did not refrain from a ſhort expoſtulation in private at their firſt meeting, yet the occaſion of his being ſummoned down ſtairs that morning was of a much more agreeable kind, being indeed to perform the office of father to Miſs Nancy, and to give her in wedlock to Mr Nightingale, who was now ready dreſſed, and full as ſober as many of my readers will think a man ought to be who receives a wife in ſo imprudent a manner.

And here perhaps it may be proper to account for the eſcape which this young gentleman had made from his uncle, and for his appearance in the condition in which we have ſeen him the night before.

Now when the uncle had arrived at his lodgings with his nephew, partly to indulge his own inclinations (for he dearly loved his bottle) and partly to diſqualify his nephew from the immediate execution of his purpoſe, he ordered wine to be ſet on the table; with which he ſo heartily plyed the young gentleman, that this latter, who, though not much addicted to drinking, did not deteſt it ſo as to be guilty of diſobedience, or of want of complaiſance by refuſing, was ſoon completely finiſhed.

Juſt

Juſt as the uncle had obtained this victory, and was preparing a bed for his nephew, a meſſenger arrived with a piece of news, which ſo entirely diſconcerted and ſhocked him, that he in a moment loſt all conſideration for his nephew, and his whole mind became entirely taken up with his own concerns

This ſudden and afflicting news was no leſs than that his daughter had taken the opportunity of almoſt the firſt moment of his abſence, and had gone off with a neighbouring young clergyman; againſt whom, though her father could have had but one objection, namely, that he was worth nothing, yet ſhe had never thought proper to communicate her amour even to her father; and ſo artfully had ſhe managed, that it had never been once ſuſpected by any, till now that it was conſummated.

Old Mr Nightingale no ſooner received this account, than in the utmoſt confuſion he ordered a poſt chaiſe to be inſtantly got ready, and having recommended his nephew to the care of a ſervant, he directly left the houſe, ſcarce knowing what he did, nor whither he went.

The uncle being thus departed, when the ſervant came to attend the nephew to bed, had waked him for that purpoſe, and had at laſt made him ſenſible that his uncle was gone, he, inſtead of accepting the kind offices tendered him, inſiſted on a chair being called; with this the ſervant, who had received no ſtrict orders to the contrary, readily complied; and thus being conducted back to the houſe of Mrs Miller, he had ſtaggered up to Mr Jones's chamber, as hath been before recounted.

This bar of the uncle being now removed (though young Nightingale knew not as yet in what manner) and all parties being quickly ready, the mother, Mr Jones, Mr Nightingale, and his love, ſtept into a hackney coach, and conveyed him to Doctor's Commons; where Miſs Nancy was, in vulgar language, ſoon made an honeſt woman, and the poor mother became, in the pureſt ſenſe of the word, one of the happieſt of all human beings.

And

And now, Mr Jones having ſeen his good offi to that poor woman and her family brought to happy concluſion, began to apply himſelf to his ow concerns; but here, leſt many of my readers ſhou cenſure his folly for thus troubling himſelf with affairs of others, and leſt ſome few ſhould think acted more diſintereſtedly than indeed he did, think proper to aſſure our reader, that he was fa from being unconcerned in this matter, that he h indeed a very conſiderable intereſt in bringing it that final conſummation.

To explain this ſeeming paradox at once, he w one who could truly ſay with him in Terence, *Ho ſum, humani nihil a me alienum puto.* He was no an indifferent ſpectator of the miſery or happineſs any one; and he felt either the one or the other great proportion as he himſelf contributed to eith He could not therefore be the inſtrument of raiſing whole family from the loweſt ſtate of wretchedn to the higheſt pitch of joy without conveying gr felicity to himſelf; more perhaps than worldly m often purchaſe to themſelves by undergoing the m ſevere labour, and often by wading through the de eſt iniquity.

Thoſe readers who are of the ſame complex with him, will perhaps think this ſhort chapter c tains abundance of matter; while others may pr bably with, ſhort as it is, that it had been tot ſpared as impertinent to the main deſign, which ſuppoſe they conclude is to bring Mr Jones to the g lows, or, if poſſible, to a more deplorable cataſtrop

CHAP. IX.

Containing love-letters of ſeveral ſorts.

MR Jones at his return home, found the follow letters lying on his table, which he luckily op ed in the order they were ſent.

LETTER I.

"Surely I am under ſome ſtrange infatuation "cannot keep my reſolutions a moment, how

"ſtrongly made or juſtly founded. Laſt night I re-
"ſolved never to ſee you more; this morning I am
"willing to hear if you can, as you ſay, clear up this
"affair. And yet I know that to be impoſſible. I
"have ſaid every thing to myſelf which you can in-
"vent.——Perhaps not. Perhaps your invention is
"ſtronger. Come to me, therefore, the moment you
"receive this. If you can forge an excuſe, I almoſt
"promiſe you to believe it. Betrayed to ——I will
"think no more.——Come to me directly.——This
"is the third letter I have writ, the two former are
"burnt ——I am almoſt inclined to burn this too——
"I wiſh I may preſerve my ſenſes.——Come to me
"preſently."

LETTER II.

"If you ever expect to be forgiven, or even ſuffered
"within my doors, come to me this inſtant."

LETTER III.

"I now find you was not at home when my notes
"came to your lodgings. The moment you receive
"this, let me ſee you;——I ſhall not ſtir out; nor
"ſhall any body be let in but yourſelf. Sure nothing
"can detain you long."

Jones had juſt read over theſe three billets, when Mr Nightingale came into the room. 'Well, Tom,' ſaid he, 'any news from lady Bellaſton, after laſt night's adventure?' (for it was now no ſecret to any one in the houſe who the lady was.) 'The lady Bellaſton?' anſwered Jones very gravely. 'Nay, dear Tom,' cries Nightingale, 'don't be reſerved to your friends. Though I was too drunk to ſee her laſt night, I ſaw her at the maſquerade. Do you think I am ignorant who the queen of the fairies is?' 'And did you really then know the lady at the maſquerade?' ſaid Jones. 'Yes, upon my ſoul did I,' ſaid Nightingale, 'and have given you twenty hints of it ſince, though you ſeemed always ſo tender on that point, that I would not ſpeak plainly. I fancy, my friend, by your extreme nicety in this matter,

'you are not so well acquainted with the character
'the lady, as with her person. Don't be angry, I
'but upon my honour, you are not the first yo
'fellow she hath debauched. Her reputation is in
'danger, believe me.'

Though Jones had no reason to imagine the lad
have been of the vestal kind when this amour beg
yet as he was thoroughly ignorant of the town,
had very little acquaintance in it, he had yet no kn
ledge of that character which is vulgarly called a
mirep; that is to say, a woman that intrigues w
every man she likes, under the name and appearan
of virtue; and who, though some over-nice ladies w
not be seen with her, is visited (as they term it) by
whole town; in short, whom every body knows to
what nobody calls her.

When he found, therefore, that Nightingale
perfectly acquainted with his intrigue, and began
suspect, that so scrupulous a delicacy as he had hith
to observed, was not quite necessary on the occa
he gave a latitude to his friend's tongue, and de
him to speak plainly what he knew, or had ever he
of the lady.

Nightingale, who, in many other instances, was
ther too effeminate in his disposition, had a pre
strong inclination to tittle-tattle. He had no sec
therefore, received a full liberty of speaking from Je
than he entered upon a long narrative concer
the lady; which as it contained many particu
highly to her dishonour, we have too great a ten
ness for all women of condition to repeat. We wo
cautiously avoid giving an opportunity to the fu
commentators on our works, of making any malic
application; and of forcing us to be, against our w
the author of scandal, which never entered into
head.

Jones having very attentively heard all that Nig
ingale had to say, fetched a deep sigh, which
other observing, cried, 'Hey-day! why, thou
'not in love, I hope! Had I imagined my st
'would have affected you, I promise you should n
'have heard them.' 'O my dear friend,' cries Je
'I

'I am ſo entangled with this woman, that I know 'not how to extricate myſelf. In love indeed! no, 'my friend, but I am under obligations to her, and 'very great ones. Since you know ſo much, I will 'be very explicit with you. It is owing perhaps ſolely 'to her, that I have not before this, wanted a bit of 'bread. How can I poſſibly deſert ſuch a woman? 'and yet I muſt deſert her, or be guilty of the 'blackeſt treachery to one, who deſerves infinitely 'better of me than ſhe can: a woman, my Night-'ingale, for whom I have a paſſion which few can 'have an idea of. I am half diſtracted with doubts 'how to act.' 'And is this other, pray, an honour-'able miſtreſs?' cries Nightingale. 'Honourable?' anſwered Jones: 'no breath ever yet durſt ſully her 'reputation. The ſweeteſt air is not purer, the lim-'pid ſtream not clearer than her honour. She is 'all over, both in mind and body, conſummate per-'fection. She is the moſt beautiful creature in the 'univerſe; and yet ſhe is miſtreſs of ſuch noble, ele-'vated qualities, that though ſhe is never from my 'thoughts, I ſcarce ever think of her beauty, but 'when I ſee it.'—— 'And can you, my good friend,' cries Nightingale, 'with ſuch an engagement as this 'upon your hands, heſitate a moment about quit-'ting ſuch a——' 'Hold,' ſaid Jones, 'no more a-'buſe of her; I deteſt the thought of ingratitude.' 'Pooh!' anſwered the other, 'you are not the firſt 'upon whom ſhe hath conferred obligations of this 'kind. She is remarkably liberal where ſhe likes; 'though, let me tell you, her favours are ſo pru-'dently beſtowed, that they ſhould rather raiſe a 'man's vanity, than his gratitude.' In ſhort, Night-ingale proceeded ſo far on this head, and told his friend ſo many ſtories of the lady, which he ſwore to the truth of, that he entirely removed all eſteem for her from the breaſt of Jones; and his gratitude was leſſened in proportion. Indeed he began to look on all the favours he had received, rather as wages than benefits, which not only depreciated her, but himſelf too, in his own conceit, and put him quite out of humour with both. From this diſguſt, his mind,

by a natural tranſition, turned towards Sophia: h
virtue, her purity, her love to him, her ſufferin
on his account, filled all his thoughts, and made h
commerce with lady Bellaſton appear ſtill more odio
The reſult of all was, that though his turning him
out of her ſervice, in which light he now ſaw h
affair with her, would be the loſs of his bread; y
he determined to quit her, if he could but find
handſome pretence; which having communicated
his friend, Nightingale conſidered a little, and th
ſaid, 'I have it, my boy! I have found out a f
'method: propoſe marriage to her, and I wo
'venture hanging upon the ſucceſs.' 'Marriag
cried Jones. 'Ay, propoſe marriage,' anſwered Nigh
ingale, 'and ſhe will declare off in a moment.
'knew a young fellow whom ſhe kept formerly, w
'made the offer to her in earneſt, and was preſe
'turned off for his pains.'

Jones declared he could not venture the exper
ment. 'Perhaps,' ſaid he, 'ſhe may be leſs ſhock
'at this propoſal from one man than from anothe
'And if ſhe ſhould take me at my word, where am
'then? caught in my own trap, and undone for eve
'No;' anſwered Nightingale, 'not if I can give y
'an expedient, by which you may, at any time, g
'out of the trap.'——'What expedient can th
'be?' replied Jones. 'This,' anſwered Nightinga
'The young fellow I mentioned, who is one of t
'moſt intimate acquaintances I have in the world,
'ſo angry with her for ſome ill offices ſhe hath fin
'done him, that I am ſure he would, without an
'difficulty, give you a ſight of her letters; upo
'which you may decently break with her; and d
'clare off before the knot is tyed, if ſhe ſhould rea
'be willing to tie it, which I am convinced ſhe w
'not.'

After ſome heſitation, Jones, upon the ſtrength
this aſſurance, conſented; but as he ſwore he wan
ed the confidence to propoſe the matter to her fa
he wrote the following letter, which Nightinga
dictated.

"Mada

"MADAM,

"I am extremely concerned that, by an unfortunate engagement abroad, I should have miſſed receiving the honour of your ladyſhip's commands the moment they came; and the delay which I muſt now ſuffer of vindicating myſelf to your ladyſhip greatly adds to this misfortune. O lady Bellaston, what a terror have I been in, for fear your reputation ſhould be expoſed by theſe perverſe accidents! There is one only way to ſecure it: I need not name what that is. Only permit me to ſay, that as your honour is as dear to me as my own, ſo my ſole ambition is to have the glory of laying my liberty at your feet; and believe me when I aſſure you, I can never be made completely happy, without you generouſly beſtow on me a legal right of calling you mine for ever. I am,

"MADAM,

"With moſt profound reſpect,

"your ladyſhip's moſt obliged,

"obedient humble ſervant,

"THOMAS JONES."

To this ſhe preſently returned the following anſwer.

"SIR,

"When I read over your ſerious epiſtle, I could, from its coldneſs and formality, have ſworn that you had already the legal right you mention; nay, that we had for many years, compoſed that monſtrous animal a huſband and wife. Do you really then imagine me a fool? or do you fancy yourſelf capable of ſo entirely perſuading me out of my ſenſes that I ſhould deliver my whole fortune into your power, in order to enable you to ſupport your pleaſures at my expence? Are theſe the proofs of love which I expected? Is this the return for — but I ſcorn to upbraid you, and am in great admiration of your profound reſpect.

" P. S. I am prevented from reviſing;---Perhaps
" have ſaid more than I meant.——Come to me a
" eight this evening."

Jones, by the advice of his privy council, replied,

" MADAM,

" It is impoſſible to expreſs how much I am ſhock
" at the ſuſpicion you entertain of me. Can lady Be
" laſton have conferred favours on a man whom ſh
" could believe capable of ſo baſe a deſign? or ca
" ſhe treat the moſt ſolemn tie of love with contempt
" Can you imagine, Madam, that if the violence o
" my paſſion, in an unguarded moment, overcam
" the tenderneſs which I have for your honour, th
" I would think of indulging myſelf in the contin
" ance of an intercourſe which could not poſſibly e
" ſcape long the notice of the world; which, whe
" diſcovered, muſt prove ſo fatal to your reputation
" If ſuch be your opinion of me, I muſt pray for
" ſudden opportunity of returning thoſe pecuniar
" obligations, which I have been ſo unfortunate a
" receive at your hands; and for thoſe of a mo
" tender kind, I ſhall ever remain, &c." And ſo co
cluded in the very words with which he had co
cluded the former letter.

The lady anſwered as follows:

" I ſee you are a villain: and I diſpiſe you from m
" ſoul. If you come here, I ſhall not be at home."

Though Jones was well ſatisfied with his deliv
ance from a thraldom which thoſe who have ever e
perienced it, will, I apprehend, allow to be none
the lighteſt, he was not however perfectly eaſy
his mind. There was in this ſcheme too much
fallacy to ſatisfy one who utterly deteſted every ſpec
of falſehood or diſhoneſty: nor would he, indeed, ha
ſubmitted to put it in practice, had he not been i
volved in a diſtreſsful ſituation, where he was oblig
to be guilty of ſome diſhonour, either to the one l
dy or the other; and ſurely the reader will allo
that every good principle, as well as love, plead
ſtrongly in favour of Sophia.

Nigh

Nightingale highly exulted in the ſucceſs of his ſtratagem, upon which he received many thanks, and much applauſe from his friend. He anſwered, 'Dear 'Tom, we have conferred very different obligations 'on each other. To me you owe the regaining your 'liberty; to you I owe the loſs of mine. But if you 'are as happy in the one inſtance as I am in the 'other, I promiſe you, we are the two happieſt fel-'lows in England.'

The two gentlemen were now ſummoned down to dinner, where Mrs Miller, who performed herſelf the office of cook, had exerted her beſt talents, to celebrate the wedding of her daughter. This joyful circumſtance ſhe aſcribed principally to the friendly behaviour of Jones, her whole ſoul was fired with gratitude towards him, and all her looks, words, and actions, were ſo buſied in expreſſing it, that her daughter, and even her new ſon-in-law, were very little the objects of her conſideration.

Dinner was juſt ended when Mrs Miller received a letter; but as we have had letters enough in this chapter, we ſhall communicate the contents in our next.

CHAP. X.

Conſiſting partly of facts, and partly of obſervations upon them.

THE letter then which arrived at the end of the preceding chapter was from Mr Allworthy, and the purport of it was his intention to come immediately to town, with his nephew Blifil, and a deſire to be accommodated with his uſual lodgings, which were the firſt floor for himſelf, and the ſecond for his nephew.

The chearfulneſs which had before diſplayed itſelf in the countenance of the poor woman, was a little clouded on this occaſion. This news did indeed a good deal diſconcert her. To requite ſo diſintereſted a match with her daughter, by preſently turning her new ſon-in-law out of doors, appeared to her very unjuſtifiable on the one hand; and on the other, ſhe could ſcarce bear the thoughts of making any excuſe

to

to Mr Allworthy, after all the obligations receive from him, for depriving him of lodgings which we indeed ſtrictly his due: for that gentleman, in co ferring all his numberleſs benefits upon others, acted b a rule diametrically oppoſite to what is practiſed b moſt generous people. He contrived, on all occa ſions, to hide his beneficence not only from the worl but even from the object of it. He conſtantly us the words Lend and Pay, inſtead of Give; and b every other method he could invent, always leſſen with his tongue the favours he conferred, while h was heaping them with both his hands. When h ſettled the annuity of 50 l. a year, therefore, on M Miller, he told her, 'it was in conſideration of a 'ways having her firſt floor when he was in tow '(which he ſcarce ever intended to be) but that h 'might let it at any other time, for that he would a 'ways ſend her a month's warning.' He was no however, hurried to town ſo ſuddenly that he had n opportunity of giving ſuch notice; and this hurry pr bably prevented him, when he wrote for his lodging adding, if they were then empty: for he would mo certainly have been well ſatisfied to have relinquiſh them on a leſs ſufficient excuſe than what Mrs Mill could have made.

But there are a ſort of perſons, who, as Prior ex cellently well remarks, direct their conduct by ſom thing

"Beyond the fix'd and ſettled rules
"Of vice and virtue in the ſchools,
"Beyond the letter of the law."

To theſe it is ſo far from being ſufficient that the defence would acquit them at the Old Bailey, th they are not even contented, though conſcience, th ſevereſt of all judges, ſhould diſcharge them. Nothin ſhort of the fair and honourable will ſatisfy the del cacy of their minds; and if any of their actions fa ſhort of this mark, they mope and pine, are as uneas and reſtleſs as a murderer, who is afraid of a ghos or of the hangman.

Mr

Mrs Miller was one of theſe. She could not conceal her uneaſineſs at this letter; with the contents of which ſhe had no ſooner acquainted the company, and given ſome hints of her diſtreſs, than Jones, her good angel, preſently relieved her anxiety. 'As for 'myſelf, Madam,' ſaid he, 'my lodging is at your 'ſervice at a moment's warning: and Mr Nightin'gale, I am ſure, as he cannot yet prepare a houſe 'fit to receive his lady, will conſent to return to his 'new lodging, whither Mrs Nightingale will cer'tainly conſent to go.' With which propoſal both huſband and wife inſtantly agreed.

The reader will eaſily believe, that the cheeks of Mrs Miller began again to glow with additional gratitude to Jones; but, perhaps, it may be more difficult to perſuade him, that Mr Jones having, in his laſt ſpeech, called her daughter Mrs Nightingale, (it being the firſt time that agreeable ſound had ever reached her ears) gave the fond mother more ſatisfaction, and warmed her heart more towards Jones, than his having diſſipated her preſent anxiety.

The next day was then appointed for the removal of the new-married couple, and of Mr Jones, who was likewiſe to be provided for in the ſame houſe with his friend. And now the ſerenity of the company was again reſtored, and they paſt the day in the utmoſt chearfulneſs, all except Jones, who, though he outwardly accompanied the reſt in their mirth, felt many a bitter pang on the account of his Sophia; which were not a little heightened by the news of Mr Blifil's coming to town, (for he clearly ſaw the intention of his journey:) and what greatly aggravated his concern was, that Mrs Honour, who had promiſed to enquire after Sophia, and to make her report to him early the next evening, had diſappointed him.

In the ſituation that he and his miſtreſs were in at this time, there were ſcarce any grounds for him to hope, that he ſhould hear any good news; yet he was as impatient to ſee Mrs Honour, as if he had expected ſhe would bring him a letter with an aſſignation in it from Sophia, and bore the diſappointment

as ill. Whether this impatience aroſe from that n
tural weakneſs of the human mind, which make
deſirous to know the worſt, and renders uncertain
the moſt intolerable of pains; or whether he h
flattered himſelf with ſome ſecret hopes, we will n
determine. But that it might be the laſt, whoev
has loved cannot but know. For of all the powe
exerciſed by this paſſion over our minds, one of t
moſt wonderful is that of ſupporting hope in the m
of deſpair. Difficulties, improbabilities, nay impo
bilities are quite overlooked by it: ſo that to any m
extremely in love, may be applied what Addiſon ſa
of Cæſar,

"The Alps and Pyreneans ſink before him."

Yet it is equally true, that the ſame paſſion will ſom
times make mountains of mole-hills, and produce d
ſpair in the midſt of hope; but theſe cold fits laſt
long in good conſtitutions. Which temper Jones w
now in, we leave the reader to gueſs, having no ex
information about it; but this is certain, that he h
ſpent two hours in expectation, when being una
any longer to conceal his uneaſineſs, he retired to h
room; where his anxiety had almoſt made him fra
tic, when the following letter was brought him fr
Mrs Honour, with which we ſhall preſent our rea
verbatim & literatim.

"SIR,

"I ſhud ſartenly haf kaled on you a cordin
"mi prommiſs haddunt itt bin that hur laſhipp p
"vent mee; for too bee ſur, Sir, you noſe very w
"that evere perſun muſt luk forſt at ome, and l
"tenly ſuch anuther offar mite not ave ever happ
"ſo as I ſhud ave been juſtly to blam, had I not
"cepted of it when her laſhip was ſo veri kind as
"offar to mak mee ur one uman without me ev
"aſking any ſuch thing, to bee ſar ſhee is won
"thee beſt ladis in thee wurld, and pepil who k
"to the kontrari muſt bee veri wiket pepil in th
"harts. To be ſur if ever I ave ſad any thing
"that kine it as bin thru ignorens, and I am har
"ſo

" ſorri for it. I noſe your honour to be a genteelman " of more onur and oneſty, if I ever ſaid ani ſuch " thing, to repete it to hurt a pore ſervant that as " alwais ad thee grateſt reſpect in thee world for ure " onur. To bee ſur won ſhud kepe wons tung within " wons teeth, for no boddi noſe what may happen; " and too bee ſur if ani boddi ad tolde mee yeſter- " day, that I ſhud haf bin in ſo gud a plaſe to day, " I ſhud not haf beleeved it; for too bee ſur I never " was a dremd of any ſuch thing, nor ſhud I ever " have ſoft after ani other bodi's plaſe; but as her " laſhipp was ſo kind of her one a cord too give it " mee without aſking, to be ſur Mrs Etoff herſelf, " nor no other boddi can blam me for exceptin ſuch " a thing when it falls in mi waye. I beg ure onur " not too menſhion any thing of what I haf ſad, for I " wiſh ure onur all the gud luk in the world; and " I don't cueſtion butt thatt u will haf Madam Sofia " in the end; butt aſs to myſelf, ure onur noſe I cant " bee of ani farder ſarvis to u in that matar, nou bein " under thee cummand off anuther parſon, and nott mi " one miſtres. I beg ure onur to ſay nothing of what " paſt, and believe me to be, Sir,

" Ure onur's umble ſarvant

" To cumand till deth,

" HONOUR BLACKMORE.'

Various were the conjectures which Jones entertained on this ſtep of lady Bellaſton; who in reality had little farther deſign than to ſecure within her own houſe the repoſitory of a ſecret, which ſhe choſe ſhould make no farther progreſs than it had made already; but moſtly ſhe deſired to keep it from the ears of Sophia; for though that young lady was almoſt the only one who would never have repeated it again, her ladyſhip could not perſuade herſelf of this; ſince as ſhe now hated poor Sophia with moſt implacable hatred, ſhe conceived a reciprocal hatred to herſelf to be lodged in the tender breaſt of our heroine, where no ſuch paſſion had ever yet found an entrance.

While

While Jones was terrifying himself with the appr
henſion of a thouſand dreadful machinations, a
deep political deſigns, which he imagined to be at t
bottom of the promotion of Honour, Fortune, w
hitherto ſeems to have been an utter enemy to
match with Sophia, tried a new method to put a fi
end to it, by throwing a temptation in the way
Jones, which in his preſent deſperate ſituation it ſee
ed unlikely he ſhould be able to reſiſt.

CHAP. XI.

Containing curious but not unprecedented matter.

THERE was a lady, one Mrs Hunt, who ha
often ſeen Jones at the houſe where he lodge
being intimately acquainted with the women the
and indeed a very great friend to Mrs Miller.
age was about thirty; for ſhe owned ſix and twen
her face and perſon very good, only inclining a li
too much to be fat. She had been married young
her relations to an old Turkey-merchant, who havi
got a great fortune, had left off trade. With hi
ſhe lived without reproach, but not without pain,
a ſtate of great ſelf-denial, for about twelve year
and her virtue was rewarded by his dying and leavi
her very rich. The firſt year of her widowhood w
juſt at an end, and ſhe had paſt it in a good deal
retirement, ſeeing only a few particular friends, a
dividing her time between her devotions and nove
of which ſhe was always extremely fond. Very goo
health, a very warm conſtitution, and a great deal
religion, made it abſolutely neceſſary for her to mar
again; and ſhe reſolved to pleaſe herſelf in her ſecon
huſband, as ſhe had done her friends in the firſt. Fro
her the following billet was brought to Jones.

" SIR,

" From the firſt day I ſaw you I doubt my eye
" have told you too plainly, that you were not indi
" ferent to me; but neither my tongue nor my ha
" ſhould have ever avowed it, had not the ladies
" the family where you are lodged given me ſuch
" charact

"character of you, and told me ſuch proofs of your "virtue and goodneſs, as convince me you are not "only one of the moſt agreeable, but the moſt worthy "of men. I have alſo the ſatisfaction to hear from "them, that neither my perſon, underſtanding, or "character, are diſagreeable to you. I have a for-"tune ſufficient to make us both happy, but which "cannot make me ſo without you. In thus diſpoſing "of myſelf I know I ſhall incur the cenſure of the "world; but if I did not love you more than I fear "the world, I ſhould not be worthy of you. One "only difficulty ſtops me: I am informed you are en-"gaged in a commerce of gallantry with a woman of "fashion. If you think it worth while to ſacrifice "that to the poſſeſſion of me, I am yours; if not, for-"get my weakneſs, and let this remain an eternal ſe-"cret between you and

"ARABELLA HUNT."

At the reading of this, Jones was put into a violent flutter. His fortune was then at a very low ebb, the ſource being ſtopt from which hitherto he had been ſupplied. Of all he had received from lady Bellaſton not above five guineas remained, and that very morning he had been dunned by a tradeſman for twice that ſum. His honourable miſtreſs was in the hands of her father, and he had ſcarce any hopes ever to get her out of them again. To be ſubſiſted at her expence from that little fortune ſhe had independent of her father, went much againſt the delicacy both of his pride and his love. This lady's fortune would have been exceedingly convenient to him, and he could have no objection to her in any reſpect. On the contrary, he liked her as well as he did any woman except Sophia. But to abandon Sophia, and marry another, that was impoſſible: he could not think of it upon any account. Yet why ſhould he not, ſince it was plain ſhe could not be his? Would it not be kinder to her, than to continue her longer engaged in a hopeleſs paſſion for him? Ought he not to do ſo in friendſhip to her? This notion prevailed ſome moments, and he had almoſt determined to be falſe to her from a high point

of honour; but that refinement was not able to
very long againſt the voice of nature, which cri
his heart, that ſuch friendſhip was treaſon to
At laſt he called for pen, ink, and paper, and wr
follows to Mrs Hunt.

" MADAM,

" It would be but a poor return to the favour
" have done me, to ſacrifice any gallantry to the
" ſeſſion of you, and I would certainly do it, thou
" were not diſengaged, as at preſent I am, from
" affair of that kind. But I ſhould not be the h
" man you think me, if I did not tell you, that
" affections are engaged to another, who is a wo
" of virtue, and one that I never can leave, thou
" is probable I ſhall never poſſeſs her. God f
" that in return of your kindneſs to me, I ſhoul
" you ſuch an injury, as to give you my hand wh
" cannot give my heart. No, I had much
" ſtarve than be guilty of that. Even though
" miſtreſs were married to another, I would not m
" ry you unleſs my heart had entirely effaced all
" preſſions of her. Be aſſured that your ſecret
" not more ſafe in your own breaſt, than in that o

" Your moſt obliged and
" Grateful humble ſervant,
" T. JONES.

When our hero had finiſhed and ſent this letter,
went to his ſcrutore, took out Miſs Weſtern's
kiſſed it ſeveral times, and then ſtrutted ſome
about his room, with more ſatisfaction of mind
ever any Iriſhman felt in carrying off a fortune of
thouſand pounds.

CHAP. XII.

A diſcovery made by Partridge.

WHILE Jones was exulting in the conſciou
of his integrity, Partridge came capering
the room, as was his cuſtom when he brought,
fancied he brought, any good tidings. He

been diſpatched that morning by his maſter, with orders to endeavour, by the ſervants of lady Bellaſton, or by any other means, to diſcover whither Sophia had been conveyed; and he now returned, and with a joyful countenance told our hero, that he had found the loſt bird. 'I have ſeen, Sir,' ſays he, 'Black 'George, the gamekeeper, who is one of the ſervants 'whom the ſquire hath brought with him to town. 'I knew him preſently, though I have not ſeen him 'theſe ſeveral years; but you know, Sir, he is a very 'remarkable man, or to uſe a purer phraſe, he hath a 'moſt remarkable beard, the largeſt and blackeſt I 'ever ſaw. It was ſome time, however, before Black 'George could recollect me.'——'Well, but what is 'your good news?' cries Jones. 'What do you know 'of my Sophia?'——'You ſhall know preſently, Sir, anſwered Partridge, 'I am coming to it as faſt as 'I can.—You are ſo impatient, Sir, you would come at 'the infinitive mood, before you can get to the imperative. As I was ſaying, Sir, it was ſome time be'fore he recollected my face.'——'Confound your 'face,' cries Jones, 'what of my Sophia?'—'Nay, 'Sir,' anſwered Partridge, 'I know nothing more 'of Madam Sophia than what I am going to tell you; 'and I ſhould have told you all before this, if you had 'not interrupted me; but if you look ſo angry at me, 'you will frighten all of it out of my head, or, to uſe 'a purer phraſe, out of my memory. I never ſaw 'you look ſo angry ſince the day we left Upton, 'which I ſhall remember if I was to live a thouſand 'years.'——'Well, pray go on in your own way,' ſaid Jones, 'you are reſolved to make me mad, I find.' 'Not for the world,' anſwered Partridge, 'I have 'ſuffered enough for that already; which, as I ſaid, 'I ſhall bear in my remembrance the longeſt day I 'have to live.'—'Well, but Black George?' cries Jones.—'Well, Sir, as I was ſaying, it was a long 'time before he could recollect me; for indeed I am 'very much altered ſince I ſaw him. *Non ſum qua is 'eram.* I have had troubles in the world, and nothing alters a man ſo much as grief. I have heard 'it will change the colour of a man's hair in a night.

'However, at laſt, know me he did, that's ſure enough
'for we are both of an age, and were in the la
'charity-ſchool. George was a great dunce, but
'matter for that; all men do not thrive in the wo
'according to their learning. I am ſure I have n
'ſo to ſay ſo; but it will be all one a thouſa
'years hence. Well, Sir,——where was I?---O
'well, we no ſooner knew each other, than after ma
'hearty ſhakes by the hand, we agreed to go to
'alehouſe and take a pot, and by good luck the be
'was ſome of the beſt I have met with ſince I ha
'been in town. Now, Sir, I am coming to the po
'for no ſooner did I name you, and told him that
'and I came to town together, and had lived toget
'ever ſince than he called for another pot, and ſwo
'he would drink to your health; and indeed he dra
'your health ſo heartily, that I was overjoyed to
'there was ſo much gratitude left in the world: a
'after we had emptied that pot, I ſaid I would be
'pot too, and ſo we drank another to your healt
'and then I made haſte home to tell you the news.'

'What news?' cries Jones, 'you have not m
'tioned a word of my Sophia!'---Bleſs me! I ha
'like to have forgot that. Indeed we mentioned
'great deal about young Madam Weſtern, a
'George told me all; that Mr Blifil is coming
'town in order to be married to her. He had b
'make haſte then, ſays I, or ſomebody will have
'before he comes; and indeed, ſays I, Mr Sa
'grim, it is a thouſand pities ſomebody ſhould
'have her; for he certainly loves her above all
'women in the world. I would have both you a
'ſhe know, that it is not for her fortune he fo
'her; for I can aſſure you as to matter of th
'there is another lady, one of much greater qua
'and fortune than ſhe can pretend to, who is ſo fa
'of ſomebody, that ſhe comes after him day a
'night.'

Here Jones fell into a paſſion with Partridge, f
having, as he ſaid, betrayed him; but the poor fel
anſwered, 'he had mentioned no name: Beſide
'Sa

'Sir,' ſaid he, 'I can aſſure you George is ſincerely 'your friend, and wiſhed Mr Blifil at the devil more 'than once, nay, he ſaid he would do any thing in 'his power upon earth to ſerve you; and I am con-'vinced he will.---Betray you indeed! why, I queſtion 'whether you have a better friend than George upon 'earth, except myſelf, or one that would go farther 'to ſerve you.'

'Well,' ſays Jones, a little pacified, 'you ſay this 'fellow, who I believe indeed is enough inclined to be 'my friend, lives in the ſame houſe with Sophia?'

'In the ſame houſe!' anſwered Partridge; 'why, 'Sir, he is one of the ſervants of the family, and very 'well dreſt I promiſe you he is: if it was not for his 'black beard, you would hardly know him.'

'One ſervice then at leaſt he may do me,' ſays Jones, 'ſure he certainly can convey a letter to my 'Sophia.'

'You have hit the nail *ad unguem*,' cries Partridge, 'How came I not to think of it? I will engage he 'ſhall do it upon the very firſt mentioning.'

'Well then,' ſaid Jones, 'do you leave me at pre-'ſent, and I will write a letter which you ſhall de-'liver to him to-morrow morning; for I ſuppoſe you 'know where to find him.'

'O yes, Sir,' anſwered Partridge, 'I ſhall certain-'ly find him again; there is no fear of that. The li-'quor is too good for him to ſtay away long. I make 'no doubt but he will be there every day he ſtays in 'town.'

'So you don't know the ſtreet then where my So-'phia is lodged?' cries Jones.

'Indeed, Sir, I do,' ſays Partridge.

'What is the name of the ſtreet?' cries Jones.

'The name, Sir? why here, Sir, juſt by,' anſwer-ed Partridge, 'not above a ſtreet or two off. I don't 'indeed know the very name; for as he never told 'me, if I had aſked, you know it might have put 'ſome ſuſpicion into his head. No, no, Sir, let me 'alone for that. I am too cunning for that, I pro-'miſe you.'

'Thou art moſt wonderfully cunning indeed,' re-
plied Jones, 'however, I will write to my charm-
'ſince I believe you will be cunning enough to f-
'him to-morrow at the ale-houſe.'

And now having diſmiſſed the ſagacious Partrid-
Mr Jones ſat himſelf down to write, in which empl-
ment we ſhall leave him for a time. And here we p-
an end to the fifteenth book.

TH

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XVI.

Containing the ſpace of five days.

CHAP. I.

Of prologues.

I HAVE heard of a dramatic writer who uſed to ſay, he would rather write a play than a prologue; in like manner, I think, I can with leſs pains write one of the books of this hiſtory, than the prefatory chapter to each of them.

To ſay the truth, I believe many a hearty curſe hath been devoted on the head of the Author, who firſt inſtituted the method of prefixing to his play that portion of matter which is called the prologue; and which at firſt was part of the piece itſelf, but of latter years hath had uſually ſo little connexion with the drama before which it ſtands, that the prologue at one play might as well ſerve for any other. Thoſe indeed of more modern date, ſeem all to be written on the ſame three topics, viz. an abuſe of the taſte of the town, a condemnation of all contemporary Authors, and an eulogium on the performance juſt about to be repreſented. The ſentiments in all theſe are very little varied, nor is it poſſible they ſhould; and indeed I have often wondered at the great invention of Authors, who have

have been capable of finding ſuch various phraſes
expreſs the ſame thing.

In like manner, I apprehend, ſome future hiſtoria
(if any one ſhall do me the honour of imitating m
manner) will, after much ſcratching his pate, bet
ſome good wiſhes on my memory, for having firſt e
bliſhed theſe ſeveral initial chapters; moſt of whi
like modern prologues, may as properly be prefi
to any other book in this hiſtory as to that whi
they introduce, or indeed to any other hiſtory as
this.

But however Authors may ſuffer by either of the
inventions, the reader will find ſufficient emolum
in the one, as the ſpectator hath long found in t
other.

Firſt, it is well known that the prologue ſerv
the critic for an opportunity to try his faculty
hiſſing, and to tune his cat-call to the beſt adv
tage; by which means I have known thoſe muſi
inſtruments ſo well prepared, that they have be
able to play in full concert at the firſt riſing of the cu
tain.

The ſame advantages may be drawn from the
chapters, in which the critic will be always ſure
meeting with ſomething that may ſerve as a whe
ſtone to his noble ſpirit; ſo that he may fall with
more hungry appetite for cenſure on the hiſtory itſe
And here his ſagacity muſt make it needleſs to ob
ſerve how artfully theſe chapters are calculated
that excellent purpoſe; for in theſe we have alwa
taken care to interſperſe ſomewhat of the four or ac
kind, in order to ſharpen and ſtimulate the ſaid ſpir
of criticiſm.

Again, the indolent reader, as well as ſpectator
finds great advantage from both theſe; for as they a
not obliged either to ſee the one or read the other
and both the play and the book are thus protracte
by the former they have a quarter of an hour longe
allowed them to ſit at dinner, and by the latter the
have the advantage of beginning to read at
fourth or fifth page inſtead of the firſt, a matter b
no means of trivial conſequence to perſons who
bo

books with no other view than to ſay they have read them, a more general motive to reading than is commonly imagined; and from which not only law books and good books, but the pages of Homer and Virgil, of Swift and Cervantes, have been often turned over.

Many other are the emoluments which ariſe from both theſe, but they are for the moſt part ſo obvious that we ſhall not at preſent ſtay to enumerate them; eſpecially ſince it occurs to us that the principal merit of both the prologue and the preface is that they be ſhort.

CHAP. II.

A whimſical adventure which befel the 'ſquire, with the diſtreſſed ſituation of Sophia.

WE muſt now convey the reader to Mr Weſtern's lodgings, which were in Piccadily, where he was placed by the recommendation of the landlord at the Hercules Pillars at Hyde-Park Corner; for at the inn, which was the firſt he ſaw on his arrival in town, he placed his horſes, and in thoſe lodgings, which were the firſt he heard of, he depoſited himſelf.

Here when Sophia alighted from the hackney-coach which brought her from the houſe of Lady Bellaſton, ſhe deſired to retire to the apartment provided for her, to which her father very readily agreed, and whither he attended her himſelf. A ſhort dialogue, neither very material nor pleaſant to relate minutely, then paſſed between them, in which he preſſed her vehemently to give her conſent to the marriage with Blifil, who, as he acquainted her, was to be in town in a few days; but inſtead of complying, ſhe gave a more peremptory and reſolute refuſal than ſhe had ever done before. This ſo incenſed her father, that after many bitter vows that he would force her to have him whether ſhe would or no, he departed from her with many hard words and curſes, locked the door, and put the key into his pocket.

While

While Sophia was left with no other company th
what attend the close state prisoner, namely, fire a
candle, the 'squire sat down to regale himself ove
bottle of wine, with his parson and the landlord of
Hercules Pillars, who, as the 'squire said, would ma
an excellent third man, and could inform them of
news of the town, and how affairs went; for to
sure, says he, he knows a great deal since the hor
of many of the quality stand at his house.

In this agreeable society Mr Western passed th
evening and great part of the succeeding day, dur
which period nothing happened of sufficient con
quence to find a place in this history. All this ti
Sophia passed by herself; for her father swore she sho
never come out of her chamber alive, unless she
contented to marry Blifil; nor did he ever suffer
door to be unlocked unless to convey her food,
which occasions he always attended himself.

The second morning after his arrival, while he a
the parson were at breakfast together on a toa
tankard, he was informed that a gentleman was be
to wait on him.

'A gentleman!' quoth the 'squire, 'who the d
'can he be? Do, doctor, go down and see who
'Mr Blifil can hardly be come to town yet.—
'down, do, and know what his business is.'

The doctor returned with an account that it w
a very well dressed man, and, by the ribbon in his h
he took him for an officer of the army; that he
he had some particular business, which he could
ver to none but Mr Western himself.

'An officer!' cries the 'squire, 'what can any
'fellow have to do with me? If he wants an
'for baggage-waggons, I am no justice of peace
'nor can I grant a warrant.—Let un come up
'if he must speak to me.'

A very genteel man now entered the room; who
ving made his compliments to the 'squire, and de
the favour of being alone with him, delivered hi
as follows:

'Sir, I come to wait upon you by the command 'of my lord Fellamar; but with a very different 'meſſage from what I ſuppoſe you expect, after what 'paſt the other night.'

'My lord who?' cries the 'ſquire, 'I never heard 'the name o'un.'

'His lordſhip,' ſaid the gentleman, 'is willing to 'impute every thing to the effect of liquor, and the 'moſt trifling acknowledgment of that kind will ſet 'every thing right; for as he hath the moſt violent 'attachment to your daughter, you, Sir, are the laſt 'perſon upon earth, from whom he would reſent 'an affront; and happy is it for you both that he 'hath given ſuch public demonſtrations of his cou-'rage, as to be able to put up an affair of this kind, 'without danger of any imputation on his honour. 'All he deſires therefore, is, that you will before me, 'make ſome acknowledgment; the ſlighteſt in the 'world will be ſufficient; and he intends this after-'noon to pay his reſpects to you, in order to obtain 'your leave of viſiting the young lady on the footing 'of a lover.'

'I don't underſtand much of what you ſay, Sir,' ſaid the 'ſquire; 'but I ſuppoſe, by what you talk 'about my daughter, that this is the lord which my 'couſin lady Bellaſton mentioned to me, and ſaid 'ſomething about his courting my daughter. If ſo 'be, that how, that be the caſe—you may give my 'ſervice to his lordſhip, and tell un the girl is diſpoſed 'of already.'

'Perhaps, Sir,' ſaid the gentleman, 'you are not 'ſufficiently apprized of the greatneſs of this offer. 'I believe ſuch a perſon, title, and fortune would be 'no where refuſed.'

'Lookee, Sir,' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'to be very 'plain, my daughter is beſpoke already; but if ſhe 'was not, I would not marry her to a lord upon any 'account; I hate all lords; they are a parcel of 'courtiers and Hanoverians, and I will have nothing 'to do with them.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid the gentleman, 'if that is your 'reſolution, the meſſage I am to deliver to you is,

'that

'that my lord desires the favour of your compa
'this morning in Hyde Park.'

'You may tell my lord,' answered the 'squ
'that I am busy, and cannot come. I have enou
'to look after at home, and can't stir abroad on a
'account.'

'I am sure, Sir,' quoth the other, 'you are
'much a gentleman to send such a message; you w
'not, I am convinced, have it said of you, that a
'having affronted a noble peer, you refuse him
'tisfaction. His lordship would have been will
'from his great regard to the young lady, to h
'made up matters in another way; but unless he
'to look on you as a father, his honour will not
'fer his putting up such an indignity as you mu
'sensible you offered him.'

'I offered him!' cries the 'squire; 'it is a d--
'lie, I never offered him any thing.'

Upon these words the gentleman returned a
short verbal rebuke, and this he accompanied at
same time with some manual remonstrances, which
sooner reached the ears of Mr Western, than t
worthy 'squire began to caper very briskly about
room, bellowing at the same time with all his mi
as desirous to summon a greater number of spect
to behold his agility.

The parson, who had left great part of the tank
unfinished, was not retired far: he immediately
tended therefore on the 'squire's vociferation, cry
'Bless me! Sir, what's the matter?'——'Matt
quoth the 'squire, 'here's a highwayman, I beli
'who wants to rob and murder me——for he h
'fallen upon me with that stick there in his ha
'when I wish I may be damn'd if I gid un the l
'provocation.'

'How, Sir,' said the captain, 'did you not tell
'I ly'd?'

'No, as I hope to be saved,' answered the 'squ
'I believe I might say, 'Twas a lye that I
'offered any affront to my lord,'——but I n
'said the word you lie.—I understand myself be
'and you might have understood yourself better

'to fall upon a naked man. If I had a ſtick in my 'hand, you would not have dared to ſtrike me. I'd 'have knocked thy lantern jaws about thy ears. 'Come down into yard this minute, and I'll take a 'bout with thee at ſingle ſtick for a broken head, 'that I will; or I will go into naked room and box 'thee for a belly-full. At unt half a man, at unt 'I'm ſure.'

The captain, with ſome indignation, replied, 'I 'ſee, Sir, you are below my notice, and I ſhall inform 'his lordſhip you are below his.—I am ſorry I have 'dirtied my fingers with you.'—At which words he withdrew, the parſon interpoſing to prevent the 'ſquire from ſtopping him, in which he eaſily prevailed, as the other, though he made ſome efforts for the purpoſe, did not ſeem very violently bent on ſucceſs. However, when the captain was departed, the 'ſquire ſent many curſes and ſome menaces after him; but as theſe did not ſet out from his lips till the officer was at the bottom of the ſtairs, and grew louder and louder as he was more and more remote, they did not reach his ears, or at leaſt did not retard his departure.

Poor Sophia however, who, in her priſon, heard all her father's outcries from firſt to laſt, began now firſt to thunder with her foot, and afterwards to ſcream as loudly as the old gentleman himſelf had done before, though in a much ſweeter voice. Theſe ſcreams ſoon ſilenced the 'ſquire, and turned all his conſiderations towards his daughter, whom he loved ſo tenderly, that the leaſt apprehenſion of any harm happening to her, threw him preſently into agonies: for except in that ſingle inſtance in which the whole future happineſs of her life was concerned, ſhe was ſovereign miſtreſs of his inclinations.

Having ended his rage againſt the captain, with ſwearing he would take the law of him, the 'ſquire now mounted up ſtairs to Sophia, whom, as ſoon as he had unlocked and opened the door, he found all pale and breathleſs. The moment however that ſhe ſaw her father, ſhe collected all her ſpirits, and catching hold of him by the hand, ſhe cry'd paſſionately,

'O my dear Sir, I am almoſt frighted to death;
'hope to Heaven no harm hath happened to you.'
'No, no,' cries the 'ſquire, 'no great harm. T
'raſcal hath not hurt me much, but rat me if I d
'ha the la o'un.' 'Pray, dear Sir,' ſays ſhe, '
'me what's the matter, who is it that hath inſul
'you?' 'I don't know the name o'un,' anſwe
Weſtern, 'ſome officer fellow I ſuppoſe, that we
'to pay for beating us; but I'll make him pay
'bout, if the raſcal hath got any thing, which I
'poſe he hath not. For though he was dreſt ou
'vine, I queſtion whether he had got a voot of l
'in the world.' 'But, dear Sir,' cries ſhe, 'w
'was the occaſion of your quarrel?' 'What ſho
'it be, Sophy?' anſwered the 'ſquire, 'but about y
'Sophy. All my misfortunes are about you; y
'will be the death of your poor father at la ſt. He
'a valet of a lord, the Lord knows who forſoo
'who hath taan a liking to you, and becauſe I wo
'not gi un my conſent, he ſent me a kallenge. Co
'do be a good girl, Sophy, and put an end to
'your father's troubles; come do, conſent to ha
'he will be in town within this day or two; do
'promiſe me to marry un as ſoon as he comes,
'you will make me the happieſt man in the wo
'and I will make you the happieſt woman; you
'have the fineſt clothes in London, and the fi
'jewels, and a coach and ſix at your command.
'promiſed Allworthy already to give up half
'eſtate.—Odrabbit it! I ſhould hardly ſtick at gi
'up the whole.' 'Will my papa be ſo kind,'
ſhe, 'as to hear me ſpeak?'—'Why wout aſk, S
'phy?' cries he, 'when doſt know I had rather h
'thy voice, than the muſic of the beſt pack of dogs
'England.—Hear thee, my dear little girl! I hop
'ſhall hear thee as long as I live: for if ever I was
'loſe that pleaſure, I would not gee a braſs varden
'live a moment longer. Indeed, Sophy, you do
'know how I love you, indeed you don't, or
'never could have run away and left your poor
'ther, who hath no other joy, no other comfort up
'earth but his little Sophy.' At theſe words the te
ſtr

ſtood in his eyes; and Sophia, (with the tears ſtreaming from hers) anſwered, 'Indeed, my dear papa, I know you have loved me tenderly, and Heaven is my witneſs how ſincerely I have returned your affection; nor could any thing but an apprehenſion of being forced into the arms of this man, have driven me to run from a father whom I love ſo paſſionately, that I would, with pleaſure, ſacrifice my life to his happineſs; nay, I have endeavoured to reaſon myſelf into doing more, and had almoſt worked up a reſolution, to endure the moſt miſerable of all lives, to comply with your inclination. It was that reſolution alone to which I could not force my mind; nor can I ever.' Here the 'ſquire began to look wild, and the foam appeared at his lips; which Sophia obſerving, begged to be heard out, and then proceeded: 'If my father's life, his health, or any real happineſs of his was at ſtake, here ſtands your reſolved daughter, may Heaven blaſt me, if there is a miſery I would not ſuffer to preſerve you. —No, that moſt deteſted, moſt loathſome of all lots would I embrace. I would give my hand to Blifil for your ſake.'—'I tell thee, it will preſerve me,' anſwers the father; 'it will give me health, happineſs, life, every thing.—Upon my ſoul I ſhall die if doſt refuſe me: I ſhall break my heart, I ſhall upon my ſoul.'—'Is it poſſible,' ſays ſhe, 'you can have ſuch a deſire to make me miſerable?' 'I tell thee noa,' anſwered he loudly, 'my whole deſire is to make thee happy; me! d—n me if there is a thing upon earth I would not do to ſee thee happy?'—'And will not my dear papa allow me to have the leaſt knowledge of what will make me ſo? If it be true that happineſs conſiſts in opinion; what muſt be my condition, when I ſhall think myſelf the moſt miſerable of all the wretches upon earth?' 'Better think yourſelf ſo,' ſaid he, 'than know it by being married to a poor baſtardly vagabond.' 'If it will content you, Sir,' ſaid Sophia, 'I will give you the moſt ſolemn promiſe never to marry him, nor any other, while my papa lives, without his conſent. Let me dedicate my whole life to your ſer-

'vice; let me be again your poor Sophy, and
'whole buſineſs and pleaſure be, as it hath been,
'pleaſe and divert you' 'Lookee, Sophy,' anſw
ed the 'ſquire, 'I am not to be chouſed in this m
'ner. Your aunt Weſtern would then have re
'to think me the fool ſhe doth. No, no, Sophy,
'have you to know I have a got more wiſdom,
'know more of the world than to take the word
'a woman in a matter where a man is concern
'How, Sir, have I deſerved this want of confidenc
ſaid ſhe, 'Have I ever broke a ſingle promiſe to y
'or have I ever been found guilty of a falſehood ſi
'my cradle?' 'Lookee, Sophy,' cries he, 'that's
'ther here nor there. I am determined upon
'match, and have him you ſhall, d——n me, if
'unt. D—n me if ſhat unt, tho' doſt hang th
'the next morning.' At repeating theſe words
clenched his fiſt, knit his brows, bit his lips,
thundered ſo loud, that the poor afflicted, terri
Sophia ſunk trembling into her chair, and had n
flood of tears come immediately to her relief, perh
worſe had followed.

Weſtern beheld the deplorable condition of
daughter with no more contrition or remorſe, t
the turnkey of Newgate feels at viewing the ago
of a tender wife, when taking her laſt farewell of
condemned huſband; or rather he looked down
her with the ſame emotions which ariſe in an h
fair tradeſman, who ſees his debtor dragged to pri
for 10 l. which, though a juſt debt, the wretch
wickedly unable to pay. Or, to hit the caſe
more nearly, he felt the ſame compunction wit
bawd when ſome poor innocent whom ſhe hath
ſnared into her hands, falls into fits at the firſt p
poſal of what is called ſeeing company. Indeed
reſemblance would be exact, was it not that the ha
hath an intereſt in what ſhe doth, and the fath
though perhaps he may blindly think otherwiſe,
in reality have none in urging his daughter to al
an equal proſtitution.

In this condition he left his poor Sophia, and
parting with a very vulgar obſervation on the

of tears, he locked the room, and returned to the parſon, who ſaid every thing he durſt in behalf of the young lady, which though perhaps it was not quite ſo much as his duty required, yet was it ſufficient to throw the 'ſquire into a violent rage, and into many indecent reflections on the whole body of the clergy, which we have too great an honour for that ſacred function to commit to paper.

CHAP. III.

What happened to Sophia during her confinement.

THE landlady of the houſe where the 'ſquire lodged, had begun very early to entertain a ſtrange opinion of her gueſts. However, as ſhe was informed that the 'ſquire was a man of a vaſt fortune, and as ſhe had taken care to exact a very extraordinary price for her rooms, ſhe did not think proper to give any offence; for though ſhe was not without ſome concern for the confinement of poor Sophia, of whoſe great ſweetneſs of temper and affability, the maid of the houſe had made ſo favourable a report, which was confirmed by all the 'ſquire's ſervants, yet ſhe had much more concern for her own intereſt, than to provoke one, whom, as ſhe ſaid, ſhe perceived to be a very haſtiſh kind of a gentleman.

Though Sophia ate but little, yet ſhe was regularly ſerved with her meals; indeed I believe if ſhe had liked any one rarity, that the 'ſquire, however angry, would have ſpared neither pains nor coſt to have procured it for her; ſince, however ſtrange it may appear to ſome of my readers, he really doated on his daughter, and to give her any kind of pleaſure was the higheſt ſatisfaction of his life.

The dinner hour being arrived, Black George carried her up a pullet, the 'ſquire himſelf (for he had ſworn not to part with the key) attending the door. As George depoſited the diſh, ſome compliments paſſed between him and Sophia (for he had not ſeen her ſince ſhe left the country, and ſhe treated every ſervant with more reſpect than ſome perſons ſhew to thoſe who are in a very ſlight degree their inferiors). Sophia would have had him take the pullet back, ſay-

ing ſhe could not eat; but George begged her to
and particularly recommended to her the eggs,
which he ſaid it was full.

All this time the 'ſquire was waiting at the do
but George was a great favourite with his maſter,
his employment was in concerns of the higheſt nat
namely about the game, and was accuſtomed to t
many liberties. He had officiouſly carried up
dinner, being, as he ſaid, very deſirous to ſee
young lady; he made therefore no ſcruple of keep
his maſter ſtanding above ten minutes, while civil
were paſſing between him and Sophia; for which
received only a good-humoured rebuke at the d
when he returned.

The eggs of pullets, partridges, pheaſants, &c. wa
as George well knew, the moſt favourite dainties
Sophia. It was therefore no wonder, that he,
was a very good natured fellow, ſhould take care
ſupply her with this kind of delicacy, at a time, wa
all the ſervants in the houſe were afraid ſhe would
ſtarved; for ſhe had ſcarce ſwallowed a ſingle mo
in the laſt forty hours.

Though vexation hath not the ſame effect on
perſons as it uſually hath on a widow, whoſe ap
tite it often renders ſharper than it can be rende
by the air on Banſted Downs, or Saliſbury plain;
the ſublimeſt grief, notwithſtanding what ſome p
ple may ſay to the contrary, will eat at laſt.
Sophia herſelf, after ſome little conſideration, be
to diſſect the fowl, which ſhe found to be as fu
eggs as George had reported it.

But if ſhe was pleaſed with theſe, it contained ſo
thing which would have delighted the Royal Soci
much more; for if a fowl with three legs be ſo in
luable a curioſity, when perhaps time hath produ
a thouſand ſuch, at what price ſhall we eſteem a b
which ſo totally contradicts all the laws of ani
œconomy, as to contain a letter in its belly? O
tells us of a flower into which Hyacinthus was m
morphoſed, that bears letters on its leaves, wh
Virgil recommended as a miracle to the Royal Soci
of his day; but no age nor nation hath ever recor
a bird with a letter in its maw.

But though a miracle of this kind might have engaged all the *Academies des Sciences* in Europe, and perhaps in a fruitleſs enquiry; yet the reader by barely recollecting the laſt dialogue which paſſed between Meſſieurs Jones and Partridge, will be very eaſily ſatisfied from whence this letter came, and how it found its paſſage into the fowl.

Sophia, notwithſtanding her long faſt, and notwithſtanding her favourite diſh was there before her, no ſooner ſaw the letter than ſhe immediately ſnatched it up, tore it open, and read as follows.

"MADAM,

"Was I not ſenſible to whom I have the honour of writing, I ſhould endeavour, however difficult, to paint the horrors of my mind, at the account brought me by Mrs Honour: but as tenderneſs alone can have any true idea of the pangs which tenderneſs is capable of feeling; ſo can this moſt amiable quality, which my Sophia poſſeſſes in the moſt eminent degree, ſufficiently inform her what her Jones muſt have ſuffered on this melancholy occaſion. Is there a circumſtance in the world which can heighten my agonies, when I hear of any misfortune which hath befallen you? Surely there is one only, and with that I am accurſed. It is, my Sophia, the dreadful conſideration that I am myſelf the wretched cauſe. Perhaps I here do myſelf too much honour, but none will envy me an honour which coſts me ſo extremely dear. Pardon me this preſumption, and pardon me a greater ſtill, if I aſk you whether my advice, my aſſiſtance, my preſence, my abſence, my death, or my tortures, can bring you any relief? Can the moſt perfect admiration, the moſt watchful obſervance, the moſt ardent love, the moſt melting tenderneſs, the moſt reſigned ſubmiſſion to your will, make you amends for what you are to ſacrifice to my happineſs? If they can, fly, my lovely angel, to thoſe arms which are ever open to receive and protect you; and to which, whether you bring yourſelf alone, or the riches of the world with you, is, in my opinion,

"an

" an alternative not worth regarding. If, on the c
" trary, wiſdom ſhall predominate, and, on the m
" mature reflection, inform you, that the ſacrifice
" too great; and if there be no way left to recon
" you to your father, and reſtore the peace of your d
" mind, but by abandoning me, I conjure you dr
" me for ever from your thoughts, exert your reſo
" tion, and let no compaſſion for my ſufferings ha
" the leaſt weight in that tender boſom. Believe m
" Madam, I ſo ſincerely love you better than myſe
" that my great and principal end is your happine
" My firſt wiſh (why would not Fortune indulge
" in it?) was, and pardon me if I ſay, ſtill is, to
" you every moment the happieſt of women; my
" cond wiſh is, to hear you are ſo; but no miſer
" earth can equal mine, while I think you owe
" uneaſy moment to him who is,

" Madam,

" In every ſenſe, and to every purpoſe,

" your devoted,

" Thomas Jon

What Sophia ſaid, or did, or thought, upon t
letter, how often ſhe read it, or whether more t
once, ſhall all be left to our reader's imaginati
The anſwer to it he may perhaps ſee hereafter,
not at preſent; for this reaſon, among others, t
ſhe did not now write any, and that for ſeveral g
cauſes, one of which was this, ſhe had no paper,
nor ink.

In the evening while Sophia was meditating on
letter ſhe had received, or on ſomething elſe, a vi
noiſe from below diſturbed her meditations. T
noiſe was no other than a round bout at altercat
between two perſons. One of the combatants,
his voice, ſhe immediately diſtinguiſhed to be her
ther; but ſhe did not ſo ſoon diſcover the ſhri
pipes to belong to the organ of her aunt Wette
who was juſt arrived in town, where having, by me
of one of her ſervants, who ſtopt at the Hercules P
lars, learnt where her brother lodged, ſhe drove
rectly to his lodgings.

We ſhall therefore take our leave at preſent of Sophia, and, with our uſual good-breeding, attend her ladyſhip.

CHAP. IV.

In which Sophia is delivered from her confinement.

THE 'ſquire and the parſon, (for the landlord was now otherwiſe engaged) were ſmoaking their pipes together, when the arrival of the lady was firſt ſignified. The 'ſquire no ſooner heard her name, than he immediately ran down to uſher her up ſtairs; for he was a great obſerver of ſuch ceremonials, eſpecially to his ſiſter, of whom he ſtood more in awe than of any other human creature, though he never would own this, nor did he perhaps know it himſelf.

Mrs Weſtern, on her arrival in the dining-room, having flung herſelf into a chair, began thus to harangue. 'Well, ſurely no one ever had ſuch an intolerable journey. I think the roads, ſince ſo many turnpike acts, are grown worſe than ever. La, brother, how could you get into this odious place? no perſon of condition, I dare ſwear, ever ſet foot here before.' 'I don't know,' cries the 'ſquire, 'I think they do well enough; it was landlord recommended them. I thought, as he knew moſt of the quality, he could beſt ſhew me where to get among um.' 'Well, and where's my niece?' ſays the lady. 'Have you been to wait upon lady Bellaſton yet?' 'Ay,' cries the 'ſquire, 'your niece is ſafe enough: ſhe is up ſtairs in chamber.' 'How,' anſwered the lady, 'is my niece in this houſe, and doth ſhe not know of my being here?' 'No, nobody can well get to her,' ſays the 'ſquire, 'for ſhe is under lock and key. I have her ſafe; I vetched her from my lady Coûſin the firſt night I came to town, and I have taken care o' her ever ſince; ſhe is as ſecure as a fox in a bag, I promiſe you.' 'Good Heaven!' returned Mrs Weſtern, 'what do I hear! I thought what a fine piece of work would be the conſequence of my conſent to your coming

'to

'to town yourself; nay it was indeed your
'headstrong will, nor can I charge myself with
'ving ever consented to it. Did not you promi
'brother that you would take none of these h
'strong measures? Was it not by these head
'measures that you forced my niece to run
'from you in the country? Have you a mind to
'blige her to take such another step?' 'Z——ds
'the devil,' cries the 'squire, dashing his pipe on
ground, 'did ever mortal hear the like? when
'pected you would have commended me for all I
'done, to be fallen upon in this manner!' 'H
'brother,' said the lady, 'have I ever given you
'least reason to imagine I should commend you
'locking up your daughter? Have I not often
'you that women in a free country are not t
'treated with such arbitrary power? We are as
'as the men, and I heartily wish I could not s
'deserve that freedom better. If you expect I sh
'stay a moment longer in this wretched hous
'that I should ever own you again as my rela
'or that I should ever trouble myself again with
'affairs of your family, I insist upon it that my
'be set at liberty this instant.' This she spoke
so commanding an air, standing with her back t
fire, with one hand behind her, and a pinch of
in the other, that I question whether Thalestr
the head of her Amazons ever made a more tre
dous figure. It is no wonder therefore that the
'squire was not proof against the awe which sh
spired. 'There,' he cried, throwing down the
'there it is, do whatever you please. I inte
'only to have kept her up till Blifil came to t
'which can't be long; and now, if any harm hap
'in the mean time, remember who is to be bl
'for it.'

'I will answer it with my life,' cried Mrs We
'but I shall not intermeddle at all unless upon
'condition, and that is, that you will commit
'whole entirely to my care, without taking any
'measure yourself, unless I shall eventually ap
'you to act. If you ratify these preliminaries,

ther, I yet will endeavour to preſerve the honour of your family; if not, I ſhall continue in a neutral ſtate.'

'I pray you, good Sir,' ſaid the Parſon, 'permit yourſelf this once to be admoniſhed by her ladyſhip; peradventure by communing with young Madam Sophia, ſhe will effect more than you have been able to perpetrate by more rigorous meaſures.'

'What, doſt thee open upon me?' cries the 'ſquire. 'If thee doſt begin to babble, I ſhall whip thee in preſently.'

'Fie, brother,' anſwered the lady, 'is this language to a clergyman? Mr Supple is a man of ſenſe, and gives you the beſt advice; and the whole world, I believe, will concur in his opinion; but I muſt tell you, I expect an immediate anſwer to my categorical propoſals. Either cede your daughter to my diſpoſal, or take her wholly to your own ſurpriſing diſcretion, and then I here, before Mr Supple, evacuate the garriſon, and renounce you and your family for ever.'

'I pray you, let me be a mediator,' cries the parſon; 'let me ſupplicate you.'

'Why there lies the key on the table,' cries the 'ſquire, 'She may take un up, if ſhe pleaſes; who hinders her?'

'No, brother,' anſwered the lady, 'I inſiſt on the formality of its being delivered me, with a full ratification of all the conceſſions ſtipulated.'

'Why then I will deliver it to you.—There 'tis,' ſays the 'ſquire. 'I am ſure, ſiſter, you can't accuſe me of ever denying to truſt my daughter to you. She hath lived wi' you a whole year and muore to a time, without my ever zeeing her.'

'And it would have been happy for her,' anſwered the lady, 'if ſhe had always lived with me. Nothing of this kind would have happened under my eye.'

'Ay, certainly,' cries he, 'I only am to blame.'

'Why, you are to blame, brother,' anſwered ſhe; 'I have been often obliged to tell you ſo, and ſhall always be obliged to tell you ſo. However, I hope you will now amend, and gather ſo much experience

'from paſt errors, as not to defeat my wiſeſt ma
'nations by your blunders. Indeed, brother,
'are not qualified for theſe negociations. All
'whole ſcheme of politics is wrong. I once m
'therefore, inſiſt, that you do not intermeddle.
'member only what is paſt.'——

'Z——ds and bl—d, ſiſter,' cries the 'ſq
'What would you have me ſay? You are enoug
'provoke the devil.'

'There now,' ſaid ſhe, 'juſt according to the
'cuſtom. 'I ſee, brother, there is no talking to
'I will appeal to Mr Supple, who is a man of
'if I ſaid any thing which could put any human cr
'ture into a paſſion; but you are ſo wrong-hea
'every way.'

'Let me beg you, Madam,' ſaid the parſon, '
'to irritate his worſhip.'

'Irritate him?' ſaid the lady;——'Sure you
'as great a fool as himſelf. Well, brother,
'you have promiſed not to interfere, I will once m
'undertake the management of my niece. Lord h
'mercy upon all affairs which are under the direc
'of men! The head of one woman is worth a thou
'of yours.' And now having ſummoned a ſervan
ſhew her to Sophia, ſhe departed, bearing the key w
her.

She was no ſooner gone, than the 'ſquire (hav
firſt ſhut the door) ejaculated twenty bitches, an
many hearty curſes againſt her, not ſparing him
for having ever thought of her eſtate; but add
'Now one hath been a ſlave ſo long, it would be
'to loſe it at laſt, for want of holding out a
'longer. The bitch can't live for ever, and I k
'I am down for it upon the will.'

The parſon greatly commended this reſoluti
and now the 'ſquire having ordered in another bo
which was his uſual method when any thing
pleaſed or vexed him, did, by drinking plentifull
this medicinal julap, ſo totally waſh away his ch
that his temper was become perfectly placid an
rene, when Mrs Weſtern returned with Sophi
the room. The young lady had on her hat
chin, and the aunt acquainted Mr Weſtern,

'ſhe intended to take her niece with her to her own 'lodgings; for, indeed, brother,' ſays ſhe, 'theſe 'rooms are not fit to receive a Chriſtian ſoul in.'

'Very well, Madam,' quoth Weſtern, 'whatever 'you pleaſe. The girl can never be in better hands 'than yours; and the parſon here can do me the ju-'ſtice to ſay, that I have ſaid fifty times behind your 'back, that you was one of the moſt ſenſible women 'in the world.'

'To this,' cries the parſon, 'I am ready to bear 'teſtimony.'

'Nay, brother,' ſays Mrs Weſtern, 'I have always, 'I'm ſure, given you as favourable a character. You 'muſt own you have a little too much haſtineſs in your 'temper; but when you will allow yourſelf time to 'reflect, I never knew a man more reaſonable.'

'Why then, ſiſter, if you think ſo,' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'here's your good health with all my heart. I am 'a little paſſionate ſometimes, but I ſcorn to bear any 'malice. Sophy, do you be a good girl, and do every 'thing your aunt orders you.'

'I have not the leaſt doubt of her,' anſwered Mrs Weſtern. 'She hath had already an example before 'her eyes, in the behaviour of that wretch her couſin 'Harriet, who ruined herſelf by neglecting my ad-'vice.—O brother, what think you? You was hardly 'gone out of hearing, when you ſet out for London, 'when who ſhould arrive but that impudent fellow 'with the odious Iriſh name—that Fitzpatrick. He 'broke in abruptly upon me without notice, or I would 'not have ſeen him. He ran on a long, unintelligi-'ble ſtory about his wife, to which he forced me to 'give him a hearing; but I made him very little an-'ſwer, and delivered him the letter from his wife, 'which I bid him anſwer himſelf. I ſuppoſe the 'wretch will endeavour to find us out: but I beg you 'will not ſee her, for I am determined I will not.'

'I zee her,' anſwered the 'ſquire: 'you need not 'fear me.' I'll gee no encouragement to ſuch undu-'tiful wenches. It is well for the fellow her huſband 'was not at hnome. Od rabbit it, he ſhould have 'taken a dance thru the horſe pond, I promiſe un

'You zee, Sophy, what undutifulneſs brings volks
'You have an example in your own family.'

'Brother,' cries the aunt, 'you need not ſhock
'niece by ſuch odious repetitions. Why will you
'leave every thing entirely to me?' 'Well, w
'I wull, I wull,' ſaid the 'ſquire.

And now Mrs Weſtern, luckily for Sophia, pu
end to the converſation, by ordering chairs to be c
ed. I ſay luckily; for had it continued much long
freſh matter of diſſention would, moſt probably, h
ariſen between the brother and ſiſter; between wh
education and ſex made the only difference; for b
were equally violent, and equally poſitive; they b
both a vaſt affection for Sophia, and both a ſovere
contempt for each other.

CHAP. V.

*In which Jones receives a letter from Sophia, and g
to a play with Mrs Miller and Partridge.*

THE arrival of Black George in town, and
good offices which that grateful fellow h
promiſed to do for his old benefactor, greatly co
forted Jones in the midſt of all the anxiety and un
ſineſs which he had ſuffered on the account of Soph
from whom, by the means of the ſaid George, he
ceived the following anſwer to his letter, which S
phia, to whom the uſe of pen, ink, and paper was
ſtored with her liberty, wrote the very evening w
ſhe departed from her confinement.

"SIR,

"As I do not doubt your ſincerity in what
"write, you will be pleaſed to hear that ſome of
"afflictions are at an end, by the arrival of my a
"Weſtern, with whom I am at preſent, and w
"whom I enjoy all the liberty I can deſire. One p
"miſe my aunt hath inſiſted on my making, which
"that I will not ſee or converſe with any per
"without her knowledge and conſent. This pro
"I have moſt ſolemnly given, and ſhall moſt in
"ſably keep; and though ſhe hath not expreſsly f
"bid

"bidden me writing, yet that muſt be an omiſſion "from forgetfulneſs; or this, perhaps, is included "in the word converſing. However, as I cannot but "conſider this as a breach of her generous confidence "in my honour, you cannot expect that I ſhall, after "this, continue to write myſelf, or to receive letters, "without her knowledge. A promiſe is with me a "very ſacred thing, and to be extended to every thing "underſtood from it, as well as to what is expreſſed "by it; and this conſideration may perhaps, on re-"flection, afford you ſome comfort. But why ſhould "I mention a comfort to you of this kind? For "though there is one thing in which I can never "comply with the beſt of fathers, yet am I firmly re-"ſolved never to act in defiance of him, or to take "any ſtep of conſequence without his conſent. A "firm perſuaſion of this, muſt teach you to divert "your thoughts from what fortune hath (perhaps) "made impoſſible. This your own intereſt perſuades "you. This may reconcile, I hope, Mr Allworthy "to you; and if it will, you have my injunctions to "purſue it. Accidents have laid ſome obligations on "me, and your good intentions probably more. For-"tune may, perhaps, be ſome time kinder to us both "than at preſent. Believe this, that I ſhall always "think of you as I think you deſerve, and am,

"SIR,

"Your obliged humble ſervant,

"SOPHIA WESTERN."

"I charge you write to me no more——at preſent "at leaſt; and accept this, which is now of no ſervice "to me, which I know you muſt want, and think you "owe the trifle only to that fortune by which you "found it.*"

A child who had juſt learnt his letters, would have ſpelt this letter out in leſs time than Jones took in reading it. The ſenſations it occaſioned were a mix-ture of joy and grief; ſomewhat like what divide the

* Meaning, perhaps, the bank-bill for 100l.

mind of a good man, when he peruſes the will of a deceaſed friend, in which a large legacy, which his diſtreſſes make the more welcome, is bequeathed him. Upon the whole, however, he was more pleaſed than diſpleaſed; and indeed the reader will probably wonder that he was diſpleaſed at all; for the reader is not quite ſo much in love as was Mr Jones; and love is a diſeaſe, which, though it reſembles in ſome inſtances reſemble a conſumption, (which it ſometimes cauſes) in others proceeds in direct oppoſition to it, and particularly in this, that it never flatters itſelf, or ſees any one ſymptom in a favourable light.

One thing gave him complete ſatisfaction, which was, that his miſtreſs had regained her liberty, and was now with a lady where ſhe might at leaſt aſſure herſelf of a decent treatment. Another comfortable circumſtance, was the reference which ſhe made to her promiſe of never marrying any other man; however diſintereſted he might imagine his paſſion, and notwithſtanding all the generous overtures made in his letter, I very much queſtion whether he could have heard a more afflicting piece of news, than that Sophia was married to another, though the match had been never ſo great, and never ſo likely to end in making her compleatly happy. That refined degree of Platonic affection which is abſolutely detached from the fleſh, and is indeed entirely and purely ſpiritual, is a gift confined to the female part of the creation, many of whom I have heard declare, (and doubtleſs with great truth) that they would, with the utmoſt readineſs, reſign a lover to a rival, when ſuch reſignation was proved to be neceſſary for the temporal intereſt of ſuch a lover. Hence, therefore, I conclude, that this affection is in nature, though I cannot pretend to ſay, I have ever ſeen an inſtance of it.

Mr Jones having ſpent three hours in reading and kiſſing the aforeſaid letter, and being, at laſt, in a ſtate of good ſpirits, from the laſt-mentioned conſiderations, he agreed to carry an appointment, which he had before made, into execution. This was

attend Mrs Miller, and her younger daughter, into the gallery at the play-house, and to admit Mr Partridge as one of the company. For as Jones had really that taste for humour which many affect, he expected to enjoy much entertainment in the criticisms of Partridge; from whom he expected the simple dictates of Nature, unimproved indeed, but likewise unadulterated by art.

In the first row then of the first gallery did Mr Jones, Mrs Miller, her youngest daughter, and Partridge, take their places. Partridge immediately declared, it was the finest place he had ever been in. When the first music was played, he said, 'It was a wonder how so many fiddlers could play at one time without putting one another out.' While the fellow was lighting the upper candles, he cried out to Mrs Miller, 'Look, look, Madam, the very picture of the man in the end of the common-prayer-book, before the gun-powder treason service.' Nor could he help observing with a sigh, when all the candles were lighted, 'That here were candles enough burnt in one night, to keep an honest poor family for a whole twelvemonth.'

As soon as the play, which was Hamlet Prince of Denmark, began, Partridge was all attention, nor did he break silence till the entrance of the ghost; upon which he asked Jones, 'What man that was in the strange dress; something,' said he, 'like what I have seen in a picture. Sure it is not in armour, is it?' Jones answered, 'That is the ghost.' To which Partridge replied with a smile, 'Persuade me to that, Sir, if you can. Though I can't say I ever actually saw a ghost in my life, yet I am certain I should know one, if I saw him, better than that comes to. No, no, Sir, ghosts don't appear in such dresses as that, neither.' In this mistake, which caused much laughter in the neighbourhood of Partridge, he was suffered to continue, 'till the scene between the Ghost and Hamlet, when Partridge gave that credit to Mr Garrick, which he had denied to Jones, and fell into so violent a trembling, that his knees knocked against each other. Jones

aſked him what was the matter, and whether he
afraid of the warrior upon the ſtage? 'O la! S
ſaid he, 'I perceive now it is what you told me.
'am not afraid of any thing; for I know it is b
'play. And if it was really a ghoſt, it could
'one no harm at ſuch a diſtance, and in ſo m
'company; and yet if I was frightened, I am
'the only perſon.' 'Why, who,' cries Jones, 'd
'thou take to be ſuch a coward here beſides thyſel
'Nay, you may call me coward if you will; bu
'that little man there upon the ſtage is not frig
'ened, I never ſaw any man frightened in my
'Ay, ay; go along with you! Ay, to be ſu
'Who's fool then? Will you? Lud have mercy
'on ſuch fool-hardineſs!—— Whatever happen
'is good enough for you.——Follow you? I'd
'low the devil as ſoon. Nay, perhaps it is the
'vil——for they ſay he can put on what likeneſs
'pleaſes. — Oh! here he is again.——No farth
'No, you have gone far enough already; far
'than I'd have gone for all the king's dominio
Jones offered to ſpeak, but Partridge cried, 'H
'huſh, dear Sir, don't you hear him!' And du
the whole ſpeech of the ghoſt, he ſat with his e
fixed partly on the ghoſt, and partly on Ham
and with his mouth open; the ſame paſſions wh
ſucceeded each other in Hamlet, ſucceeding like
in him.

When the ſcene was over, Jones ſaid, 'W
'Partridge, you exceed my expectations. You
'joy the play more than I conceived poſſible.' 'N
'Sir,' anſwered Partridge, 'if you are not afraid
'the devil, I can't help it; but to be ſure it is
'tural to be ſurpriſed at ſuch things, though I kn
'there is nothing in them; not that it was the gh
'that ſurprized me neither; for I ſhould have kno
'that to have been only a man in a ſtrange dr
'but when I ſaw the little man ſo frightened h
'ſelf, it was that which took hold of me.' '
'doſt thou imagine then, Partridge,' cries Jo
'that he was really frightened?' 'Nay, Sir,'
Partridge, 'did not you yourſelf obſerve afterwa
'

'when he found it was his own father's ſpirit, and 'how he was murdered in the garden, how his fear 'forſook him by degrees, and he was ſtruck dumb 'with ſorrow, as it were, juſt as I ſhould have been, 'had it been my own caſe.—But huſh! O la! what 'noiſe is that? There he is again.—Well, to be cer-'tain, though I know there is nothing at all in it, I 'am glad I am not down yonder, where thoſe men 'are.' Then turning his eyes again upon Hamlet, 'Ay, you may draw your ſword; what ſignifies a 'ſword againſt the power of the devil?'

During the ſecond act, Partridge made very few remarks. He greatly admired the fineneſs of the dreſſes; nor could he help obſerving upon the king's countenance. 'Well,' ſaid he, 'how people may be de-'ceived by faces? *Nulla fides fronti* is, I find, a true 'ſaying. Who would think, by looking in the king's 'face, that he had ever committed a murder?' He then enquired after the ghoſt; but Jones, who intended he ſhould be ſurprized, gave him no other ſatisfaction, than, 'that he might poſſibly ſee him again ſoon, and 'in a flaſh of fire.'

Partridge ſat in fearful expectation of this; and now, when the ghoſt made his next appearance, Partridge cried out, 'There, Sir, now; what ſay you 'now? Is he frightened now or no? As much fright-'ened as you think me; and to be ſure, nobody can 'help ſome fears, I would not be in ſo bad a condition 'as what's his name, ſquire Hamlet is there, for all 'the world. Bleſs me! what's become of the ſpirit? 'As I am a living ſoul, I thought I ſaw him ſink into 'the earth.' 'Indeed you ſaw right,' anſwered Jones. 'Well, well,' cries Partridge, 'I know it is only a 'play; and beſides, if there was any thing in all this 'Madam Miller would not laugh ſo; for as to you, 'Sir, you would not be afraid, I believe, if the devil 'was here in perſon.—There, there;—Ay, no wonder 'you are in ſuch a paſſion; ſhake the vile wicked 'wretch to pieces. If ſhe was my own mother I ſhould 'ſerve her ſo. To be ſure, all duty to a mother is 'forfeited by ſuch wicked doings.——Ay, go about 'your buſineſs; I hate the ſight of you.'

Our

Our critic was now pretty ſilent till the play, wh
Hamlet introduces before the king. This he did
at firſt underſtand, 'till Jones explained it to him;
he no ſooner entered into the ſpirit of it, than he
gan to bleſs himſelf that he had never committed m
der. Then turning to Mrs Miller, he aſked her,
'ſhe did not imagine the king looked as if he
'touched; though he is,' ſaid he, 'a good actor,
'doth all he can to hide it. Well, I would not h
'ſo much to anſwer for, as that wicked man th
'hath, to ſit upon a much higher chair than he
'upon. No wonder he ran away; for your ſake
'never truſt an innocent face again.'

The grave-digging ſcene next engaged the atten
of Partridge, who expreſſed much ſurpriſe at the nu
ber of ſculls thrown upon the ſtage. To which Jo
anſwered, 'That it was one of the moſt famous
'rial-places about town.' 'No wonder, then,' c
Partridge, 'that the place is haunted. But I ne
'ſaw in my life a worſe grave-digger. I had a fe
'when I was clerk, that ſhould have dug three gra
'while he is digging one. The fellow handles a ſp
'as if it was the firſt time he had ever had one in
'hand. Ay, ay, you may ſing. You had rather
'than work, I believe.'—— Upon Hamlet's tak
up the ſkull, he cried out, 'Well, it is ſtrange to
'how fearleſs ſome men are: I never could bring m
'ſelf to touch any thing belonging to a dead m
'on any account.—— He ſeemed frightened eno
'too at the ghoſt I thought. *Nemo omnibus h*
'*ſapit.*'

Little more worth remembering occurred during
play; at the end of which Jones aſked him, 'wh
'of the players he had liked beſt?' To this he
ſwered, with ſome appearance of indignation at
queſtion, 'The king without doubt.' 'Indeed,
'Partridge,' ſays Mrs Miller, 'you are not of
'ſame opinion with the town; for they are all agre
'that Hamlet is acted by the beſt player who was e
'on the ſtage.' 'He the beſt player!' cries P
tridge, with a contemptuous ſneer, 'Why I co
'act as well as he myſelf. I am ſure, if I had ſee
'gh

'ghoſt, I ſhould have looked in the very ſame manner, 'and done juſt as he did. And then to be ſure, in that 'ſcene, as you called it, between him and his mother, 'where you told me he acted ſo fine, why, Lord help 'me, any man, that is, any good man, that had ſuch 'a mother, would have done exactly the ſame. I 'know you are only joking with me; but indeed, 'Madam, though I was never at a play in London, 'yet I have ſeen acting before in the country; and 'the king for my money; he ſpeaks all his words 'diſtinctly, half as loud again as the other.—Any 'body may ſee he is an actor.'

While Mrs Miller was thus engaged in converſation with Partridge, a lady came up to Mr Jones, whom he immediately knew to be Mrs Fitzpatrick. She ſaid ſhe had ſeen him from the other part of the gallery, and had taken that opportunity of ſpeaking to him, as ſhe had ſomething to ſay, which might be of great ſervice to himſelf. She then acquainted him with her lodgings, and made him an appointment the next day in the morning; which, upon recollection, ſhe preſently changed to the afternoon; at which time Jones promiſed to attend her.

Thus ended the adventure at the play-houſe; where Partridge had afforded great mirth, not only to Jones and Mrs Miller, but to all who ſat within hearing, who were more attentive to what he ſaid, than to any thing that paſſed on the ſtage.

He durſt not go to bed all that night, for fear of the ghoſt; and for many nights after ſweated for two or three hours before he went to ſleep with the ſame apprehenſions, and waked ſeveral times in great horrors, crying out, 'Lord have mercy upon us! there 'it is.'

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

In which the history is obliged to go back.

IT is almost impossible for the best parent to ob an exact impartiality to his children, even th no superior merit should bias his affection; but a parent can hardly be blamed, when that superi determines his preference.

As I regard all the personages of this history in light of my children; so I must confess the same nation of partiality to Sophia: and for that I hope reader will allow me the same excuse from the sup ority of her character.

This extraordinary tenderness which I have for heroine, never suffers me to quit her any long without the utmost reluctance. I could now, the fore, return impatiently to enquire, what hath h pened to this lovely creature since her departure f her father's, but that I am obliged first to pay a s visit to Mr Blifil.

Mr Western, in the first confusion into which mind was cast, upon the sudden news he received his daughter, and in the first hurry to go after h had not once thought of sending any account of discovery to Blifil. He had not gone far, howe before he recollected himself, and accordingly s at the very first inn he came to, and dispatched a a messenger to acquaint Blifil with his having fo Sophia, and with his firm resolution to marry her him immediately, if he would come up after him town.

As the love which Blifil had for Sophia was of t violent kind which nothing but the loss of her f tune, or some such accident, could lessen, his incl tion to the match was not at all altered by her ha run away, though he was obliged to lay this to own account. He very readily, therefore, embra this offer. Indeed, he now proposed the gratificat of a very strong passion besides avarice, by marry this young lady, and this was hatred: for he c cluded that matrimony afforded an equal opportu

of ſatisfying either hatred or love; and this opinion is very probably verified by much experience. To ſay the truth, if we are to judge by the ordinary behaviour of married perſons to each other, we ſhall perhaps be apt to conclude, that the generality ſeek the indulgence of the former paſſion only, in their union of every thing but of hearts.

There was one difficulty, however, in his way, and this aroſe from Mr Allworthy. That good man, when he found by the departure of Sophia, (for neither that, nor the cauſe of it, could be concealed from him) the great averſion which ſhe had for his nephew, began to be ſeriouſly concerned that he had been deceived into carrying matters ſo far. He by no means concurred with the opinion of thoſe parents, who think it as immaterial to conſult the inclinations of their children in the affair of marriage, as to ſolicit the good pleaſure of their ſervants when they intend to take a journey; and who are, by law or decency at leaſt, with-held often from uſing abſolute force. On the contrary, as he eſteemed the inſtitution to be of the moſt ſacred kind, he thought every preparatory caution neceſſary to preſerve it holy and inviolate; and very wiſely concluded, that the ſureſt way to effect this, was by laying the foundation in previous affection.

Blifil indeed ſoon cured his uncle of all anger on the ſcore of deceit, by many vows and proteſtations that he had been deceived himſelf, with which the many declarations of Weſtern very well tallied; but how to perſuade Allworthy to conſent to the renewing his addreſſes, was a matter of ſuch apparent difficulty, that the very appearance was ſufficient to have deterred a leſs enterprizing genius; but this young gentleman ſo well knew his own talents, that nothing within the province of cunning ſeemed to him hard to be atchieved.

Here then he repreſented the violence of his own affection, and the hopes of ſubduing averſion in the lady by perſeverance. He begged that in an affair on which depended all his future repoſe, he might at leaſt be at liberty to try all fair means for ſucceſs.

Heaven

Heaven forbid, he ſaid, that he ſhould ever think prevailing by any other than the moſt gentle thods! 'Beſides, Sir,' ſaid he, 'if they fail, you 'then (which will be ſurely time enough) de 'conſent.' He urged the great and eager d which Mr Weſtern had for the match; and laſtly made great uſe of the name of Jones, to whom imputed all that had happened: and from wh he ſaid, to preſerve ſo valuable a young lady was an act of charity.

All theſe arguments were well ſeconded by Thw kum, who dwelt a little ſtronger on the authori parents than Mr Blifil himſelf had done. He ad ed the meaſures which Mr Blifil was deſirous to to Chriſtian motives; 'and though,' ſays he, 'good young gentleman hath mentioned charity 'I am almoſt convinced, it is his firſt and princ 'conſideration.'

Square, poſſibly, had he been preſent, would ſung to the ſame tune, though in a different and would have diſcovered much moral fitneſs in proceeding; but he was now gone to Bath for recovery of his health.

Allworthy, though not without reluctance, at yielded to the deſires of his nephew. He ſaid, would accompany him to London, where he m be at liberty to uſe every honeſt endeavour to the lady: 'But I declare,' ſaid he, 'I will 'give my conſent to any abſolute force being p 'her inclinations, nor ſhall you ever have her, u 'ſhe can be brought freely to compliance.'

Thus did the affection of Allworthy for his nep betray the ſuperior underſtanding to be triu over by the inferior; and thus is the prudence o beſt of heads often defeated, by the tenderneſs o beſt of hearts.

Blifil having obtained this unhoped for acquieſc in his uncle, reſted not till he carried his pu into execution. And as no immediate buſineſs quired Mr Allworthy's preſence in the country, little preparation is neceſſary to men for a jou they ſet out the very next day, and arrived in

that evening, when Mr Jones, as we have ſeen, was diverting himſelf with Partridge, at the play.

The morning after his arrival, Mr Blifil waited on Mr Weſtern, by whom he was moſt kindly and graciouſly received, and from whom he had every poſſible aſſurance (perhaps more than was poſſible) that he ſhould very ſhortly be as happy as Sophia could make him; nor would the 'ſquire ſuffer the young gentleman to return to his uncle, till he had, almoſt againſt his will, carried him to his ſiſter.

CHAP. VII.

In which Mr Weſtern pays a viſit to his ſiſter, in company with Mr Blifil.

MRS WESTERN was reading a lecture on prudence, and matrimonial politics, to her niece, when her brother and Blifil broke in with leſs ceremony than the laws of viſiting require. Sophia no ſooner ſaw Blifil, than ſhe turned pale, and almoſt loſt the uſe of all her faculties; but her aunt, on the contrary, waxed red, and having all her faculties at command, began to exert her tongue on the 'ſquire.

'Brother,' ſaid ſhe, 'I am aſtoniſhed at your behaviour: will you never learn any regard to decorum? Will you ſtill look upon every apartment as your own, or as belonging to one of your country tenants? Do you think yourſelf at liberty to invade the privacies of women of condition, without the leaſt decency or notice?'——'Why, what a pox! is the matter now?' quoth the 'ſquire, 'one would think I had caught you at—' 'None of your brutality, Sir, I beſeech you,' anſwered ſhe.—— 'You have ſurpriſed my poor niece ſo, that ſhe can hardly, I ſee, ſupport herſelf.— Go, my dear, retire, and endeavour to recruit your ſpirits; for I ſee you have occaſion.' At which words, Sophia, who never received a more welcome command, haſtily withdrew.

'To be ſure, ſiſter,' cries the 'ſquire, 'you are mad, when I have brought Mr Blifil here to court her, to force her away.'

'Sure, brother,' ſays ſhe, 'you are worſe than
'mad, when you know in what ſituation affairs are
'to——I am ſure, I aſk Mr Blifil pardon, but he
'knows very well to whom to impute ſo diſagreeable
'a reception. For my own part, I am ſure, I ſhall
'always be very glad to ſee Mr Blifil; but his own
'good ſenſe would not have ſuffered him to pro-
'ceed ſo abruptly, had you not compelled him to it.'

Blifil bowed and ſtammered, and looked like a
fool; but Weſtern, without giving him time to form
a ſpeech for the purpoſe, anſwered, 'Well, well,
'I am to blame if you will, I always am, certainly;
'but come, let the girl be fetched back again, or let
'Mr Blifil go to her——He's come up on purpoſe,
'and there is no time to be loſt.'

'Brother,' cries Mrs Weſtern, 'Mr Blifil, I am
'confident, underſtands himſelf better than to think
'of ſeeing my niece any more this morning after
'what hath happened. Women are of a nice conſ-
'texture; and our ſpirits, when diſordered, are not
'to be recompoſed in a moment. Had you ſuffered
'Mr Blifil to have ſent his compliments to my niece,
'and to have deſired the favour of waiting on her in
'the afternoon, I ſhould poſſibly have prevailed on
'her to have ſeen him; but now I deſpair of bring-
'ing about any ſuch matter.'

'I am very ſorry, Madam,' cried Blifil, 'that
'Mr Weſtern's extraordinary kindneſs to me, which
'I can never enough acknowledge, ſhould have occa-
'ſioned—' 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, interrupting him,
'you need make no apologies, we all know my bro-
'ther ſo well.'

'I don't care what any body knows of me,' an-
ſwered the 'ſquire:——'but when muſt he come to
'ſee her? for conſider, I tell you, he is come up on
'purpoſe, and ſo is Allworthy.' 'Brother,' ſaid ſhe,
'whatever meſſage Mr Blifil thinks proper to ſend
'to my niece, ſhall be delivered to her; and I ſup-
'poſe, ſhe will want no inſtructions to make a proper
'anſwer. I am convinced ſhe will not refuſe to ſee
'Mr Blifil at a proper time.'——'The devil

'wou

'won't,' anſwered the 'ſquire.—'Odſbub!——Don't 'we know ——I ſay nothing, but ſome volk are 'wiſer than all the world.——If I might have had 'my will, ſhe had not run away before: and now 'I expect to hear every moment ſhe is gone again. 'For as great a fool as ſome volk think me, I know 'very well ſhe hates'——'No matter, brother,' replied Mrs Weſtern, 'I will not hear my niece abu'ſed. It is a reflection on my family. She is an 'honour to it; and ſhe will be an honour to it, I 'promiſe you. I will pawn my whole reputation in 'the world on her conduct.——I ſhall be glad to ſee 'you, brother, in the afternoon; for I have ſome'what of importance to mention to you.——At pre'ſent, Mr Blifil, as well as you, muſt excuſe me; 'for I am in haſte to dreſs.'——'Well but,' ſaid the 'ſquire, 'do appoint a time.'——'Indeed,' ſaid ſhe, 'I can appoint no time.——I tell you, I will ſee 'you in the afternoon.'——'What the devil would 'you have me do?' cries the 'ſquire, turning to Bli'fil, 'I can no more turn her, than a beagle can turn 'an old hare. Perhaps, ſhe will be in a better hu'mour in the afternoon.'——'I am condemned, I 'ſee, Sir, to misfortune,' anſwered Blifil; 'but I 'ſhall always own my obligations to you.'—He then took a ceremonious leave of Mrs Weſtern, who was altogether as ceremonious on her part; and then they departed, the 'ſquire muttering to himſelf with an oath, that Blifil ſhould ſee his daughter in the afternoon.

If Mr Weſtern was little pleaſed with this interview, Blifil was leſs. As to the former, he imputed the whole behaviour of his ſiſter to her humour only, and to her diſſatisfaction at the omiſſion of ceremony in the viſit; but Blifil ſaw a little deeper into things. He ſuſpected ſomewhat of more conſequence, from two or three words which dropt from the lady; and, to ſay the truth, he ſuſpected right, as will appear when I have unfolded the ſeveral matters which will be contained in the following chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

Schemes of lady Bellaſton for the ruin of Jones.

LOVE had taken too deep a root in the mind lord Fellamar to be plucked up by the r hands of Mr Weſtern. In the heat of reſentment had indeed given a commiſſion to captain Eggla which the captain had far exceeded in the executi nor had it been executed at all, had his lordſhip b able to find the captain after he had ſeen lady Bel ſton, which was in the afternoon of the day after had received the affront; but ſo induſtrious was captain in the diſcharge of his duty, that having ter long enquiry found out the 'ſquire's lodgings v late in the evening, he ſat up all night at a tav that he might not miſs the 'ſquire in the morni and by that means miſſed the revocation which lord had ſent to his lodgings.

In the afternoon then next after the intended r of Sophia, his lordſhip, as we have ſaid, made a v to lady Bellaſton, who laid open ſo much of the c racter of the 'ſquire, that his lordſhip plainly ſaw abſurdity he had been guilty of in taking any offe at his words, eſpecially as he had thoſe honour deſigns on his daughter. He then unboſomed the v lence of his paſſion to lady Bellaſton, who read undertook the cauſe, and encouraged him with c tain aſſurance of a moſt favourable reception from the elders of the family, and from the father him when he ſhould be ſober, and ſhould be made quainted with the nature of the offer made to daughter. The only danger, ſhe ſaid, lay in the low ſhe had formerly mentioned, who, though a b gar and a vagabond, had by ſome means or other, knew not what, procured himſelf tolerable clo and paſt for a gentleman. 'Now,' ſays ſhe, ' ' have, for the ſake of my couſin, made it my b ' neſs to enquire after this fellow, I have luc ' found out his lodgings;' with which ſhe then quainted his lordſhip. 'I am thinking, my lo added ſhe, ' (for this fellow is too mean for your

'ſonal reſentment) whether it would not be poſſible 'for your lordſhip to contrive ſome method of having 'him preſſed and ſent on board a ſhip. Neither law 'nor conſcience forbid this project; for the fellow, 'I promiſe you, however, well dreſt, is but a vaga-'bond, and as proper as any fellow in the ſtreets to 'be preſſed into the ſervice; and as for the conſcien-'tious part, ſurely the preſervation of a young lady 'from ſuch ruin is a moſt meritorious act; nay, with 'regard to the fellow himſelf, unleſs he could ſuc-'ceed (which Heaven forbid) with my couſin, it may 'probably be the means of preſerving him from the 'gallows, and perhaps may make his fortune in an 'honeſt way.'

Lord Fellamar very heartily thanked her ladyſhip, for the part which ſhe was pleaſed to take in the affair, upon the ſucceſs of which his whole future happineſs entirely depended. He ſaid, he ſaw at preſent no objection to the preſſing ſcheme, and would conſider of putting it in execution. He then moſt earneſtly recommended to her ladyſhip, to do him the honour of immediately mentioning his propoſals to the family; to whom, he ſaid, he offered a *Carte Blanche*, and would ſettle his fortune in almoſt any manner they ſhould require. And after uttering many ecſtacies and raptures concerning Sophia, he took his leave and departed, but not before he had received the ſtrongeſt charge to beware of Jones, and to loſe no time in ſecuring his perſon where he ſhould no longer be in a capacity of making any attempts to the ruin of the young lady.

The moment Mrs Weſtern was arrived at her lodgings, a card was diſpatched with her compliments to lady Bellaſton; who no ſooner received it than, with the impatience of a lover, ſhe flew to her couſin, rejoiced at this fair opportunity, which beyond her hopes offered itſelf: for ſhe was much better pleaſed with the proſpect of making the propoſals to a woman of ſenſe, and who knew the world, than to a gentleman whom ſhe honoured with the appellation of Hottentot; though indeed from him ſhe apprehended no danger of a refuſal.

The two ladies being met, after very ſhort previ ceremonials, fell to buſineſs, which was indeed moſt as ſoon concluded as begun; for Mrs Weſt no ſooner heard the name of lord Fellamar than checks glowed with pleaſure; but when ſhe was quainted with the eagerneſs of his paſſion, the neſtneſs of his propoſals, and the generoſity of offer, ſhe delared her full ſatisfaction in the moſt plicit terms.

In the progreſs of their converſation, their diſcou turned to Jones, and both couſin very pathetica lamented the unfortunate attachment which both greed Sophia had to that young fellow; and Weſtern entirely attributed it to the folly of her ther's management. She concluded however at l with declaring her confidence in the good underſta ing of her niece, who, though ſhe would not give her affection in favour of Blifil, will, I doubt n ſays ſhe, ſoon be prevailed upon to ſacrifice a fi inclination to the addreſſes of a fine gentleman, w brings her both a title and a large eſtate: 'For 'deed,' added ſhe, 'I muſt do Sophy the juſtice 'confeſs, this Blifil is but a hideous kind of fell 'as you know, Bellaſton, all country gentlemen a 'and hath nothing but his fortune to recomm 'him.'

'Nay,' ſaid lady Bellaſton, 'I don't then ſo m 'wonder at my couſin; for I promiſe you this J 'is a very agreeable fellow, and hath one vi 'which the men ſay is a great recommendation 'us. What do you think, Mrs Weſtern—— I 'certainly make you laugh; nay, I can hardly 'you myſelf for laughing——Will you believe t 'the fellow hath had the aſſuranee to make love 'me? But if you ſhould be inclined to diſbelieve 'here is evidence enough, his own hand-writ ng 'aſſure you.' She then delivered her couſin the ter with the propoſals of marriage, which if the r er hath a deſire to ſee, he will find already on rec in the XVth book of this hiſtory.

'Upon my word, I am aſtoniſhed,' ſaid Mrs W tern. 'this is indeed a maſter-piece of aſſur

prevai' With your leave, I may poſſibly make ſome uſe of deed i' this letter.' 'You have my full liberty,' cries lady Weſte Bellaſton, 'to apply it to what purpoſe you pleaſe. than h' However, I would not have it ſhewn to any but was a' Miſs Weſtern, nor to her unleſs you find occaſion.' the e' Well, and how did you uſe the fellow?' returned ty of Mrs Weſtern. 'Not as a huſband,' ſaid the lady; moſt' I am not married, I promiſe you, my dear You ' know, Mrs Weſtern, I have tried the comfort once diſcou' already; and once I think is enough for any rea- thetica' ſonable woman.'

h bot' This letter lady Bellaſton thought would certainly and turn the balance againſt Jones in the mind of Sophia, t her h' and ſhe was emboldened to give it up, partly by her er at l' hopes of having him inſtantly diſpatched out of the nderſta' way, and partly by having ſecured the evidence of ot give' honour, who, upon ſounding her, the ſaw ſufficient loubt n' reaſon to imagine, was prepared to teſtify whatever e a ſim' he pleaſed.

man, w' But perhaps the reader may wonder why lady Bel- 'For' laſton, who in her heart hated Sophia, ſhould be ſo juſtice' deſirous of promoting a match, which was ſo much of tell' to the intereſt of the young lady. Now, I would lemen a' deſire ſuch readers to look carefully into human na- ecomm' ture, page almoſt the laſt, and there he will find, in ' ſcarce legible characters, that women, notwithſtand- n ſo m' ing the prepoſterous behaviour of mothers, aunts, &c. this J' in matrimonial matters, do in reality think it ſo one vi' great a misfortune to have their inclinations in love ndation' thwarted, that they imagine they ought never to —— I ſ' carry enmity higher than upon theſe diſappointments; hardly' again, he will find it written much about the ſame believe t' place, that a woman who hath once been pleaſed ake love' with the poſſeſſion of a man, will go above half way diſbelieve' to the devil, to prevent any other woman from en- l-writ' ng' joying the ſame.

ſin the' If he will not be contented with theſe reaſons, I if the re' freely confeſs I ſee no other motive to the actions of y on rec' that lady, unleſs we will conceive ſhe was bribed by ' lord Fellamar, which for my own part I ſee no cauſe d Mrs W' to ſuſpect.

f aſſur'

Now

Now this was the affair which Mrs Weſtern w preparing to introduce to Sophia, by ſome prefat diſcourſe on the folly of love, and on the wiſdom legal proſtitution for hire, when her brother and h broke abruptly in upon her; and hence aroſe all t coldneſs in her behaviour to Blifil, which though 'ſquire, as was uſual with him, imputed to a wr cauſe, infuſed into Blifil himſelf (he being a m more cunning man) a ſuſpicion of the real truth.

CHAP. IX.

In which Jones pays a viſit to Mrs Fitzpatrick.

THE reader may now perhaps be pleaſed to turn with me to Mr Jones, who at the appo ed hour attended on Mrs Fitzpatrick: but before relate the converſation which now paſt, it may proper, according to our method, to return a l back, and to account for ſo great an alteration behaviour in this lady, that from changing her l ging principally to avoid Mr Jones, ſhe had induſtriouſly, as hath been ſeen, ſought this in view.

And here we ſhall need only to reſort to what h pened the preceding day, when hearing from Bellaſton, that Mr Weſtern was arrived in town, went to pay her duty to him, at his lodgings at P cadilly, where ſhe was received with many ſcu compellations too coarſe to be repeated, and was threatened to be kicked out of doors. From he an old ſervant of her aunt Weſtern, with whom was well acquainted, conducted her to the lodgi of that lady, who treated her not more kindly, more politely: or, to ſay the truth, with rudene another way. In ſhort, ſhe returned from both, pla convinced not only that her ſcheme of reconcilia had proved abortive, but that ſhe muſt for ever over all thoughts of bringing it about by any m whatever. From this moment deſire of revenge filled her mind; and in this temper meeting Jone the play, an opportunity ſeemed to her to occur effecting this purpoſe.

The reader muſt remember, that he was acquainted by Mrs Fitzpatrick, in the account ſhe gave of her own ſtory, with the fondneſs Mrs Weſtern had formerly ſhewn for Mr Fitzpatrick at Bath, from the diſappointment of which, Mrs Fitzpatrick derived the great bitterneſs her aunt had expreſſed toward her. She had therefore no doubt but that the good lady would as eaſily liſten to the addreſſes of Mr Jones, as ſhe had before done to the other; for the ſuperiority of charms was clearly on the ſide of Mr Jones; and the advance which her aunt had ſince made in age, ſhe concluded, (how juſtly I will not ſay) was an argument rather in favour of her project than againſt it.

Therefore, when Jones attended, after a previous declaration of her deſire of ſerving him, ariſing, as ſhe ſaid, from a firm aſſurance how much ſhe ſhould by ſo doing oblige Sophia; and after ſome excuſes for her former diſappointment, and after acquainting Mr Jones in whoſe cuſtody his miſtreſs was, of which ſhe thought him ignorant; ſhe very explicitly mentioned her ſcheme to him, and adviſed him to make ſham addreſſes to the elder lady, in order to procure an eaſy acceſs to the younger, informing him at the ſame time of the ſucceſs which Mr Fitzpatrick had formerly owed to the very ſame ſtratagem.

Mr Jones expreſſed great gratitude to the lady for her kind intentions towards him which ſhe had expreſſed, and indeed teſtified, by this propoſal; but beſides intimating ſome diffidence of ſucceſs from the lady's knowledge of his love to her niece, which had not been her caſe in regard to Mr Fitzpatrick, he ſaid, he was afraid Miſs Weſtern would never agree to an impoſition of this kind, as well from her utter deteſtation of all fallacy, as from her avowed duty to her aunt.

Mrs Fitzpatrick was a little nettled at this; and indeed, if it may not be called a lapſe of the tongue, it was a ſmall deviation from politeneſs in Jones, and to which he ſcarce would have fallen, had not the delight he felt in praiſing Sophia, hurried him out of all

all reflection; for this commendation of one cousin
more than a tacit rebuke on the other.

'Indeed, Sir,' answered the lady, with some warm
'I cannot think there is any thing easier than to ch
'an old woman with a profession of love, when
'complexion is amorous; and though she is my a
'I must say there never was a more liquorish one
'her ladyship. Can't you pretend that the despa
'possessing her niece, from her being promised to
'fil, has made you turn your thoughts towards h
'As to my cousin Sophia, I can't imagine her to
'such a simpleton as to have the least scruple on
'an account, or to conceive any harm in punishing
'of these hags for the many mischiefs they bring u
'families, by their tragi-comic passions; for whic
'think it is pity they are not punishable by law
'had no such scruple myself; and yet I hope my c
'sin Sophia will not think it an affront when I say
'cannot detest every real species of falsehood m
'than her cousin Fitzpatrick. To my aunt indee
'pretend no duty, nor doth she deserve any. H
'ever, Sir, I have given you my advice, and if
'decline pursuing it, I shall have the less opinion
'your understanding——that's all.'

Jones now clearly saw the error he had commit
and exerted his utmost power to rectify it; but he
ly faultered and stuttered into nonsense and con
diction. To say the truth, it is often safer to abide
the consequences of the first blunder, than to end
vour to rectify it; for by such endeavours we gener
plunge deeper instead of extricating ourselves; a
few persons will on such occasions have the good-
ture which Mrs Fitzpatrick displayed to Jones, by
ing, with a smile, 'You need attempt no more excu
'for I can easily forgive a real lover, whatever is
'effect of fondness for his mistress.'

She then renewed her proposal, and very fervent
recommended it, omitting no argument which
invention could suggest on the subject; for the
so violently incensed against her aunt, that scarce
thing was capable of affording her equal plea

with expoſing her; and, like a true woman, ſhe would ve no difficulties in the xecution of a favourite heme.

Jones however perſiſted in declining the undertak- which had not indeed the leaſt probability of ceſs. He eaſily perceived the motives which in- ced Mrs Fitzpatrick to be ſo eager in preſſing her vice. He ſaid he would not deny the tender and ſionate regard he had for Sophia; but was ſo con- ous of the inequality of their ſituations, that he uld never flatter himſelf ſo far as to hope, that ſo ine a young lady would condeſcend to think on ſo worthy a man; nay, he proteſted he could ſcarce ng himſelf to think ſhe ſhould. He concluded with profeſſion of generous ſentiments, which we have at preſent leiſure to inſert.

There are ſome fine women (for I dare not here k in too general terms) with whom ſelf is ſo pre- inant, that they never detach it from any ſubject; s vanity is with them a ruling principle, they apt to lay hold of whatever praiſe they meet with; though the property of others, convey it to their uſe. In the company of theſe ladies, it is im- ible to ſay any thing handſome of another wo- which they will not apply to themſelves: nay, often improve the praiſe they ſeize; as for in- , if her beauty, her wit, her gentility, her good- ur, deſerve ſo much commendation, what do I ve who poſſeſs thoſe qualities in ſo much more nt a degree?

To theſe ladies a man often recommends himſelf le he is commending another woman; and while is expreſſing ardour and generous ſentiments for miſtreſs, they are conſidering what a charming this man would make to them, who can feel all tenderneſs for an inferior degree of merit. Of ſtrange as it may ſeem, I have ſeen many in- s beſides Mrs Fitzpatrick, to whom all this happened, and who now began to feel a ſome- for Mr Jones, the ſymptoms of which ſhe much underſtood than poor Sophia had formerly

To

To ſay the truth, perfect beauty in both ſexes is a more irreſiſtible object than it is generally thought; for notwithſtanding ſome of us are contented with more homely lots, and learn by rote (as children are to repeat what gives them no idea) to deſpiſe outſide, and to value more ſolid charms; yet I have always obſerved at the approach of conſummate beauty, that theſe more ſolid charms only ſhine with that kind of luſtre which the ſtars have after the riſing of the ſun.

When Jones had finiſhed his exclamations, many of which would have become the mouth of Oroondates himſelf, Mrs Fitzpatrick heaved a deep ſigh, and taking her eyes off from Jones, on whom they had been ſome time fixed, and dropping them on the ground ſhe cried, 'Indeed, Mr Jones, I pity you; but it is 'the curſe of ſuch tenderneſs to be thrown away on 'thoſe who are inſenſible of it. I know my own 'better than you, Mr Jones, and I muſt ſay, a 'woman who makes no return to ſuch a paſſion, and 'ſuch a perſon, is unworthy of both.'

'Sure, Madam,' ſays Jones, 'you can't mean'— 'Mean!' cries Mrs Fitzpatrick, 'I know not what 'I mean; there is ſomething, I think, in true tender'neſs bewitching; few women ever meet with it in 'men, and fewer ſtill know how to value it when they 'do. I never heard ſuch truly noble ſentiments, and 'I can't tell how it is, but you force one to believe 'you. Sure ſhe muſt be the moſt contemptible of 'women who can overlook ſuch merit.'

The manner and look with which all this was ſpoke infuſed a ſuſpicion into Jones, which we don't care to convey in direct words to the reader. Inſtead of making any anſwer, he ſaid, 'I am afraid, Madam, 'I have made too tireſome a viſit,' and offered to take his leave.

'Not at all, Sir,' anſwered Mrs Fitzpatrick.— 'Indeed I pity you, Mr Jones; indeed I do: but 'you are going, conſider of the ſcheme I have men'tioned. I am convinced you will approve it, and 'let me ſee you again as ſoon as you can.—I

'morrow morning if you will, or at leaſt ſome time 'to morrow. I ſhall be athome all day.'

Jones then, after many expreſſions of thanks, very reſpectfully retired; nor could Mrs Fitzpatrick forbear making him a preſent of a look at parting, by which if he had underſtood nothing, he muſt have had no underſtanding in the language of the eyes. In reality it confirmed his reſolution of returning to her no more; for faulty as he hath hitherto appeared in this hiſtory, his whole thoughts were now ſo confined to his Sophia, that I believe no woman upon earth could have now drawn him into an act of inconſtancy.

Fortune, however, who was not his friend, reſolved, as he intended to give her no ſecond opportunity, to make the beſt of this; and accordingly produced the tragical incident which we are now in ſorrowful notes to record.

CHAP. X.

The conſequence of the preceding viſit.

MR Fitzpatrick having received the letter before mentioned, from Mrs Weſtern, and being by that means acquainted with the place to which his wife was retired, returned directly to Bath, and thence the day after ſet forward to London.

The reader hath been already often informed of the jealous temper of this gentleman. He may likewiſe be pleaſed to remember the ſuſpicion which he had conceived of Jones at Upton, upon his finding him in the room with Mrs Waters; and though ſufficient reaſons had afterwards appeared entirely to clear up that ſuſpicion, yet now the reading ſo handſome a character of Mr Jones from his wife, cauſed him to reflect, that ſhe likewiſe was in the inn at the ſame time, and jumbled together ſuch a confuſion of circumſtances in a head which was naturally none of the cleareſt, that the whole produced that green-eyed monſter mentioned by Shakeſpear in his tragedy of Othello.

And now, as he was inquiring in the ſtreet after his wife, and had juſt received directions to the door, unfortunately Mr Jones was iſſuing from it.

Fitzpatrick did not yet recollect the face of Jones; however, ſeeing a young well-dreſſed fellow coming from his wife, he made directly up to him, and asked him what he had been doing in that houſe; 'for I am ſure,' ſaid he, 'you muſt have been in it, as I ſaw you come out of it.'

Jones anſwered very modeſtly, 'That he had been 'viſiting a lady there.' To which Fitzpatrick replied, 'What buſineſs have you with the lady?' Upon which Jones, who now perfectly remembered the voice, features, and indeed coat of the gentleman, cried out —'Ha, my good friend! give me your hand; I hope 'there is no ill blood remaining between us, upon a 'ſmall miſtake which happened ſo long ago.'

'Upon my ſoul, Sir,' ſaid Fitzpatrick, 'I don't 'know your name, nor your face' 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid Jones, 'neither have I the pleaſure of knowing 'your name, but your face I very well remember to 'have ſeen before at Upton, where a fooliſh quarrel 'happened between us, which, if it is not made up 'yet, we will now make up over a bottle.'

'At Upton!' cried the other.——'Ha! upon my 'ſoul I believe your name is Jones.' 'Indeed,' anſwered he, 'it is.'——'O, upon my ſoul,' cries Fitzpatrick, 'you are the very man I wanted to meet '—Upon my ſoul I will drink a bottle with you preſently; but firſt I will give you a great knock over 'the pate. There is for you, you raſcal Upon my 'ſoul, if you do not give me ſatisfaction for that 'blow, I will give you another.' And then drawing his ſword, put himſelf in a poſture of defence, which was the only ſcience he underſtood

Jones was a little ſtaggered by the blow, which came ſomewhat unexpectedly; but preſently recovering himſelf he alſo drew, and though he underſtood no thing of fencing, preſſed on ſo boldly upon Fitzpatrick that he beat down his guard and ſheathed one half of his ſword in the body of the ſaid gentleman, who had no ſooner received it, than he ſtept backwards, dropt

the point of his ſword, and leaning upon it, cried, 'I have ſatisfaction enough: I am a dead man.'

'I hope not,' cries Jones, 'but whatever be the 'conſequence, you muſt be ſenſible you have drawn 'it upon yourſelf.' At this inſtant a number of fellows ruſhed in and ſeized Jones, who told them, he ſhould make no reſiſtance, and begged ſome of them at leaſt would take care of the wounded gentleman.

'Ay,' cries one of the fellows, 'the wounded 'gentleman will be taken care enough of; for I ſuppoſe he hath not many hours to live. As for you, 'Sir, you have a moment at leaſt good yet.' 'D—n 'me, Jack,' ſaid another, 'he hath prevented his 'voyage; he's bound to another port now;' and many other ſuch jeſts was our poor Jones made the ſubject of, by theſe fellows, who were indeed the gang employed by lord Fellamar, and had dogged him into the houſe of Mrs Fitzpatrick, waiting for him at the corner of the ſtreet when this unfortunate accident happened.

The officer who commanded this gang very wiſely concluded, that his buſineſs was now to deliver his priſoner into the hands of the civil magiſtrate. He ordered him therefore to be carried to a public houſe, where having ſent for a conſtable, he delivered him to his cuſtody.

The conſtable ſeeing Mr Jones very well dreſſed, and hearing that the accident had happened in a duel, treated his priſoner with great civility, and, at his requeſt, diſpatched a meſſenger to enquire after the wounded gentleman, who was now at a tavern under the ſurgeon's hands. The report brought back was, that the wound was certainly mortal, and there were no hopes of life. Upon which the conſtable informed Jones, that he muſt go before a juſtice. He anſwered, 'wherever you pleaſe: I am indifferent as to what 'happens to me; for though I am convinced I am 'not guilty of murder in the eye of the law, yet the 'weight of blood I find intolerable upon my mind.'

Jones was now conducted before the juſtice, where the ſurgeon who dreſſed Mr Fitzpatrick appeared, and depoſed, that he believed the wound to be mor-

tal; upon which the priſoner was committed to t
Gate-houſe. It was very late at night, ſo that Je
would not ſend for Partridge till the next morni
and as he never ſhut his eyes till ſeven, ſo it was n
twelve before the poor fellow, who was greatly frig
tned at not hearing from his maſter ſo long, recei
a meſſage which almoſt deprived him of his bei
when he heard it.

He went to the Gate-houſe with trembling kn
and a beating heart, and was no ſooner arrived in t
preſence of Jones, than he lamented the misfortu
that had befallen him, with many tears, looking
the while frequently about him in great terror; for
the news now arrived that Mr Fitzpatrick was de
the poor fellow apprehended every minute that h
ghoſt would enter the room. At laſt he delivered hi
a letter, which he had like to have forgot, and whi
came from Sophia by the hands of Black George.

Jones preſently diſpatched every one out of th
room, and having eagerly broke open the letter, re
as follows:

"You owe the hearing from me again to an acc
"dent which I own ſurpriſes me. My aunt hath ju
"now ſhewn me a letter from you to lady Bellaſto
"which contains a propoſal of marriage. I am co
"vinced it is your own hand; and what more ſurpri
"me is, that it is dated at the very time when yo
"would have me imagine you was under ſuch co
"cern on my account—I leave you to comment o
"this fact. All I deſire is, that your name ma
"never more be mentioned to

"S. W

Of the preſent ſituation of Mr Jones's mind, an
of the pangs with which he was now tormented, w
cannot give the reader a better idea, than by ſayin
his miſery was ſuch, that even Thwackum would a
moſt have pitied him. But bad as it is, we ſhall
preſent leave him in it, as his good genius (if he re
ly had any) ſeems to have done. And here we p
an end to the ſixteenth book of our hiſtory.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XVII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

Containing a portion of introductory writing.

WHEN a comic writer hath made his principal characters as happy as he can; or when a tragic writer hath brought them to the higheſt pitch of human miſery, they both conclude their buſineſs to be done, and that their work is come to a period.

Had we been of the tragic complexion, the reader muſt now allow we were very nearly arrived at this period, ſince it would be difficult for the devil or any of his repreſentatives on earth, to have contrived much greater torments for poor Jones, than thoſe in which we left him in the laſt chapter; and as for Sophia, a good-natured woman would hardly wiſh more uneaſineſs to a rival, than what ſhe muſt at preſent be ſuppoſed to feel. What then remains to complete the tragedy but a murder or two, and a few moral ſentences?

But to bring our favourites out of their preſent anguiſh and diſtreſs, and to land them at laſt on the

tal; upon which the priſoner was committed to th
Gate-houſe. It was very late at night, ſo that Jo
would not ſend for Partridge till the next morni
and as he never ſhut his eyes till ſeven, ſo it was n
twelve before the poor fellow, who was greatly fri
ened at not hearing from his maſter ſo long, recei
a meſſage which almoſt deprived him of his bei
when he heard it.

He went to the Gate-houſe with trembling kn
and a beating heart, and was no ſooner arrived in t
preſence of Jones, than he lamented the misfortu
that had befallen him, with many tears, looking
the while frequently about him in great terror; for
the news now arrived that Mr Fitzpatrick was de
the poor fellow apprehended every minute that h
ghoſt would enter the room. At laſt he delivered hi
a letter, which he had like to have forgot, and wh
came from Sophia by the hands of Black George.

Jones preſently diſpatched every one out of th
room, and having eagerly broke open the letter, re
as follows:

"You owe the hearing from me again to an acc
"dent which I own ſurpriſes me. My aunt hath ju
"now ſhewn me a letter from you to lady Bellaſto
"which contains a propoſal of marriage. I am co
"vinced it is your own hand; and what more ſurpri
"me is, that it is dated at the very time when yo
"would have me imagine you was under ſuch co
"cern on my account.—I leave you to comment o
"this fact. All I deſire is, that your name ma
"never more be mentioned to

"S. W.

Of the preſent ſituation of Mr Jones's mind, an
of the pangs with which he was now tormented, w
cannot give the reader a better idea, than by ſayi
his miſery was ſuch, that even Thwackum would a
moſt have pitied him. But bad as it is, we ſhall
preſent leave him in it, as his good genius (if he re
ly had any) ſeems to have done. And here we p
an end to the ſixteenth book of our hiſtory.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XVII.

Containing three days.

CHAP. I.

Containing a portion of introductory writing.

WHEN a comic writer hath made his principal characters as happy as he can; or when a tragic writer hath brought them to the higheſt pitch of human miſery, they both conclude their buſineſs to be done, and that their work is come to a period.

Had we been of the tragic complexion, the reader muſt now allow we were very nearly arrived at this period, ſince it would be difficult for the devil or any of his repreſentatives on earth, to have contrived much greater torments for poor Jones, than thoſe in which we left him in the laſt chapter; and as for Sophia, a good-natured woman would hardly with more uneaſineſs to a rival, than what ſhe muſt at preſent be ſuppoſed to feel. What then remains to complete the tragedy but a murder or two, and a few moral ſentences?

But to bring our favourites out of their preſent anguiſh and diſtreſs, and to land them at laſt on the

ſhore of happineſs, ſeems a much harder taſk; a t
indeed ſo hard that we do not undertake to execut
In regard to Sophia, it is more than probable, t
we ſhall ſomewhere or other provide a good huſb
for her in the end, either Blifil, or my lord, or ſom
body elſe; but as to poor Jones, ſuch are the calam
ties in which he is at preſent involved, owing to
imprudence, by which, if a man doth not become
felon to the world, he is at leaſt a *Felo de ſe*; ſo de
tute is he now of friends, and ſo perſecuted by e
mies, that we almoſt deſpair of bringing him to
good; and if our reader delights in ſeeing executi
I think he ought not to loſe any time in taking a
row at Tyburn.

This I faithfully promiſe, that notwithſtanding
affection which we may be ſuppoſed to have for
rogue, whom we have unfortunately made our he
we will lend him none of that ſupernatural aſſiſta
with which we are entruſted, upon condition that
uſe it only on very important occaſions. If he d
not therefore find ſome natural means of fairly
tricating himſelf from all his diſtreſſes, we will do
violence to the truth and dignity of hiſtory for
ſake; for we had rather relate that he was hanged
Tyburn (which may very probably be the caſe) t
forfeit our integrity, or ſhock the faith of our read

In this the ancients had a great advantage over
moderns. Their mythology, which was at that t
more firmly believed by the vulgar than any relig
is at preſent, gave them always an opportunity of
livering a favourite hero. Their deities were alw
ready at the writer's elbow, to execute any of his p
poſes; and the more extraordinary the invention w
the greater was the ſurpriſe and delight of the cre
lous reader. Thoſe writers could with greater
have conveyed a friend from one country to anot
nay, from one world to another, and have bro
him back again, than a poor circumſcribed mo
can deliver him from a gaol.

The Arabians and Perſians had an equal ad
tage in writing their tales from the Genii and Fai
w

which they believe in as an article of their faith, upon the authority of the Koran itſelf. But we have none of theſe helps. To natural means alone are we confined; let us try therefore what by theſe means may be done for poor Jones; though, to confeſs the truth, ſomething whiſpers me in the ear, that he doth not yet know the worſt of his fortune; and that a more ſhocking piece of news than any he hath yet heard, remains for him in the unopened leaves of fate.

CHAP. II.

The generous and grateful behaviour of Mrs Miller.

MR ALLWORTHY and Mrs Miller were juſt ſat down to breakfaſt, when Bliſil, who had gone out very early that morning, returned to make one of the company.

He had not been long ſeated before he began as follows: 'Good Lord! my dear uncle, what do you think hath happened? I vow I am afraid of telling it you, for fear of ſhocking you with the remembrance of ever having ſhewn any kindneſs to ſuch a villain.' 'What is the matter, child?' ſaid the uncle. 'I fear I have ſhewn kindneſs in my life to the unworthy more than once. But charity doth not adopt the vices of its objects.' 'O, Sir,' returned Bliſil, 'it is not without the ſecret direction of Providence that you mention the word adoption. Your adopted ſon, Sir, that Jones, that wretch whom you nouriſhed in your boſom, hath proved one of the greateſt villains upon earth.' 'By all that's ſacred 'tis falſe,' cries Mrs Miller. 'Mr Jones is no villain. He is one of the worthieſt creatures breathing; and if any other perſon had called him villain, I would have thrown all this boiling water in his face.' Mr Allworthy looked very much amazed at this behaviour. But ſhe did not give him leave to ſpeak, before turning to him, ſhe cried, 'I hope you will not be angry with me; I ſhould not offend you, Sir, for the world: but indeed I could not bear to hear him called ſo.'

'I muſt

'I muſt own, Madam,' ſaid Allworthy very grave
'I am a little ſurprized to hear you ſo warmly
'ſend a fellow you do not know.' 'O I do
'him, Mr Allworthy,' ſaid ſhe, 'indeed I
'ſhould be the moſt ungrateful of all wretches
'denied it. O he hath preſerved me and my
'family; we have all reaſon to bleſs him while
'live.——And I pray Heaven to bleſs him, and
'the hearts of his malicious enemies. I know, I
'ſee he hath ſuch.' 'You ſurprize me, Mada
'ſtill more,' ſaid Allworthy; 'ſure you muſt
'ſome other. It is impoſſible you ſhould have
'ſuch obligations to the man my nephew mentions
'Too ſurely,' anſwered ſhe, 'I have obligations
'him of the greateſt and tendereſt kind. He
'been the preſerver of me and mine.——Believe
'Sir, he hath been abuſed, groſsly abuſed to you
'I know he hath, or you, whom I know to be
'goodneſs and honour, would not, after the
'kind and tender things I have heard you ſay
'poor helpleſs child, have ſo diſdainfully called
'fellow. Indeed, my beſt of friends, he deſerves
'kinder appellation from you, had you heard
'good, the kind, the grateful things which I
'heard him utter of you. He never mentions
'name but with a ſort of adoration. In this
'room I have ſeen him on his knees, imploring
'the bleſſings of heaven upon your head. I do
'love that child there better than he loves you.'

'I ſee, Sir, now,' ſaid Bliſil, with one of
grinning ſneers with which the devil marks his
beloved, 'Mrs Miller really doth know him.
'ſuppoſe you will find ſhe is not the only one
'your acquaintance to whom he hath expoſed
'As for my character, I perceive by ſome hints
'hath thrown out, he hath been very free with
'but I forgive him.' 'And the Lord forgive
'Sir,' ſays Mrs Miller; 'we have all ſins enough
'ſtand in need of his forgiveneſs.'

'Upon my word, Mrs Miller,' ſaid Allworthy,
'do not take this behaviour of yours to my
'kind

'kindly; and I do aſſure you, as any reflections which 'you caſt upon him muſt come only from that wicked-'eſt of men, they would only ſerve, if that were poſ-'ſible, to heighten my reſentment againſt him: for I 'muſt tell you, Mrs Miller, the young man who now 'ſtands before you, hath ever been the warmeſt ad-'vocate for the ungrateful wretch whoſe cauſe you eſpouſe. This, I think, when you hear it from my 'own mouth, will make you wonder at ſo much baſe-'neſs and ingratitude.'

'You are deceived, Sir,' anſwered Mrs Miller, 'if 'they were the laſt words which were to iſſue from 'my lips, I would ſay you were deceived; and I once 'more repeat it, the Lord forgive thoſe who have de-'ceived you. I do not pretend to ſay the young man 'is without faults, but they are the faults of wild-'neſs and of youth; faults which he may, nay, which 'I am certain he will relinquiſh; and if he ſhould not, 'they are vaſtly overbalanced by one of the moſt hu-'mane, tender, honeſt hearts that ever man was bleſ-'ſed with.'

'Indeed, Mrs Miller,' ſaid Allworthy, 'had this 'been related of you, I ſhould not have believed it.'

'Indeed, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'you will believe every 'thing I have ſaid, I am ſure you will; and when 'you have heard the ſtory which I ſhall tell you, (for 'I will tell you all) you will be ſo far from being 'offended, that you will own (I know your juſtice ſo 'well) that I muſt have been the moſt deſpicable and 'moſt ungrateful of wretches, if I had acted any o-'ther part than I have.'

'Well, Madam,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I ſhall be very 'glad to hear any good excuſe for a behaviour which 'muſt confeſs, I think, wants an excuſe. And now, 'Madam, will you be pleaſed to let my nephew pro-'ceed in his ſtory without interruption. He would 'not have introduced a matter of ſlight conſequence 'with ſuch a preface. Perhaps even this ſtory will 'cure you of your miſtake.'

Mrs Miller gave tokens of ſubmiſſion, and then Mr Blifil began thus, 'I am ſure, Sir, if you don't 'think proper to reſent the ill uſage of Mrs Miller,

'I ſhall

'I shall easily forgive what affects me only. I th
'your goodness hath not deserved this indignity
'her hands.' 'Well, child,' said Allworthy, '
'what is this new instance? What hath he done
'late?' 'What,' cries Blifil, 'notwithstanding
'Mrs Miller hath said, I am very sorry to rel
'and what you should never have heard from
'had it not been a matter impossible to conceal i
'the whole world. In short, he hath killed a m
'I will not say murdered,——for perhaps it may
'be so construed in law, and I hope the best for
'sake.'

Allworthy looked shocked, and blessed himself; a
then turning to Mrs Miller, he cried, 'Well, Mad
'what say you now?'

'Why I say, Sir,' answered she, 'that I ne
'was more concerned at any thing in my life; b
'if the fact be true, I am convinced the man, w
'ever he is, was in the fault. Heaven knows there
'many villains in this town, who make it their b
'ness to provoke young gentlemen. Nothing but
'greatest provocation could have tempted him;
'of all the gentlemen I ever had in my house, I ne
'saw one so gentle, or so sweet-tempered. He w
'beloved by every one in the house, and every
'who came near it.'

While she was thus running on, a violent knock
at the door interrupted the conversation, and p
vented her from proceeding further, or from re
ving any answer; for as she concluded this was a
tor to Mr Allworthy, she hastily retired, taking
her her little girl, whose eyes were all over blubbe
at the melancholy news she heard of Jones, who
to call her his little wife, and not only gave her
play-things, but spent whole hours in playing with
himself.

Some readers may perhaps be pleased with th
minute circumstances, in relating of which we fol
the example of Plutarch, one of the best of our
ther historians; and others to whom they may app
trivial, will, we hope, at least pardon them, as we
never prolix on such occasions.

CH

CHAP. III.

The arrival of Mr Weſtern, with ſome matters concerning the paternal authority.

MRS Miller had not long left the room, when Mr Weſtern entered; but not before a ſmall wrangling bout had paſſed between him and his chairmen; for the fellows who had taken up their burden at the Hercules Pillars, had conceived no hopes of having any future good cuſtomer in the ſquire; and they were moreover farther encouraged by his generoſity, (for he had given them of his own accord ſixpence more than their fare;) they therefore very boldly demanded another ſhilling, which ſo provoked the ſquire, that he not only beſtowed many hearty curſes on them at the door, but retained his anger after he came into the room; ſwearing that all the Londoners were like the court, and thought of nothing but plundering country gentlemen. 'D—n me,' ſays he, 'if I won't walk in the rain rather than get into one of their hand barrows again. They have jolted me more in a mile, than Brown Beſs would in a long fox chace.'

When his wrath on this occaſion was a little appeaſed, he reſumed the ſame paſſionate tone on another. 'There,' ſays he, 'there is fine buſineſs forwards now. The hounds have changed at laſt, and when we imagined we had a fox to deal with, od rat-it, it turns out to be a badger at laſt.'

'Pray, my good neighbour,' ſaid Allworthy, 'drop your metaphors, and ſpeak a little plainer.' 'Why then,' ſays the ſquire, 'to tell you plainly, we have been all this time afraid of a ſon of a whore of a baſtard of ſomebody's, I don't know who's, not I —— And now here is a confounded ſon of a whore of a lord, who may be a baſtard too for what I know or care, for he ſhall never have a daughter of mine by my conſent. They have beggared the nation but they ſhall never beggar me. My land ſhall never be ſent over to Hanover.'

'You ſurpriſe me much, my good friend,' ſaid Allworthy. 'Why, zounds, I am ſurpriſed myſelf,' anſwered the ſquire, 'I went to ſee ſiſter Weſtern last night, according to her own appointment, and there I was had into a whole room-full of women.—There was my lady couſin Bellaſton, and my lady Betty, and my lady Catharine, and my lady I don't know who; d—n me if ever you catch me among ſuch a kennel of hoop-petticoat b——s. D—n me, I'd rather be run by my own dogs, as one of 'em was, that the ſtory book ſays was turned into a hare and his own dogs killed un, and eat un. Od-rabbit it, no mortal was ever run in ſuch a manner; I dogged one way, one had me, if I offered to go back, another ſnapped me. O, certainly one of the greateſt matches in England, ſays one couſin (here he attempted to mimic them;) 'A very advantageous offer indeed, cries another couſin (for you muſt know they be all my couſins, though I never zeed half o'um before. Surely, ſays that, a—ſe b——, my lady Bellaſton, couſin, you muſt be out of your wits to think of refuſing ſuch an offer.'

'Now I begin to underſtand,' ſays Allworthy, 'ſome perſon hath made propoſals to Miſs Weſtern which the ladies of the family approve, but is not to your liking.'

'My liking!' ſaid Weſtern, 'how the devil ſhould it? I tell you it is a lord, and thoſe are always what whom you know I always reſolved to have nothing to do with. Did unt I refuſe a matter of two years purchaſe now for a bit of land, which o'um had a mind to put into a park, only becauſe would have no dealings with lords, and dost think I would marry my daughter zu? Beſides, being engaged to you, and did I ever go off any bargain when I had promiſed?'

'As to that point, neighbour,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I entirely releaſe you from any engagement. No contract can be binding between parties who have not a full power to make it at the time, nor can afterwards acquire the power of fulfilling it.'

'Sla

'Slud! then,' answered Western, 'I tell you I have power, and I will fulfil it. Come along with me directly to Doctors Commons, I will get a licence; and I will go to sister and take away the wench by force, and she shall ha un, or I will lock her up and keep her upon bread and water as long as she lives.'

'Mr Western,' said Allworthy, 'shall I beg you will hear my full sentiments on this matter?' 'Hear thee! ay, to be sure I will,' answered he. 'Why then, Sir,' cries Allworthy, 'I can truly say, without a compliment either to you or the young lady, that when this match was proposed, I embraced it very readily and heartily, from my regard to you both. An alliance between two families so nearly neighbours, and between whom there had always existed so mutual an intercourse and good harmony, I thought a most desireable event; and with regard to the young lady, not only the concurrent opinion of all who knew her, but my own observation assured me, that she would be an inestimable treasure to a good husband. I shall say nothing of her personal qualifications, which certainly are admirable; her good-nature, her charitable disposition, her modesty, are too well known to need any panegyric: but she hath one quality which existed in a high degree in that best of women, who is now one of the first of angels, which as it is not of a glaring kind, more commonly escapes observation: so little indeed it is remarked, that I want a word to express it. I must use negatives on this occasion. I never heard any thing of pertness, or what is called repartee, out of her mouth; no pretence to wit, much less to that kind of wisdom, which is the result only of great learning and experience; the affectation of which in a young woman is as absurd as any of the affectations of an ape. No dictatorial sentiments, no judicial opinions, no profound criticisms. Whenever I have seen her in the company of men, she hath been all attention, with the modesty of a learner, not the forwardness of a teacher. You'll

'pardon me for it, but I once, to try her only, de
'fired her opinion on a point which was controver
'ed between Mr Thwackum and Mr Square. T
'which she answered with much sweetness, 'Yo
"will pardon me, good Mr Allworthy, I am sur
"you cannot in earnest think me capable of decidi
"any point in which two such gentlemen disagree
'Thwackum and Square, who both alike thou
'themselves sure of a favourable decision, second
'my request. She answered with the same go
'humour, 'I must absolutely be excused; for I w
"affront neither so much, as to give my judgm
"on his side.' Indeed, she always shewed th
'highest deference to the understandings of men;
'quality absolutely essential to the making a goo
'wife. I shall only add, that as she is most apparen
'ly void of all affectation, this deference must b
'certainly real.'

Here Blifil sighed bitterly: upon which Weste
whose eyes were full of tears at the praise of Sophi
blubbered out, 'Don't be chicken-hearted, for sh
'ha her, d—n me, that ha her, if she was twen
'times as good.'

'Remember your promise, Sir,' cried Allworthy
'I was not to be interrupted.' 'Well, that un
answered the 'squire, 'I won't speak another word

'Now, my good friend,' continued Allworthy
'I have dwelt so long on the merit of this you
'lady, partly as I really am in love with her cha
'racter, and partly that fortune (for the match
'that light is really advantageous on my nephew
'side) might not be imagined to be my principa
'view in having so eagerly embraced the propos
'Indeed I heartily wished to receive so great a je
'into my family: but though I may with for ma
'good things, I would not therefore steal them,
'be guilty of any violence or injustice to possess m
'self of them. Now to force a woman into a ma
'riage contrary to her consent or approbation, is
'act of such injustice and oppression, that I w
'the laws of our country could restrain it; but
'good conscience is never lawless in the worst

'gula

gulated ſtate, and will provide thoſe laws for itſelf, which the neglect of legiſlators hath forgotten to ſupply. This is ſurely a caſe of that kind; for is it not cruel, nay impious, to force a woman into that ſtate againſt her will, for her behaviour in which ſhe is to be accountable to the higheſt and moſt dreadful court of judicature, and to anſwer at the peril of her ſoul? To diſcharge the matrimonial duties in an adequate manner is no eaſy talk; and ſhall we lay this burthen upon a woman while we at the ſame time deprive her of all that aſſiſtance which may enable her to undergo it? Shall we tear her very heart from her, while we enjoin her duties to which a whole heart is ſcarce equal? I muſt ſpeak very plainly here: I think parents who act in this manner are acceſſaries to all the guilt which their children afterwards incur, and of courſe muſt, before a juſt judge, expect to partake of their puniſhment; but if they could avoid this, good Heaven! is there a ſoul who can bear the thought of having contributed to the damnation of his child!'

'For theſe reaſons, my beſt neighbour, as I ſee the inclinations of this young lady are moſt unhappily averſe to my nephew, I muſt decline any further thoughts of the honour you intended him, though I aſſure you I ſhall always retain the moſt grateful ſenſe of it.'

'Well, Sir,' ſaid Weſtern, (the froth burſting forth from his lips the moment they were uncorked) 'you cannot ſay but I have heard you out, and now I expect you'll hear me; and if I don't anſwer every word on't, why then I'll conſent to gee the matter up. Firſt then I deſire you to anſwer me one queſtion. Did not I beget her? did not I beget her? anſwer me that. They ſay indeed it is a wiſe father that knows his own child; but I am ſure I have the beſt title to her, for I bred her up. But I believe you will allow me to be her father, and if I be, am I not to govern my own child? I aſk you that, am I not to govern my own child? and if I am to govern her in other matters, ſurely

'I am to govern her in this which concerns h
'mott. And what am I defiring all this while? h
'I defiring her to do any thing for me? to give
'any thing?—So much on t'other fide, that I
'only defiring her to take away half my eftate no
'and t'other half when I die. Well, and what
'is all vor? Why is unt it to make her happy? i
'enough to make one mad to hear volks talk: if
'was going to marry myfelf, then fhe would
'reafon to cry and to blubber; but, on the con
'ry, han't I offered to bind down my land in fuch
'manner, that I could not marry if I would, feein
'as narro' woman upon earth would ha me. W
'the devil in hell can I do more? I contribute
'her damnation!——Zounds! I'd zee all the wo
'd——n'd bevore her little vinger fhould be hu
'Indeed, Mr Allworthy, you muft excufe me, bu
'I am furprifed to hear you talk in fuch a manner,
'and I muft fay, take it how you will, that I thought
'you had more fenfe.'

Allworthy refented this reflection only with a fmile; nor could he, if he would have endeavoured it, have conveyed into that fmile any mixture of malice or contempt. His fmiles at folly were indeed fuch as we may fuppofe the angels beftow on the abfurdities of mankind.

Biffil now defired to be permitted to fpeak a few words. 'As to ufing any violence on the young 'lady, I am fure I fhall never confent to it. My 'conficience will not permit me to ufe violence on 'any one, much lefs on a lady for whom, however 'cruel fhe is to me, I fhall always preferve the pureft 'and fincereft affection; but yet I have read, that 'women are feldom proof againft perfeverance. Why 'may I not hope then by fuch perfeverance at laft 'to gain thofe inclinations, in which for the future 'I fhall, perhaps, have no rival; for as for the 'lord, Mr Weftern is fo kind as to prefer me to him; 'and fure, Sir, you will not deny but that a parent 'hath at leaft a negative voice in thefe matters; nay, 'I have heard this very young lady herfelf fay a 'more than once, and declare, that fhe thought

'children

'children inexcuſable who married in direct oppo-
'ſition to the will of their parents. Beſides, though
'the other ladies of the family ſeem to favour the
'pretenſions of my lord, I do not find the lady her-
'ſelf is inclined to give him any countenance; alas!
'I am too well aſſured ſhe is not; I am too ſenſible
'that wickedeſt of men remains uppermoſt in her
'heart.'

'Ay, ay, ſo he does,' cries Weſtern.

'But ſurely,' ſays Blifil, 'when ſhe hears of this
'murder which he hath committed, if the law ſhould
'ſpare his life'——

'What's that,' cries Weſtern, 'murder! hath he
'committed a murder, and is there any hopes of ſee-
'ing him hanged?——Tol de rol, tol lol de rol.'
Here he fell a ſinging and capering about the room.

'Child,' ſays Allworthy, 'this unhappy paſſion
'of yours diſtreſſes me beyond meaſure. I heartily
'pity you, and would do every fair thing to promote
'your ſucceſs.'

'I deſire no more,' cries Blifil, 'I am convinced
'my dear uncle hath a better opinion of me than to
'think that I myſelf wou'd accept of more.'

'Lookee,' ſays Allworthy, 'you have my leave to
'write, to viſit, if ſhe will permit it,——but I inſiſt
'on no thoughts of violence. I will have no confine-
'ment, nothing of that kind attempted.'

'Well, well,' cries the 'ſquire, 'nothing of that
'kind ſhall be attempted; we will try a little longer
'what fair means will effect; and if this fellow be but
'hanged out of the way——Tol lol de rol. I never
'heard better news in my life; I warrant every thing
'goes to my mind.——Do, prithee, dear Allworthy,
'come and dine with me at the Hercules Pillars: I
'have beſpoke a ſhoulder of mutton roaſted, and a
'ſpare-rib of pork, and a fowl and egg-ſauce. There
'will be nobody but ourſelves, unleſs we have a mind
'to have the landlord; for I have ſent parſon Supple
'down to Baſingſtoke after my tobacco-box, which I
'left at an inn there, and I would not loſe it for the
'world; for it is an old acquaintance of above twen-
'ty years ſtanding.' I can tell you landlord is a vaſt
'comical bitch, you will like un hugely.'

Mr Allworthy at laſt agreed to this invitation, a
ſoon after the 'ſquire went off, ſinging and caper
at the hopes of ſeeing the ſpeedy tragical end of p
Jones.

When he was gone, Mr Allworthy reſumed
aforeſaid ſubject with much gravity. He told his
phew, 'he wiſhed with all his heart he would end
'vour to conquer a paſſion, in which I cannot,' ſa
he, 'flatter you with any hopes of ſucceeding. I
'certainly a vulgar error, that averſion in a wom
'may be conquered by perſeverance. Indifferen
'may, perhaps, ſometimes yield to it; but the uſ
'triumphs gained by perſeverance in a lover, are o
'caprice, imprudence, affectation, and often an ex
'bitant degree of levity, which excites women,
'over-warm in their conſtitutions, to indulge th
'vanity by prolonging the time of courtſhip, ev
'when they are well enough pleaſed with the obje
'and reſolve (if ever they reſolve at all) to make h
'a very pitiful amends in the end. But a fixed d
'like, as I am afraid this is, will rather gather ſtreng
'than be conquered by time. Beſides, my dear,
'have another apprehenſion which you muſt excu
'I am afraid this paſſion which you have for this
'young creature, hath her beautiful perſon too mu
'for its object, and is unworthy of the name of t
'love, which is the only foundation of matrimon
'felicity. To admire, to like, and to long for
'poſſeſſion of a beautiful woman, without any rega
'to her ſentiments towards us, is, I am afraid,
'natural; but love, I believe, is the child of love o
'ly; at leaſt, I am pretty confident, that to love
'creature who we are aſſured hates us, is not in h
'man nature. Examine your heart, therefore, th
'roughly, my good boy, and if, upon examinatio
'you have but the leaſt ſuſpicion of this kind, I a
'ſure your own virtue and religion will impel you
'drive ſo vicious a paſſion from your heart, and yo
'good ſenſe will ſoon enable you to do it witho
'pain.'

The reader may pretty well gueſs Blifil's anſwe
but if he ſhould be at a loſs, we are not, at preſent,

leiſure to ſatisfy him, as our hiſtory now haſtens on to matters of higher importance, and we can no longer bear to be abſent from Sophia.

CHAP. IV.

An extraordinary ſcene between Sophia and her aunt.

THE lowing heifer and the bleating ewe, in herds and flocks, may ramble ſafe and unregarded through the paſtures. Theſe are, indeed, hereafter doomed to be the prey of man; yet many years are they ſuffered to enjoy their liberty undiſturbed. But if a plump doe be diſcovered to have eſcaped from the foreſt, and to repoſe herſelf in ſome field or grove, the whole pariſh is preſently alarmed, every man is ready to ſet his dogs after her; and if ſhe is preſerved from the reſt by the good 'ſquire, it is only that he may ſecure her for his own eating.

I have often conſidered a very fine young woman of fortune and faſhion, when firſt found ſtrayed from the pale of her nurſery, to be in pretty much the ſame ſituation with this doe. The town is immediately in an uproar, ſhe is hunted from park to play, from court to aſſembly, from aſſembly to her own chamber, and rarely eſcapes a ſingle ſeaſon from the jaws of ſome devourer or other: for if her friends protect her from ſome, it is only to deliver her over to one of their own chuſing, often more diſagreeable to her than any of the reſt: while whole herds or flocks of other women, ſecurely and ſcarce regarded, traverſe the park, the play, the opera, and the aſſembly; and though, for the moſt part at leaſt, they are at laſt devoured, yet for a long time do they wanton in liberty, without diſturbance or controul.

Of all theſe paragons, none ever taſted more of this perſecution than poor Sophia. Her ill ſtars were not contented with all that ſhe had ſuffered on account of Blifil; they now raiſed her another purſuer, who ſeemed likely to torment her no leſs than the other had done. For though her aunt was leſs violent, ſhe was

no leſs aſſiduous in teizing her, than her father had been before.

The ſervants were no ſooner departed after dinner than Mrs Weſtern, who had opened the matter to Sophia, informed her, 'That ſhe expected his lord-'ſhip that very afternoon, and intended to take the 'firſt opportunity of leaving her alone with him.' 'If you do, Madam,' anſwered Sophia with ſome ſpirit, 'I ſhall take the firſt opportunity of leaving 'him by himſelf.' 'How! Madam!' cries the aunt, 'is this the return you make me for my kindneſs, in 'relieving you from your confinement at your fa-'ther's?' 'You know, Madam,' ſaid Sophia, 'the 'cauſe of that confinement was a refuſal to comply 'with my father, in accepting a man I deteſted; and 'will my dear aunt, who hath relieved me from that 'diſtreſs, involve me in another equally bad?' 'And 'do you think then, Madam,' anſwered Mrs Weſtern, 'that there is no difference between my lord 'Fellamar and Mr Blifil?' 'Very little, in my opi-'nion,' cries Sophia: 'and if I muſt be condemned 'to one, I would certainly have the merit of ſacri-'ficing myſelf to my father's pleaſure.' 'Then my 'pleaſure, I find,' ſaith the aunt, 'hath very little 'weight with you; but that conſideration ſhall not 'move me. I act from nobler motives. The view 'of aggrandizing my family, of ennobling yourſelf, 'is what I proceed upon. Have you no ſenſe of 'ambition? Are there no charms in the thoughts of 'having a coronet on your coach?' 'None, upon 'my honour,' ſaid Sophia. 'A pincuſhion upon 'my coach would pleaſe me juſt as well.' 'Never 'mention honour,' cries the aunt, 'it becomes not 'the mouth of ſuch a wretch. I am ſorry, niece, 'you force me to uſe theſe words; but I cannot 'bear your groveling temper; you have none of 'the blood of the Weſterns in you. But however 'mean and baſe your own ideas are, you ſhall bring 'no imputation on mine. I will never ſuffer the 'world to ſay of me, that I encouraged you in re-'fuſing one of the beſt matches in England; a match 'which, beſides its advantage in fortune, would do 'honour

'honour to almoſt any family, and hath indeed in 'title, the advantage of ours.' Surely,' ſays Sophia, 'I am born deficient and have not the ſenſes 'with which other people are bleſſed: there muſt be 'certainly ſome ſenſe which can relish the delights of 'ſound and ſhow, which I have not: for ſurely mankind would not labour ſo much, nor ſacrifice ſo 'much for the obtaining, nor would they be ſo elate 'and proud with poſſeſſing, what appeared to them 'as it doth to me, the moſt inſignificant of all trifles.' 'No, no, Miſs,' cries the aunt; 'you are born 'with as many ſenſes as other people; but I aſſure 'you, you are not born with a ſufficient underſtanding to make a fool of me, or to expoſe my conduct 'to the world. So I declare this to you upon my 'word, and you know, I believe, how fixed my reſolutions are, unleſs you agree to ſee his lordſhip 'this afternoon, I will with my own hands deliver 'you to-morrow morning to my brother, and will 'never henceforth interfere with you, nor ſee your 'face again.' Sophia ſtood a few moments ſilent after this ſpeech, which was uttered in a moſt angry and peremptory tone; and then burſting into tears, ſhe cry'd, 'Do with me, Madam, whatever you pleaſe; 'I am the moſt miſerable, undone wretch upon earth; 'if my dear aunt forſakes me, where ſhall I look for 'a protector?'——'My dear niece,' cries ſhe, 'you 'will have a very good protector in his lordſhip; a 'protector, whom nothing but a hankering after that 'vile fellow Jones can make you decline.' 'Indeed, 'Madam,' ſaid Sophia, 'you wrong me. How can 'you imagine, after what you have ſhewn me, if I 'had ever any ſuch thoughts, that I ſhould not baniſh 'them for ever. If it will ſatisfy you I will receive 'the ſacrament upon it, never to ſee his face again.' ——'But child, dear child,' ſaid the aunt, 'be reaſonable: can't you invent a ſingle objection?'—— 'I have already, I think, told you a ſufficient objection,' anſwered Sophia——'What?' cries the aunt; 'I remember none.' 'Sure, Madam,' ſaid Sophia, 'I told you he had uſed me in the rudeſt and vileſt 'manner.' 'Indeed, child,' anſwered ſhe, 'I never

'heard

' heard you, or did not underſtand you;—[illegible]
' do you mean by this rude and vile manner [illegible]
deed, Madam,' ſaid Sophia, ' I am almoſt a[illegible]
' to tell you. He caught me in his arms, pull[illegible]
' down upon the ſettee, and thruſt his hand into
' boſom, and kiſſed it with ſuch violence, that I ha
' the mark upon my left breaſt at this moment.'—
' Indeed!' ſaid Mrs Weſtern. ' Yes indeed, Ma
' dam,' anſwered Sophia; ' my father luckily ca
' in at that inſtant, or Heaven knows what rude
' he intended to have proceeded to.' ' I am aſton
' ed and confounded,' cries the aunt. ' No woma
' of the name of Weſtern hath been ever treated
' ſince we were a family. I would have torn
' eyes of a prince out if he had attempted ſuch fre
' dom with me. It is impoſſible: ſure, Sophia, y
' muſt invent this to raiſe my indignation agai
' him.' ' I hope, Madam,' ſaid Sophia, ' you ha
' too good an opinion of me, to imagine me capa
' of telling an untruth. Upon my ſoul it is tru
' I ſhould have ſtabbed him to the heart had I be
' preſent,' returned the aunt. ' Yet ſurely he co
' have no diſhonourable deſign: it is impoſſible;
' durſt not: beſides, his propoſals ſhew he had n
' for they are not only honourable, but generous.
' don't know; the age allows too great freedo
' A diſtant ſalute is all I would have allowed bef
' the ceremony. I have had lovers formerly, not
' long ago neither; ſeveral lovers, though I ne
' would conſent to marriage, and I never encourag
' the leaſt freedom. It is a fooliſh cuſtom, and wi
' I never would agree to. No man kiſſed more
' me than my cheek. It is as much as one can bri
' one's ſelf, to give lips up to a huſband; and inde
' could I ever have been perſuaded to marry, I b
' lieve I ſhould not have ſoon been brought to en
' ſo much.' ' You will pardon me, dear Mada
ſaid Sophia, ' if I make one obſervation: you o
' you have had many lovers, and the world knows
' even if you ſhould deny it. You refuſed them
' and I am convinced one coronet at leaſt amo
' them.' ' You ſay true, dear Sophy,' anſwered
' I

'I had once the offer of a title.' 'Why then,' ſaid Sophia, 'will you not ſuffer me to refuſe this one?' 'It is true, child,' ſaid ſhe, 'I have refuſed the offer 'of a title: but it was not ſo good an offer; that 'is, not ſo very, very good an offer.' ——— 'Yes, Ma-'dam,' ſaid Sophia; 'but you have had very great 'propoſals from men of vaſt fortunes. It was not 'the firſt, nor the ſecond, nor the third advantage-'ous match that offered itſelf.' 'I own it was not,' ſaid ſhe. 'Well, Madam,' continued Sophia, 'and 'why may not I expect to have a ſecond, perhaps, 'better than this? You are now but a young woman, 'and I am convinced would not promiſe to yield to 'the firſt lover of fortune, nay, or of title too. I 'am a very young woman, and ſure I need not de-'ſpair.' 'Well, my dear, dear Sophy,' cries the aunt, 'what would you have me ſay?' 'Why, I on-'ly beg that I may not be left alone, at leaſt this 'evening: grant me that, and I will ſubmit, if you 'think, after what is paſt, I ought to ſee him in your 'company.' 'Well, I will grant it,' cries the aunt. 'Sophy, you know I love you, and can deny you 'nothing. You know the eaſineſs of my nature; I 'have not always been ſo eaſy. I have been formerly 'thought cruel; by the men I mean. I was called 'the Cruel Partheniſſa. I have broke many a win-'dow that has had verſes to the cruel Partheniſſa in 'it. Sophy, I was never ſo handſome as you, and 'yet I had ſomething of you formerly. I am a little 'altered. Kingdoms and ſtates, as Tully Cicero ſays 'in his epiſtles, undergo alterations, and ſo muſt the 'human form.' Thus run ſhe on for near half an hour upon herſelf, and her conqueſts and her cruelty, till the arrival of my lord, who, after a moſt tedious viſit, during which Mrs Weſtern never once offered to leave the room, retired, not much more ſatisfied with the aunt than with the niece. For Sophia had brought her aunt into ſo excellent a temper, that ſhe conſented to almoſt every thing her niece ſaid; and agreed, that a little diſtant behaviour might not be improper to ſo forward a lover.

Thus

Thus Sophia, by a little well-directed flattery, which surely none will blame her, obtained a little ease for herself, and, at least, put off the evil day. And now we have seen our heroine in a better situation than she hath been for a long time before. We will look a little after Mr Jones, whom we left in the most deplorable situation that can well be imagined.

CHAP. V.

Mrs Miller and Mr Nightingale visit Jones in prison.

WHEN Mr Allworthy and his nephew went to meet Mr Western, Mrs Miller set forward to her son-in-law's lodgings, in order to acquaint him with the accident which had befallen his friend Jones; but he had known it long before from Partridge. Mr Jones, when he left Mrs Miller, had been furnished with a room in the same house with Mr Nightingale. The good woman found her daughter under great affliction on account of Mr Jones, whom having comforted as well as she could, she set forwards to the Gate house, where she heard he was, and where Mr Nightingale was arrived before her.

The firmness and constancy of a true friend is a circumstance so extremely delightful to persons in any kind of distress, that the distress itself, if it be not temporary, and admits of relief, is more than compensated by bringing this comfort with it. Nor are instances of this kind so rare, as some unbelieving and inaccurate observers have reported. The fault or want of compassion is not to be numbered among our general faults. The black ingredient which poisons our disposition is envy. Hence our eyes are, I am afraid, turned upwards to those who are in some greater, better, wiser, or happier than ourselves, without some degree of malignity; while we commonly look downwards on the mean and miserable with sufficient benevolence and pity. In fact, I have remarked, that most of the defects which have discovered themselves in the friendships within my

ſervation, have ariſen from envy only: a helliſh vice; and yet one from which I have known very few abſolutely exempt. But enough of a ſubject which, if purſued, would lead me too far.

Whether it was that fortune was apprehenſive leſt Jones ſhould ſink under the weight of his adverſity, and that ſhe might thus loſe any future opportunity of tormenting him; or whether ſhe really abated ſomewhat of her ſeverity towards him, ſhe ſeemed a little to relax her perſecution, by ſending him the company of two ſuch faithful friends, and what is perhaps more rare, a faithful ſervant. For Partridge, though he had many imperfections, wanted not fidelity; and though fear would not ſuffer him to be hanged for his maſter, yet the world, I believe, could not have bribed him to deſert his cauſe.

While Jones was expreſſing great ſatisfaction in the preſence of his friends, Partridge brought an account that Mr Fitzpatrick was ſtill alive, though the ſurgeon declared, that he had very little hopes. Upon which Jones fetching a deep ſigh, Nightingale ſaid to him: 'My dear Tom, why ſhould you afflict yourſelf ſo upon an accident, which, whatever be the conſequence, can be attended with no danger to you, and in which your conſcience cannot accuſe you of having been in the leaſt to blame. If the fellow ſhould die, what have you done more than taken away the life of a ruffian in your own defence? So will the coroner's inqueſt certainly find it; and then you will be eaſily admitted to bail; and though you muſt undergo the form of a trial, yet it is a trial which many men would ſtand for you for a ſhilling.' 'Come, come, Mr Jones,' ſaid Mrs Miller, 'cheer yourſelf up. I knew you could not be the aggreſſor, and ſo I told Mr Allworthy, and ſo he ſhall acknowledge too before I have done with him.'

Jones gravely anſwered, 'That whatever might be his fate, he ſhould always lament the having ſhed the blood of one of his fellow-creatures, as one of the higheſt misfortunes which could have befallen him. But I have another misfortune of the ten-

'dereſt kind.——O! Mrs Miller, I have loſt what I 'held moſt dear upon earth.' 'That muſt be a mi- 'ſtreſs,' ſaid Mrs Miller: 'but come, come; I know 'more than you imagine;' (for indeed Partridge had blabbed all) 'and I have heard more than you know. 'Matters go better, I promiſe you, than you think; 'and I would not give Blifil ſix-pence for all his 'chance which he hath of the lady.'

'Indeed, my dear friend, indeed,' anſwered Jones, 'you are an entire ſtranger to the cauſe of my grief. 'If you was acquainted with the ſtory, you would 'allow my caſe admitted of no comfort. I appre- 'hend no danger from Blifil. I have undone myſelf.' 'Don't deſpair,' replied Mrs Miller; 'you know not 'what a woman can do: and if any thing be in my 'power, I promiſe you I will do it to ſerve you. It 'is my duty. My ſon, my dear Mr Nightingale, who 'is ſo kind to tell me he hath obligations to you on 'the ſame account, knows it is my duty. Shall I go 'to the lady myſelf? I will ſay any thing to her you 'would have me ſay.'

'Thou beſt of women,' cries Jones, taking her by the hand, 'talk not of obligations to me;——but, as 'you have been ſo kind to mention it, there is a fa- 'vour which, perhaps, may be in your power. I ſee 'you are acquainted with the lady (how you came by 'your information I know not) who ſits indeed very 'near my heart. If you could contrive to deliver 'this, (giving her a paper from his pocket), I ſhall 'for ever acknowledge your goodneſs.'

'Give it me,' ſaid Mrs Miller. 'If I ſee it not 'in her own poſſeſſion before I ſleep, may my next 'ſleep be my laſt. Comfort yourſelf, my good young 'man; be wiſe enough to take warning from paſt 'follies, and I warrant all ſhall be well, and I ſhall 'yet ſee you happy with the moſt charming young 'lady in the world; for ſo I hear from every one 'ſhe is.'

'Believe me, Madam,' ſaid he, 'I do not ſpeak 'the common cant of one in my unhappy ſituation. 'Before this dreadful accident happened, I had re- 'ſolved

'solved to quit a life of which I was become ſenſible 'of the wickedneſs as well as folly. I do aſſure you, 'notwithſtanding the diſturbances I have unfortu-'nately occaſioned in your houſe, for which I heartily 'aſk your pardon, I am not an abandoned profligate. 'Though I have been hurried into vices, I do not 'approve a vicious character; nor will I ever, from 'this moment, deſerve it.'

Mrs Miller expreſſed great ſatisfaction in theſe declarations, in the ſincerity of which ſhe averred ſhe had an entire faith: and now the remainder of the converſation paſt in the joint attempts of that good woman and Mr Nightingale, to cheer the dejected ſpirits of Mr Jones, in which they ſo far ſucceeded, as to leave him much better comforted and ſatisfied than they found him; to which happy alteration nothing ſo much contributed as the kind undertaking of Mrs Miller, to deliver his letter to Sophia, which he deſpaired of finding any means to accompliſh: for when Black George produced the laſt from Sophia, he informed Partridge, that ſhe had ſtrictly charged him, on pain of having it communicated to her father, not to bring her any anſwer. He was moreover not a little pleaſed, to find he had ſo warm an advocate to Mr Allworthy himſelf in this good woman, who was, in reality, one of the worthieſt creatures in the world.

After about an hour's viſit from the lady, (for Nightingale had been with him much longer) they both took their leave, promiſing to return to him ſoon; during which Mrs Miller ſaid, ſhe hoped to bring him ſome good news from his miſtreſs, and Mr Nightingale promiſed to enquire into the ſtate of Mr Fitzpatrick's wound, and likewiſe to find out ſome of the perſons who were preſent at the rencounter.

The former of theſe went directly in queſt of Sophia, whither we likewiſe ſhall now attend her.

CHAP. VI.

In which Mrs Miller pays a visit to Sophia.

ACCESS to the young lady was by no mea difficult: for as she lived now on a parti friendly footing with her aunt, she was at full liber to receive what visitants she pleased.

Sophia was dressing, when she was acquainted th there was a gentlewoman below to wait on her. she was neither afraid nor ashamed to see any of h own sex, Mrs Miller was immediately admitted.

Curt'sies and the usual ceremonials between wom who are strangers to each other being past, Soph said, 'I have not the pleasure to know you, Mada 'No, Madam,' answered Mrs Miller, 'and I mu 'beg pardon for intruding upon you. But when yo 'know what has induced me to give you this troubl 'I hope.'——'Pray, what is your business, Madam said Sophia, with a little emotion. 'Madam, w 'are not alone,' replied Mrs Miller, in a low voi 'Go out, Betty,' said Sophia.

When Betty was departed, Mrs Miller said, ' 'was desired, Madam, by a very unhappy you 'gentleman, to deliver you this letter.' Soph changed colour when she saw the direction, w knowing the hand, and after some hesitation, sai ——'I could not conceive, Madam from your a 'pearance, that your business had been of such 'nature.—Whomever you brought this letter fro 'I shall not open it. I should be sorry to entert 'an unjust suspicion of any one; but you are an 'ter stranger tome.'

'If you will have patience, Madam,' answer Mrs Miller, 'I will acquaint you who I am, a 'how I came by that letter.' 'I have no curiosit 'Madam, to know any thing,' cries Sophia, 'but 'must insist on your delivering that letter back to t 'person who gave it you.'

Mrs Miller then fell upon her knees, and in t most passionate terms, implored her compassion; which Sophia answered: 'Sure, Madam, it is fo 'prizi

'prizing you ſhould be ſo very ſtrongly intereſted in 'the behalf of this perſon. I would not think, Ma-'dam,'——'No Madam,' ſays Mrs Miller, 'you 'ſhall not think any thing but the truth I will tell 'you all, and you will not wonder that I am inte-'reſted. He is the beſt-natured creature that ever 'was born.'—She then began and related the ſtory of Mr Henderſon.—After this ſhe cried, 'This, Ma-'dam, this is his goodneſs; but I have much more 'tender obligations to him. He hath preſerved my 'child,'——Here, after ſhedding ſome tears, ſhe re-lated every thing concerning the fact, ſuppreſſing only thoſe circumſtances which would have moſt re-flected on her daughter, and concluded with ſaying, 'Now, Madam, you ſhall judge whether I can ever 'do enough for ſo kind, ſo good, ſo generous a 'young man: and ſure he is the beſt and worthieſt 'of all human beings.'

The alterations in the countenance of Sophia had hitherto been chiefly to her diſadvantage, and had declined her complexion to too great paleneſs; but ſhe now waxed redder, if poſſible, than vermilion, and cried, 'I know not what to ſay; certainly what ari-ſes from gratitude cannot be blamed——But what ſervice can my reading this letter do your friend, ſince I am reſolved never'—Mrs Miller fell again to her entreaties, and begged to be forgiven, but ſhe would not, ſhe ſaid, carry it back 'Well, Madam," ſays Sophia, 'I cannot help it, if you will force it upon me.——Certainly you may leave it whether I will or no.' What Sophia meant, or whether ſhe meant any thing, I will not preſume to determine: but Mrs Miller actually underſtood this as a hint, and preſently laying the letter down on the table, took her leave, having firſt begged permiſſion to wait again on Sophia; which requeſt had neither aſſent or denial.

The letter lay upon the table no longer than till Mrs Miller was out of ſight; for then Sophia opened and read it.

This letter did very little ſervice to his cauſe; for conſiſted of little more than confeſſions of his own

unworthineſs, and bitter lamentations of deſpair, to
gether with the moſt ſolemn proteſtations of his u
alterable fidelity to Sophia, of which, he ſaid, h
hoped to convince her, if he had ever more the ho
nour of being admitted to her preſence; and tha
could account for the letter to lady Bellaſton, in ſu
a manner, that though it would not entitle him t
her forgiveneſs, he hoped at leaſt to obtain it fro
her mercy. And concluded with vowing, that n
thing was ever leſs in his thoughts than to mar
lady Bellaſton

Though Sophia read the letter twice over wi
great attention, his meaning ſtill remained a rid
to her; nor could her invention ſuggeſt to her an
means to excuſe Jones. She certainly remained ver
angry with him, though indeed lady Bellaſton too
up ſo much of her reſentment, that her gentle mi
had but little left to beſtow on any other perſon

That lady was moſt unluckily to dine this very da
with her aunt Weſtern, and, in the afternoon, the
were all three, by appointment, to go together to th
opera, and thence to lady Thomas Hatchet's drum
Sophia would have gladly been excuſed from all, bu
ſhe would not diſoblige her aunt; and as to the ar
of counterfeiting illneſs, ſhe was ſo entirely a ſtrang
to them, that it never once entered into her hea
When ſhe was dreſſed, therefore, down ſhe went, re
ſolved to encounter all the horrors of the day, an
a moſt diſagreeable one it proved; for lady Bellaſto
took every opportunity very civilly and ſlily to inſu
her; to all which her dejection of ſpirits diſabled h
from making any return; and indeed, to confeſs th
truth, ſhe was at the very beſt but an indifferent m
ſtreſs of repartee

Another misfortune which befel poor Sophia, wa
the company of lord Fellamar, whom ſhe met at th
opera, and who attended her to the drum. An
though both places were too public to admit of an
particularities, and ſhe was farther relieved by th
muſic at the one place, and by the cards at the othe
ſhe could not however enjoy herſelf in his compan
for there is ſomething of delicacy in women, whi

will not ſuffer them to be even eaſy in the preſence of a man whom they know to have pretenſions to them, which they are diſinclined to favour.

Having in this chapter twice mentioned a drum, a word which our poſterity, it is hoped, will not underſtand in the ſenſe it is here applied, we ſhall, notwithſtanding our preſent haſte, ſtop a moment to deſcribe the entertainment here meant, and the rather as we can in a moment deſcribe it.

A drum then, is an aſſembly of well dreſſed perſons of both ſexes, moſt of whom play at cards, and the reſt do nothing at all; while the miſtreſs of the houſe performs the part of the landlady at an inn, and like the landlady of an inn prides herſelf in the number of her gueſts, though ſhe doth not always, like her, get any thing by it.

No wonder then, as ſo much ſpirits muſt be required to ſupport any vivacity in theſe ſcenes of dulneſs, that we hear perſons of faſhion eternally complaining of the want of them; a complaint confined entirely to upper life. How inſupportable muſt we imagine this round of impertinence to have been to Sophia, at this time! how difficult muſt ſhe have found it to force the appearance of gaiety into her looks, when her mind dictated nothing but the tendereſt ſorrow, and when every thought was charged with tormenting ideas!

Night, however, at laſt reſtored her to her pillow, where we will leave her to ſooth her melancholy at leaſt, though incapable we fear of reſt, and ſhall purſue our hiſtory, which ſomething whiſpers us, is now arrived at the eve of ſome great event.

CHAP. VII.

A pathetic ſcene between Mr Allworthy and Mrs Miller.

MRS MILLER had a long diſcourſe with Mr Allworthy, at his return from dinner, in which ſhe acquainted him with Mr Jones's having unfortunately loſt all which he was pleaſed to beſtow on him at their ſeparation; and with the diſtreſſes to which that loſs had ſubjected him; of all which ſhe had received a full

a full account from the faithful retailer Partridge. She then explained the obligations she had to Jones; not that she was entirely explicit with regard to her daughter: for though she had the utmost confidence in Mr Allworthy, and though there could be no hopes of keeping an affair secret, which was unhappily known to more than half a dozen; yet she could not prevail with herself to mention those circumstances which reflected most on the chastity of poor Nancy; but smothered that part of her evidence as cautiously as if she had been before a judge, and the girl was now on her trial for the murder of a bastard.

Allworthy said, there were few characters so absolutely vicious as not to have the least mixture of good in them. 'However,' says he, 'I cannot deny but 'that you had some obligations to the fellow, bad as 'he is, and I shall therefore excuse what hath passed 'already, but must insist you never mention his name 'to me more; for I promise you, it was upon the 'fullest and plainest evidence that I resolved to take 'the measures I have taken.' 'Well, Sir,' says she, 'I make not the least doubt, but time will shew all 'matters in their true and natural colours, and that 'you will be convinced this poor young man de'serves better of you than some other folks that shall 'be nameless.'

'Madam,' cries Allworthy, a little ruffled, 'I will 'not hear any reflections on my nephew; and if you 'ever say a word more of that kind, I will depart 'from your house that instant. He is the worthiest 'and best of men; and I once more repeat it to you, 'he hath carried his friendship to this man to a 'blameable length, by too long concealing facts of 'the blackest die. The ingratitude of the wretch 'to this good young man is what I most resent: for, 'Madam, I have the greatest reason to imagine he 'had laid a plot to supplant my nephew in my favour, 'and to have disinherited him.'

'I am sure, Sir,' answered Mrs Miller, a little frightened, (for though Mr Allworthy had the utmost sweetness and benevolence in his smiles, he had great terror in his frowns) 'I shall never speak

'against

'againſt any gentleman you are pleaſed to think well 'of. I am ſure, Sir, ſuch behaviour would very little 'become me, eſpecially when the gentleman is your 'neareſt relation; but, Sir, you muſt not be angry 'with me, you muſt not indeed, for my good wiſhes 'to this poor wretch. Sure I may call him ſo now, 'though once you would have been angry with me, 'if I had ſpoke of him with the leaſt diſreſpect. How 'often have I heard you call him your ſon? How 'often have you prattled to me of him, with all the 'fondneſs of a parent? Nay, Sir, I cannot forget the 'many tender expreſſions, the many good things you 'have told me of his beauty, and his parts, and his 'virtues; of his good-nature and generoſity.—— I 'am ſure, Sir, I cannot forget them: for I find them 'all true. I have experienced them in my own cauſe. 'They have preſerved my family. You muſt pardon 'my tears, Sir, indeed you muſt, when I conſider the 'cruel reverſe of fortune which this poor youth, to 'whom I am ſo much obliged, hath ſuffered; when 'I conſider the loſs of your favour, which I know he 'valued more than his life, I muſt, I muſt lament 'him. If you had a dagger in your hand, ready 'to plunge into my heart, I muſt lament the mi'ſery of one whom you have loved, and I ſhall ever 'love.'

Allworthy was pretty much moved with this ſpeech, but it ſeemed not to be with anger: for after a ſhort ſilence, taking Mrs Miller by the hand, he ſaid very affectionately to her: 'Come, Madam, let us conſider 'a little about your daughter. I cannot blame you, 'for rejoicing in a match which promiſes to be advan'tageous to her; but you know this advantage, in a 'great meaſure, depends on the father's reconciliation. 'I know Mr Nightingale very well, and have former'ly had concerns with him; I will make him a viſit, 'and endeavour to ſerve you in this matter. I be'lieve he is a worldly man; but as this is an only ſon, 'and the thing is now irretrievable, perhaps he may 'in time be brought to reaſon. I promiſe you I will 'do all I can for you.'

Many

Many were the acknowledgments which the po
woman made to Allworthy, for this kind and ge
rous offer, nor could ſhe refrain from taking this
caſion again to expreſs her gratitude towards Jo
'to whom,' ſaid ſhe, 'I owe the opportunity of
'ving you, Sir, this preſent trouble.' Allwort
gently ſtopped her; but he was too good a man
be really offended with the effects of ſo noble a pr
ciple as now actuated Mrs Miller; and indeed h
not this new affair inflamed his former anger aga
Jones, it is poſſible he might have been a little ſoften
towards him, by the report of an action which mak
itſelf could not have derived from an evil motive.

Mr Allworthy and Mrs Miller had been above a
hour together, when their converſation was put a
end to by the arrival of Blifil, and another perſo
which other perſon was no leſs than Mr Dowling t
attorney, who was now become a great favourite wi
Mr Blifil, and whom Mr Allworthy, at the deſire
his nephew, had made his ſteward; and had likewi
recommended him to Mr Weſtern, from whom the a
torney received a promiſe of being promoted to t
ſame office upon the firſt vacancy; and in the mea
time was employed in tranſacting ſome affairs whi
the 'ſquire then had in London, in relation to a mor
gage.

This was the principal affair which then brou
Mr Dowling to town; therefore he took the ſame o
portunity to charge himſelf with ſome money for
Allworthy, and to make a report to him of ſome oth
buſineſs; in all which, as it was of much too dull
nature to find any place in this hiſtory, we will lea
the uncle, nephew, and their lawyer concerned, an
reſort to other matters.

CHAP. VIII.

Containing various matters.

BEFORE we return to Mr Jones, we will take on
ore view of Sophia.

Though that young lady had brought her aunt int
great good humour by thoſe ſoothing methods, whi

have before related, ſhe had not brought her in the ſt to abate of her zeal for the match with lord Fel- ar. This zeal was now inflamed by lady Bellaſ- , who had told her the preceding evening, that ſhe well ſatisfied from the conduct of Sophia, and m her carriage to his lordſhip, that all delays would dangerous, and that the only way to ſucceed, was preſs the match forward with ſuch rapidity, that the ng lady ſhould have no time to reflect, and be ob- d to conſent, while ſhe ſcarce knew what ſhe did. which manner, ſhe ſaid, one half of the marriages ong people of condition were brought about; a fact y probably true, and to which I ſuppoſe is owing mutual tenderneſs which afterwards exiſts among many happy couples.

A hint of the ſame kind was given by the ſame lady lord Fellamar; and both theſe ſo readily embraced advice, that the very next day was, at his lordſhip's queſt, appointed by Mrs Weſtern for a private inter- w between the young parties. This was communi- ed to Sophia by her aunt, and inſiſted upon in ſuch h terms, that after having urged every thing ſhe could ibly invent againſt it, without the leaſt effect, ſhe aſt agreed to give the higheſt inſtance of complai- ce which any young lady can give, and conſented ee his lordſhip.

As converſations of this kind afford no great enter- ment, we ſhall be excuſed from reciting the whole paſſed at this interview; in which, after his lordſhip made many declarations of the moſt pure and ar- nt paſſion, to the ſilent bluſhing Sophia; ſhe at laſt lected all the ſpirits ſhe could raiſe, and with a trem- g low voice ſaid, 'My lord, you muſt be yourſelf conſcious whether your former behaviour to me hath been conſiſtent with the profeſſions you now make.' Is there,' anſwered he, 'no way by which I can atone for madneſs? what I did, I am afraid, muſt have too plainly convinced you, that the violence of love had deprived me of my ſenſes.' 'Indeed, my lord,' ſaid ſhe, 'it is in your power to give me a proof of an affection which I much rather wiſh to en-

'courage,

'courage, and to which I ſhould think myſelf mo
'beholden.' 'Name it, Madam,' ſaid my lord, wa
warmly.—'My lord,' ſays ſhe, looking down up
her fan, 'I know you muſt be ſenſible how une
'this pretended paſſion of yours hath made me.'—
'Can you be ſo cruel to call it pretended?' ſays h
'Yes, my lord,' anſwered Sophia, 'all profeſſi
'of love to thoſe whom we perſecute, are moſt inju
'ing pretences. This purſuit of yours is to me
'cruel perſecution; nay, it is taking a moſt unge
'rous advantage of my unhappy ſituation.' 'M
'lovely, moſt adorable charmer, do not accuſe m
cries he, 'of taking an ungenerous advantage, wh
'I have no thoughts but what are directed to yo
'honour and intereſt, and while I have no view,
'hope, no ambition, but to throw myſelf, hono
'fortune, every thing at your feet.' 'My lor
ſays ſhe, 'it is that fortune, and thoſe hono
'which give you the advantage of which I compla
'There are the charms which have ſeduced my re
'tions, but to me they are things indifferent.
'your lordſhip will merit my gratitude, there is
'one way.'—— 'Pardon me, divine creature,' i
he, 'there can be none. All I can do for you is
'much your due, and will give me ſo much pleaſu
'that there is no room for your gratitude.'——'
'deed, my lord,' anſwered ſhe, 'you may obt
'my gratitude, my good opinion, every kind thou
'and with which it is in my power to beſtow; n
'you may obtain them with eaſe; for ſure to a
'nerous mind it muſt be eaſy to grant my requ
'Let me beſeech you then, to ceaſe a purſuit,
'which you can never have any ſucceſs. For yo
'own ſake as well as mine, I entreat this favo
'for ſure you are too noble to have any pleaſure
'tormenting an unhappy creature. What can yo
'lordſhip propoſe but uneaſineſs to yourſelf, by
'perſeverance, which, upon my honour, upon
'ſoul, cannot, ſhall not prevail with me, whate
'diſtreſſes you may drive me to?' Here my l
fetched a deep ſigh, and then ſaid,——'Is it th

'Madam, that I am ſo unhappy to be the object of 'your diſlike and ſcorn; or will you pardon me if I 'ſuſpect there is ſome other?'— ——Here he heſitated, and Sophia anſwered with ſome ſpirit, 'My 'lord, I ſhall not be accountable to you for the reaſons of my conduct. I am obliged to your lordſhip 'for the generous offer you have made; I own it is 'beyond either my deſerts or expectations; yet I 'hope, my lord, you will not inſiſt on my reaſons, 'when I declare I cannot accept it.' Lord Fellamar returned much to this, which we do not perfectly underſtand, and perhaps it could not all be ſtrictly reconciled either to ſenſe or grammar; but he concluded his ranting ſpeech with ſaying, 'That if the 'had pre-engaged herſelf to any gentleman, howe'ver unhappy it ſhould make him, he ſhould think 'himſelf bound in honour to deſiſt.' Perhaps my lord laid too much emphaſis on the word gentleman; for we cannot elſe well account for the indignation with which he inſpired Sophia, who, in her anſwer, ſeemed greatly to reſent ſome affront he had given her.

While ſhe was ſpeaking, with her voice more raiſed than uſual, Mrs Weſtern came into the room, the fire glaring in her cheeks, and the flames burſting from her eyes. 'I am aſhamed,' ſays ſhe, 'my lord, 'of the reception which you have met with. I aſ'ſure your lordſhip we are all ſenſible of the honour 'done us; and I muſt tell you, Miſs Weſtern, the 'family expect a different behaviour from you.' Here my lord interfered on behalf of the young lady, but to no purpoſe; the aunt proceeded till Sophia pulled out her handkerchief, threw herſelf into a chair, and burſt into a violent fit of tears.

The remainder of the converſation between Mrs Weſtern and his lordſhip, till the latter withdrew, conſiſted of bitter lamentations on his ſide, and on hers of the ſtrongeſt aſſurances that her niece ſhould and would conſent to all he wiſhed. 'Indeed, my 'lord,' ſays ſhe, 'the girl hath had a fooliſh edu'cation, neither adapted to her fortune nor her fa'mily. Her father, I'm ſorry to ſay it, is to blame

'for every thing. The girl hath filly country no-
'tions of bafhfulnefs. Nothing elfe, my lord, upo
'my honour; I am convinced fhe hath a good un-
'derftanding at the bottom, and will be brought to
'reafon.'

This laft fpeech was made in the abfence of So-phia; for fhe had fome time before left the room with more appearance of paffion than fhe had ever fhewn on any occafion; and now his lordfhip, after many expreffions of thanks to Mrs Weftern, many ardent profeffions of paffion which nothing could conquer, and many affurances of perfeverance, which Mrs Weftern highly encouraged, took his leave for this time.

Before we relate what now paffed between Mrs Weftern and Sophia, it may be proper to mention an unfortunate accident which had happened, and which had occafioned the return of Mrs Weftern with fo much fury, as we have feen.

The reader then muft know, that the maid who at prefent attended on Sophia, was recommended by lady Bellafton, with whom fhe had lived for fome time in the capacity of a comb-brufh; fhe was a very fenfible girl, and had received the ftricteft inftructions to watch her young lady very carefully. Thefe inftructions, we are forry to fay, were communicated to her by Mrs Honour, into whofe favour lady Bellafton had now fo ingratiated herfelf, that the violent affection which the good waiting-woman had formerly borne to Sophia, was entirely obliterated by that great attachment which fhe had to her new miftrefs.

Now when Mrs Miller was departed, Betty (for that was the name of the girl) returning to her young lady, found her very attentively engaged in reading a long letter; and the vifible emotions which fhe betrayed on that occafion, might have well accounted for fome fufpicions which the girl entertained; but indeed they had yet a ftronger foundation, for fhe had overheard the whole fcene which paffed between Sophia and Mrs Miller.

Mrs Weftern was acquainted with all this matter by Betty, who, after receiving many commendations

and

and ſome rewards for her fidelity, was ordered, that if the woman who brought the letter, came again, ſhe ſhould introduce her to Mrs Weſtern herſelf.

Unluckily Mrs Miller returned at the very time when Sophia was engaged with his lordſhip. Betty, according to order, ſent her directly to the aunt; who being miſtreſs of ſo many circumſtances relating to what had paſſed the day before, eaſily impoſed upon the poor woman to believe that Sophia had communicated the whole affair; and ſo pumped every thing out of her which ſhe knew, relating to the letter, and relating to Jones.

This poor creature might indeed be called ſimplicity itſelf. She was one of that order of mortals, who are apt to believe every thing which is ſaid to them: to whom nature hath neither indulged the offenſive nor defenſive weapons of deceit, and who are conſequently liable to be impoſed upon by any one, who will only be at the expence of a little falſehood for that purpoſe. Mrs Weſtern having drained Mrs Miller of all ſhe knew, which indeed was but little, but which was ſufficient to make the aunt ſuſpect a great deal, diſmiſſed her with aſſurances that Sophia would not ſee her, that ſhe would ſend no anſwer to the letter, nor ever receive another; nor did ſhe ſuffer her to depart without a handſome lecture on the merits of an office, to which ſhe could afford no better name than that of procureſs.——This diſcovery had greatly diſcompoſed her temper, when coming into an apartment next to that in which the lovers were, ſhe overheard Sophia very warmly proteſting againſt his lordſhip's addreſſes. At which, the rage already kindled burſt forth, and ſhe ruſhed in upon her niece in a moſt furious manner, as we have already deſcribed, together with what paſt at that time till his lordſhip's departure.

No ſooner was lord Fellamar gone, than Mrs Weſtern returned to Sophia, whom ſhe upbraided in the moſt bitter terms, for the ill uſe ſhe had made of the confidence repoſed in her; and for her treachery in converſing with a man with whom ſhe had

offered but the day before to bind herself in the most solemn oath, never more to have any conversation. Sophia protested she had maintained no such conversation. 'How, how! Miss Western,' said the aunt, 'will you deny your receiving a letter from him yes-'terday?' 'A letter, Madam!' answered Sophia, somewhat surprised. 'It is not very well bred, 'Miss,' replies the aunt, 'to repeat my words. I 'say a letter, and insist upon your shewing it me im-'mediately.' 'I scorn a lie, Madam,' said Sophia, 'I did receive a letter, but it was without my desire, 'and indeed I may say against my consent.' 'Indeed, 'indeed, Miss,' cries the aunt, 'you ought to be a-'shamed of owning you had received it at all; but 'where is the letter? for I will see it.'

To this peremptory demand, Sophia paused some time before she returned an answer; and at last only excused herself by declaring she had not the letter in her pocket, which was indeed true; upon which her aunt losing all manner of patience, asked her niece this short question, whether she would resolve to marry lord Fellamar or no? to which she received the strongest negative. Mrs Western then replied with an oath, or something very like one, that she would early the next morning deliver her back into her father's hand.

Sophia then began to reason with her aunt in the following manner: 'Why, Madam, must I of neces-'sity be forced to marry at all? Consider how cruel 'you would have thought it in your own case, and 'how much kinder your parents were in leaving you 'to your liberty. What have I done to forfeit this 'liberty? I will never marry contrary to my father's 'consent, nor without asking yours.——— 'And when I ask the consent of either improperly, 'it will be then time enough to force some other 'marriage upon me.' 'Can I bear to hear this,' cries Mrs Western, 'from a girl who hath now a 'letter from a murderer in her pocket!' 'I have 'no such letter I promise you,' answered Sophia, 'and if he be a murderer, he will soon be in no

'condi-

condition to give you any further disturbance.' 'How, Miss Western,' said the aunt, 'have you the assurance to speak of him in this manner, to own your affection for such a villain to my face!' 'Sure, Madam,' said Sophia, 'you put a very strange construction on my words.' 'Indeed, Miss Western,' cries the lady, 'I cannot bear this usage; you have learnt of your father this manner of treating me; he hath taught you to give me the lie. He hath totally ruined you by his false system of education; and please Heaven he shall have the comfort of its fruits: for once more I declare to you, that to-morrow morning I will carry you back. I will withdraw all my forces from the field, and remain henceforth, like the wise King of Prussia, in a state of perfect neutrality. You are both too wise to be regulated by my measures: so prepare yourself; for to-morrow morning you shall evacuate this house.'

Sophia remonstrated all she could; but her aunt was deaf to all she said. In this resolution, therefore, we must at present leave her, as there seems to be no hopes of bringing her to change it.

CHAP. IX.

What happened to Mr Jones in the prison.

MR JONES passed above twenty-four melancholy hours by himself, unless when relieved by the company of Partridge, before Mr Nightingale returned; not that this worthy young man had deserted or forgot his friend; for indeed, he had been much the greatest part of the time employed in his service.

He had heard upon enquiry that the only person who had seen the beginning of the unfortunate rencounter, were a crew belonging to a man of war, which then lay at Deptford. To Deptford, therefore, he went in search of this crew, where he was informed that the men he sought after, were all gone ashore. He then traced them from place to place, till at last he found two of them drinking together,

with a third perſon, at a hedge-tavern near Alders-gate.

Nightingale deſired to ſpeak with Jones by himſelf, (for Partridge was in the room when he came in.) As ſoon as they were alone, Nightingale taking Jones by the hand, cried, 'Come, my brave friend, be not 'too much dejected at what I am going to tell you—'I am ſorry I am the meſſenger of bad news; but I 'think it my duty to tell you.' 'I gueſs already what 'that bad news is,' cries Jones. 'The poor gentle-'man then is dead.'——'I hope not,' anſwered Nightingale. 'He was alive this morning; though I 'will not flatter you; I fear, from the accounts I 'could get, that his wound is mortal. But if the af-'fair be exactly as you told it, your own remorſe 'would be all you have reaſon to apprehend, let what 'would happen: but forgive me, my dear Tom, if I 'entreat you to make the worſt of your ſtory to your 'friends. If you diſguiſe any thing to us, you will 'only be an enemy to yourſelf.'

'What reaſon, my dear Jack, have I ever given 'you,' ſaid Jones, 'to ſtab me with ſo cruel a ſuſpi-'cion?' 'Have patience,' cries Nightingale, 'and 'I will tell you all. After the moſt diligent enquiry 'I could make, I at laſt met with two of the fellows 'who were preſent at this unhappy accident, and I 'am ſorry to ſay, they do not relate the ſtory ſo 'much in your favour as you yourſelf have told it.' 'Why, what do they ſay?' cries Jones. 'Indeed 'what I am ſorry to repeat, as I am afraid of the 'conſequence of it to you. They ſay that they were 'at too great a diſtance to overhear any words that 'paſſed between you; but they both agree that the 'firſt blow was given by you.' 'Then, upon my 'ſoul,' anſwered Jones, 'they injure me. He not 'only ſtruck me firſt, but ſtruck me without the leaſt 'provocation. What ſhould induce thoſe villains to 'accuſe me falſely?' 'Nay, that I cannot gueſs,' ſaid Nightingale; 'and if you yourſelf, and I who am 'heartily your friend, cannot conceive a reaſon why 'they ſhould belie you, what reaſon will an indiffe-

'rent

rent court of juſtice be able to aſſign, why they ſhould not believe them? I repeated the queſtion to them ſeveral times, and ſo did another gentleman who was preſent, who, I believe, is a ſeafaring man, and who really acted a very friendly part by you; for he begged them often to conſider, that there was the life of a man in the caſe; and aſked them over and over if they were certain; to which they both anſwered, that they were, and would abide by their evidence upon oath. For Heaven's ſake, my dear friend, recollect yourſelf; for if this ſhould appear to be the fact, it will be your buſineſs to think in time of making the beſt of your intereſt. I would not ſhock you; but you know, I believe, the ſeverity of the law, whatever verbal provocations may have been given you.' Alas! my friend,' cries Jones, 'what intereſt hath ſuch a wretch as I? Beſides, do you think I would even wiſh to live with the reputation of a murderer? If I had any friends, (as, alas! I have none), could I have the confidence to ſolicit them to ſpeak in the behalf of a man condemned for the blackeſt crime in human nature? Believe me I have no ſuch hope; but I have ſome reliance on a throne ſtill greatly ſuperior; which will, I am certain, afford me all the protection I merit.'

He then concluded with many ſolemn and vehement proteſtations of the truth of what he had at firſt aſſerted.

The faith of Nightingale was now again ſtaggered, and began to incline to credit his friend, when Mrs Miller appeared, and made a ſorrowful report of the ſucceſs of her embaſſy; which when Jones had heard, he cried out moſt heroically, 'Well, my friend, I am now indifferent as to what ſhall happen, at leaſt with regard to my life; and if it be the will of Heaven that I ſhall make an atonement with that for the blood I have ſpilt, I hope the Divine Goodneſs will one day ſuffer my honour to be cleared, and that the words of a dying man, at leaſt, will be believed, ſo far as to juſtify his character.'

A very mournful ſcene now paſt between the pri-ſoner and his freinds, at which, as few readers would have been pleaſed to be preſent, ſo few, I believe, will deſire to hear it particularly related. We will therefore, paſs on to the entrance of the turnkey, who acquainted Jones that there was a lady without who deſired to ſpeak with him, when he was at lei-ſure.

Jones declared his ſurpriſe at this meſſage. He ſaid, 'He knew no lady in the world whom he could poſ-'ſibly expect to ſee there.' However, as he ſaw no reaſon to decline ſeeing any perſon, Mrs Miller and Mr Nightingale preſently took their leave, and he gave orders to have the lady admitted.

If Jones was ſurpriſed at the news of a viſit from a lady, how greatly was he aſtoniſhed when he diſco-vered this lady to be no other than Mrs Waters! In this aſtoniſhment then we ſhall leave him a while, in order to cure the ſurpriſe of the reader, who will likewiſe, probably, not a little wonder at the arrival of this lady.

Who this Mrs Waters was, the reader pretty well knows; what ſhe was, he muſt be perfectly ſatisfied. He will therefore be pleaſed to remember, that this lady departed from Upton in the ſame coach with Mr Fitzpatrick and the other Iriſh gentleman, and in their company travelled to Bath.

Now there was a certain office in the gift of Mr Fitzpatrick at that time vacant, namely, that of a wife; for the lady who had lately filled that office had reſigned, or at leaſt deſerted her duty. Mr Fitz-patrick having therefore thoroughly examined Mrs Waters on the road, found her extremely fit for the place, which, on their arrival at Bath, he preſently conferred upon her, and ſhe, without any ſcruple accepted. As huſband and wife this gentleman and lady continued together all the time they ſtayed at Bath, and as huſband and wife they arrived together in town.

Whether Mr Fitzpatrick was ſo wiſe a man as not to part with one good thing till he had ſecured ano-ther, which he had at preſent only a proſpect of regaining

regaining; or whether Mrs Waters had ſo well diſcharged her office, that he intended ſtill to retain her as principal, and to make his wife (as is often the caſe) only her deputy. I will not ſay; but certain it is, he never mentioned his wife to her, never communicated to her the letter given him by Mrs Weſtern, nor ever once hinted his purpoſe of repoſſeſſing his wife: much leſs did he ever mention the name of Jones. For tho' he intended to fight with him where-ever he met him, he did not imitate thoſe prudent perſons who think a wife, a mother, a ſiſter, or ſometimes a whole family, the ſafeſt ſeconds on theſe occaſions. The firſt account therefore which ſhe had of all this, was delivered to her from his lips, after he was brought home from the tavern where his wound had been dreſſed.

As Mr Fitzpatrick, however, had not the cleareſt way of telling a ſtory at any time, and was now, perhaps, a little more confuſed than uſual, it was ſome time before ſhe diſcovered that the gentleman who had given him this wound was the very ſame perſon from whom her heart had received a wound, which though not of a mortal kind, was yet ſo deep that it had left a conſiderable ſcar behind it. But no ſooner was ſhe acquainted that Mr Jones himſelf was the man who had been committed to the Gate-houſe for this ſuppoſed murder, than ſhe took the firſt opportunity of committing Mr Fitzpatrick to the care of his nurſe, and haſtened away to viſit the conqueror.

She now entered the room with an air of gaiety, which received an immediate check from the melancholy aſpect of poor Jones, who ſtarted and bleſſed himſelf when he ſaw her. Upon which ſhe ſaid, 'Nay, I do not wonder at your ſurprize; I believe you did not expect to ſee me; for few gentlemen are troubled here with viſits from any lady, unleſs a wife. You ſee the power you have over me, Mr Jones. Indeed, I little thought when we parted at Upton, that our next meeting would have been in ſuch a place.' 'Indeed, Madam,' ſays Jones, 'I muſt look upon this viſit as kind? few will follow the miſerable, eſpecially to ſuch diſmal habitations.' 'I proteſt, Mr Jones,' ſays ſhe, 'I can hardly perſuade

'ſuade myſelf you are the ſame agreeable fellow
'ſaw at Upton. Why, your face is more miſerab
'than any dungeon in the univerſe. What can b
'the matter with you?' 'I thought, Madam,' ſai
Jones, 'as you knew of my being here, you kne
'the unhappy reaſon.' 'Pugh,' ſays ſhe, 'you ha
'pinked a man in a duel, that's all.' Jones expre
ſome indignation at this levity, and ſpoke with t
utmoſt contrition for what had happened. To whi
ſhe anſwered, 'Well then, Sir, if you take it ſo mu
'to heart, I will relieve you; the gentleman is n
'dead; and, I am pretty confident, is in no dang
'of dying. The ſurgeon indeed, who firſt dre
'him was a young fellow, and ſeemed deſirous of r
'preſenting his caſe to be as bad as poſſible, that h
'might have the more honour from curing him; b
'the king's ſurgeon hath ſeen him ſince, and ſays, u
'leſs from a fever, of which there are at preſent m
'ſymptoms, he apprehends not the leaſt danger o
'life.' Jones ſhewed great ſatisfaction in his coun
nance at this report; upon which ſhe affirmed the tru
of it, adding, 'By the moſt extraordinary accident
'the world I lodge at the ſame houſe, and have ſe
'the gentleman; and I promiſe you he doth you ju
'tice, and ſays, Whatever be the conſequence, that
'was entirely the aggreſſor, and that you was not
'the leaſt to blame.'

Jones expreſſed the utmoſt ſatisfaction at the accou
which Mrs Waters brought him. He then inform
her of many things which ſhe well knew before, as wh
Mr Fitzpatrick was, the occaſion of his reſentment, &
He likewiſe told her ſeveral facts of which ſhe was i
norant, as the adventure of the muff, and other par
culars, only concealing the name of Sophia. He th
lamented the follies and vices of which he had be
guilty; every one of which, he ſaid, had been atten
ed with ſuch ill conſequences, that he ſhould be u
pardonable if he did not take warning, and quit tho
vicious courſes for the future. He laſtly conclude
with aſſuring her of his reſolution to ſin no mor
leſt a worſe thing ſhould happen to him.

Mrs Waters with great pleaſantry ridiculed all thi

the effects of low ſpirits and confinement. She re-ated ſome witticiſms about the devil when he was k, and told him, 'She doubted not but ſhortly to ſee him at liberty, and as lively a fellow as ever; nd then,' ſays ſhe, 'I don't queſtion but your con-ſcience will be ſafely delivered of all theſe qualms that it is now ſo ſick in breeding.'

Many more things of this kind ſhe uttered, ſome of hich it would do her no great honour, in the opinion of me readers, to remember; nor are we quite certain t that the anſwers made by Jones would be treated h ridicule by others. We ſhall therefore ſuppreſs reſt of this converſation, and only obſerve that it ded at laſt with perfect innocence, and much more the ſatisfaction of Jones than of the lady: for the mer was greatly tranſported with the news ſhe had ought him; but the latter was not altogether ſo eaſed with the penitential behaviour of a man whom had at her firſt interview conceived a very different inion of from what ſhe now entertained of him.

Thus the melancholy occaſioned by the report of Nightingale was pretty well effaced; but the de-ion into which Mrs Miller had thrown him ſtill tinued. The account ſhe gave, ſo well tallied h the words of Sophia herſelf in her letter, that he de not the leaſt doubt but that ſhe had diſcloſed his ter to her aunt, and had taken a fixed reſolution to ndon him. The torments this thought gave him re to be equalled only by a piece of news which for-e yet had in ſtore for him, and which we ſhall com-nicate in the ſecond chapter of the enſuing book.

THE

THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

BOOK XVIII.

Containing about six days.

CHAP. I.

A farewel to the reader.

WE are now, reader, arrived at the last stage of our long journey. As we have therefore travelled together through so many pages, let us behave to one another like fellow travellers in a stage-coach, who have passed several days in the company of each other; and who, notwithstanding any bickerings or little animosities which may have occurred on the road, generally make all up at last, and alight, for the last time, into their vehicle with cheerfulness and good-humour; since after this one stage it may possibly happen to us, as it commonly happens to them, never to meet more.

As I have here taken up this simile, give me leave to carry it a little farther. I intend then in this last book to imitate the good company I have mentioned in their last journey. Now, it is well known, that all jokes and raillery are at this time laid aside: whatever characters any of the passengers have for the jest sake personated on the road, are now thrown off, and the conversation is usually plain and serious.

In the ſame manner, if I have now and then, in the courſe of this work, indulged any pleaſantry for thy entertainment, I ſhall here lay it down. The variety of matter, indeed, which I ſhall be obliged to cram into this book, will afford no room for any of thoſe ludicrous obſervations which I have elſewhere made, and which may ſometimes, perhaps, have prevented thee from taking a nap when it was beginning to ſteal upon thee. In this laſt book thou wilt find nothing (or at moſt very little) of that nature. All will be plain narrative only; and, indeed, when thou haſt peruſed the many great events which this book will produce, thou wilt think the number of pages contained in it, ſcarce ſufficient to tell the ſtory.

And now, my friend, I take this opportunity (as I ſhall have no other) of heartily wiſhing thee well. If I have been an entertaining companion to thee, I promiſe thee it is what I have deſired. If in any thing I have offended, it was really without any intention. Some things perhaps here ſaid may have hit thee or thy friends; but I do moſt ſolemnly declare they were not pointed at thee or them. I queſtion not but thou haſt been told, among other ſtories of me, that thou haſt to travel with a very ſcurrilous fellow: but whoever told thee ſo, did me an injury. No man deteſts and deſpiſes ſcurrility more than myſelf; nor hath any man more reaſon, for none hath ever been treated with more: and what is a very ſevere fate, I have had ſome of the abuſive writings of thoſe very men fathered upon me, who in other of their works have abuſed me themſelves with the utmoſt virulence.

All theſe works, however, I am well convinced, will be dead long before this page ſhall offer itſelf to thy peruſal: for however ſhort the period may be of my own performances, they will moſt probably outlive their own infirm Author, and the weakly productions of his abuſive cotemporaries.

CHAP. II.

Containing a very tragical incident.

WHILE Jones was employed in thoſe unpleaſant meditations, with which we left him tormenting himſelf, Partridge came ſtumbling into the room, with his face paler than aſhes, his eyes fixed in his head, his hair ſtanding an end, and every limb trembling. In ſhort, he looked as he would have done had he ſeen a ſpectre, or had he indeed been a ſpectre himſelf.

Jones, who was little ſubject to fear, could not avoid being ſomewhat ſhocked at this ſudden appearance. He did indeed himſelf change colour, and his voice a little faultered, while he aſked him what was the matter.

'I hope, Sir,' ſaid Partridge, 'you will not be 'angry with me. Indeed I did not liſten, but I was 'obliged to ſtay in the outward room. I am ſure I 'wiſh I had been a hundred miles off, rather than 'have heard what I have heard.' 'Why, what is 'the matter?' ſaid Jones. 'The matter, Sir? O 'good Heaven!' anſwered Partridge, 'was that wo- 'man who is juſt gone out the woman who was with 'you at Upton?' 'She was, Partridge,' cries Jones. 'And did you really, Sir, go to bed with that wo- 'man?' ſaid he trembling—'I am afraid what paſſed 'between us is no ſecret,' ſaid Jones——'Nay, but 'pray, Sir, for Heaven's ſake, Sir, anſwer me,' cries Partridge. 'You know I did,' cries Jones.—'Why 'then the Lord have mercy upon your ſoul, and for- 'give you,' cries Partridge; 'but as ſure as I ſtand 'here alive, you have been a-bed with your own 'mother.'

Upon theſe words, Jones became in a moment a greater picture of horror than Partridge himſelf. He was indeed, for ſome time, ſtruck dumb with amaze- ment, and both ſtood ſtaring wildly at each other. At laſt his words found way, and in an interrupted voice he ſaid,——'How! how! What's this you 'tell me?' 'Nay, Sir,' cries Partridge, 'I have no 'breath

breath enough left to tell you now—but what I have ſaid is moſt certainly true.——That woman who now went out is your own mother. How unlucky was it for you, Sir, that I did not happen to ſee her at that time, to have prevented it? Sure the devil himſelf muſt have contrived to bring about this wickedneſs.'

'Sure,' cries Jones, 'fortune will never have done with me, till ſhe hath driven me to diſtraction. But why do I blame fortune? I am myſelf the cauſe of all my miſery. All the dreadful miſchiefs which have befallen me, are the conſequences only of my own folly and vice. What thou haſt told me, Partridge, hath almoſt deprived me of my ſenſes. And was this Mrs Waters then—But why do I aſk? For thou muſt certainly know her ——If thou haſt any affection for me; nay, if thou haſt any pity, let me beſeech thee to fetch this miſerable woman back again to me. O good heavens! Inceſt—— with a mother! To what am I reſerved?' He then fell into the moſt violent and frantic agonies of grief and deſpair, in which Partridge declared he would not leave him: but at laſt, having vented the firſt torrent of paſſion, he came a little to himſelf; and then having acquainted Partridge that he would find this wretched woman in the ſame houſe where the wounded gentleman was lodged, he diſpatched him in queſt of her.

If the reader will pleaſe to refreſh his memory, by returning to the ſcene at Upton in the ninth book, he will be apt to admire the many ſtrange accidents which unfortunately prevented any interview between Partridge and Mrs Waters, when ſhe ſpent a whole day there with Mr Jones. Inſtances of this kind we may frequently obſerve in life, where the greateſt events are produced by a nice train of little circumſtances; and more than one example of this may be diſcovered by the accurate eye, in this our hiſtory.

After a fruitleſs ſearch of two or three hours, Partridge returned back to his maſter, without having ſeen Mrs Waters. Jones, who was in a ſtate of deſperation at this delay, was almoſt raving mad when

he brought him this account. He was not long however in this condition, before he received the following letter.

"SIR,

"Since I left you, I have seen a gentleman, "from whom I have learnt something concerning "you, which greatly surprizes and affects me; but "as I have not at present leisure to communicate a "matter of such high importance, you must suspend "your curiosity till our next meeting, which shall be "the first moment I am able to see you. O Mr "Jones! little did I think, when I past that happy "day at Upton, the reflection upon which is like to "embitter all my future life, who it was to whom I "owed such perfect happiness. Believe me to be "ever sincerely your unfortunate

"J. Waters.

"*P. S.* I would have you comfort yourself as much "as possible; for Mr Fitzpatrick is in no manner of "danger; so that whatever other grievous crimes you "may have to repent of, the guilt of blood is not "among the number."

Jones having received the letter, let it drop (for he was unable to hold it, and indeed had scarce the use of any one of his faculties). Partridge took it up and having received consent by silence, read it likewise; nor had it upon him a less sensible effect. The pencil, and not the pen, should describe the horror which appeared in both their countenances. While they both remained speechless, the turnkey entered the room, and without taking any notice of what sufficiently discovered itself in the faces of them both, acquainted Jones that a man without desired to speak with him. This person was presently introduced, and was no other than Black George.

As sights of horror were not so usual to George as they were to the turnkey, he instantly saw the great disorder which appeared in the face of Jones. This he imputed to the accident that had happened, which

was reported in the very worſt light in Mr Weſtern's family; he concluded therefore that the gentleman was dead, and that Mr Jones was in a fair way of coming to a ſhameful end. A thought which gave him much uneaſineſs; for George was of a compaſſionate diſpoſition, and notwithſtanding a ſmall breach of friendſhip which he had been over-tempted to commit, was, in the main, not inſenſible of the obligations he had formerly received from Mr Jones.

The poor fellow therefore ſcarce refrained from a tear at the preſent ſight. He told Jones he was heartily ſorry for his misfortunes, and begged him to conſider, if he could be of any manner of ſervice. 'Perhaps, Sir,' ſaid he, 'you may want a little matter 'of money upon this occaſion; if you do, Sir, what 'little I have is heartily at your ſervice.'

Jones ſhook him very heartily by the hand, and gave him many thanks for the kind offer he had made; but anſwered, 'He had not the leaſt want of 'that kind.' Upon which George began to preſs his ſervices more eagerly than before. Jones again thanked him, with aſſurances that he wanted nothing which was in the power of any man living to give. 'Come, come, my good maſter,' anſwered George, 'do not take the matter ſo much to heart. Things 'may end better than you imagine; to be ſure you 'ant the firſt gentleman who hath killed a man, and 'yet come off.' 'You are wide of the matter, George,' ſaid Partridge, 'the gentleman is not 'dead, nor like to die. Don't diſturb my maſter, 'at preſent, for he is troubled about a matter in 'which it is not in your power to do him any good.' 'You don't know what I may be able to do, Mr 'Partridge,' anſwered George; 'if his concern is 'about my young lady, I have ſome news to tell my 'maſter.'——'What do you ſay, Mr George?' cried Jones: 'hath any thing lately happened in 'which my Sophia is concerned? My Sophia! how 'dares ſuch a wretch as I mention her ſo prophanely.'——'I hope ſhe will be yours yet,' anſwered George.——'Why, yes, Sir, I have ſomething to tell 'you about her. Madam Weſtern hath juſt brought

'Madam Sophia home, and there hath been a ter-
'rible to do. I could not poſſibly learn the very
'right of it; but my maſter he hath been in a vaſt
'big paſſion, and ſo was Madam Weſtern, and I
'heard her ſay, as ſhe went out of doors into her
'chair, that ſhe would never ſet her foot in maſter's
'houſe again. I don't know what is the matter, not
'I, but every thing was very quiet when I came out;
'but Robin, who waited at ſupper, ſaid he had ne-
'ver ſeen the 'ſquire for a long while in ſuch good
'humour with young madam; that he kiſſed her
'ſeveral times, and ſwore ſhe ſhould be her own
'miſtreſs, and he never would think of confining her
'any more. I thought this news would pleaſe you,
'and ſo I ſlipped out, though it was ſo late, to in-
'form you of it.' Mr Jones aſſured George that it did greatly pleaſe him; for though he ſhould never more preſume to lift his eyes towards that incomparable creature, nothing could ſo much relieve his miſery as the ſatisfaction he ſhould always have, in hearing of her welfare.

The reſt of the converſation which paſſed at the viſit, is not important enough to be here related. The reader will therefore forgive us this abrupt breaking off, and be pleaſed to hear how this great good-will of the 'Squire towards his daughter was brought about.

Mrs Weſtern, on her firſt arrival at her brother's lodging, began to ſet forth the great honours and advantages which would accrue to the family by the match with lord Fellamar, which her niece had abſolutely refuſed; in which refuſal when the 'Squire took the part of his daughter, ſhe fell immediately into the moſt violent paſſion, and ſo irritated and provoked the 'Squire, that neither his patience nor his prudence could bear it any longer; upon which there enſued between them both ſo warm a bout at altercation, that perhaps the regions of Billinſgate never equalled it. In the heat of this ſcolding Mrs Weſtern departed, and had conſequently no leiſure to acquaint her brother with the letter which Sophia received, which might have poſſibly produced ill effects; but to

ſay truth, I believe it never once occurred to her memory at this time.

When Mrs Weſtern was gone, Sophia, who had been hitherto ſilent, as well indeed from neceſſity as inclination, began to return the compliment which her father had made her, in taking her part againſt her aunt, by taking his likewiſe againſt the lady. This was the firſt time of her ſo doing, and it was in the higheſt degree acceptable to the 'ſquire. Again he remembered that Mr Allworthy had inſiſted on an entire relinquiſhment of all violent means; and indeed, as he made no doubt but that Jones would be hanged, he did not in the leaſt queſtion ſucceeding with his daughter by fair means; he now therefore once more gave a looſe to his natural fondneſs for her, which had ſuch an effect on the dutiful, grateful, tender and affectionate heart of Sophia, that had her honour given to Jones, and ſomething elſe perhaps in which he was concerned, been removed, I much doubt whether ſhe would not have ſacrificed herſelf to a man ſhe did not like, to have obliged her father. She promiſed him ſhe would make it the whole buſineſs of her life to oblige him, and would never marry any man againſt his conſent; which brought the old man ſo near to his higheſt happineſs, that he was reſolved to take the other ſtep, and went to bed completely drunk.

CHAP. III.

Allworthy viſits old Nightingale; with a ſtrange diſcovery that he made on that occaſion.

THE morning after theſe things had happened, Mr Allworthy went, according to his promiſe, to viſit old Nightingale, with whom his authority was ſo great, that after having ſat with him three hours, he at laſt prevailed with him to conſent to ſee his ſon.

Here an accident happened of a very extraordinary kind; one indeed of thoſe ſtrange chances, whence very good and grave men have concluded that Providence often interpoſes in the diſcovery of the moſt ſecret villainy, in order to caution men from quitting

the

the paths of honesty, however warily they tread in those of vice.

Mr Allworthy, at his entrance into Mr Nightingale's, saw Black George; he took no notice of him, nor did Black George imagine he had perceived him.

However, when their conversation on the principal point was over, Allworthy asked Nightingale whether he knew one George Seagrim, and upon what business he came to his house. 'Yes,' answered Nightingale, 'I know him very well, and a most extraordinary fellow he is, who, in these days, hath been able to hoard up 500 l. from renting a very small estate of 30 l. a year.' 'And is this the story which he hath told you?' cries Allworthy. 'Nay, it is true, I promise you,' said Nightingale, 'for I have the money now in my own hands, in five Bank bills, which I am to lay out either in a mortgage, or in some purchase in the North of England.' The Bank bills were no sooner produced at Allworthy's desire, than he blessed himself at the strangeness of the discovery. He presently told Nightingale, that these Bank bills were formerly his, and then acquainted him with the whole affair. As there are no men who complain more of the frauds of business than highwaymen, gamesters, and other thieves of that kind; so there are none who so bitterly exclaim against the frauds of gamesters, &c. as usurers, brokers, and other thieves of this kind; whether it be that the one way of cheating is a discountenance or reflection upon the other, or that money, which is the common mistress of all cheats, makes them regard each other in the light of rivals; but Nightingale no sooner heard the story, than he exclaimed against the fellow in terms much severer than the justice and honesty of Allworthy had bestowed on him.

Allworthy desired Nightingale to retain both the money and the secret till he should hear farther from him; and if he would in the mean time see the fellow, that he would not take the least notice to him of the discovery which he had made. He then returned to his lodgings, where he found Mrs Millar

a very dejected condition, on account of the information she had received from her son-in-law. Mr Allworthy, with great chearfulness, told her that he had much good news to communicate; and with little further preface, acquainted her, that he had brought Mr Nightingale to consent to see his son, and did not in the least doubt to effect a perfect reconciliation between them; though he found the father more soured by another accident of the same kind, which had happened in his family. He then mentioned the running away of the uncle's daughter, which he had been told by the old gentleman, and which Mrs Miller, and her son-in-law, did not yet know.

The reader may suppose Mrs Miller received this account with great thankfulness, and no less pleasure; but so uncommon was her friendship to Jones, that I am not certain whether the uneasiness she suffered for his sake, did not overbalance her satisfaction at hearing a piece of news tending so much to the happiness of her own family; nor whether even this very news, as it reminded her of the obligations she had to Jones, did not hurt as well as please her; when her grateful heart said to her, 'While my own family is happy, how miserable is the poor creature, to whose generosity we owe the beginning of all this happiness!'

Allworthy having left her a little while to chew the cud (if I may use that expression) on these first tidings, told her, he had still something more to impart, which he believed would give her pleasure. 'I think,' said he, 'I have discovered a pretty considerable treasure belonging to the young gentleman, your friend; but perhaps, indeed, his present situation may be such that it will be of no service to him.' The latter part of the speech gave Mrs Miller to understand who was meant, and she answered with a sigh, 'I hope not, Sir.' 'I hope so too,' cries Allworthy, 'with all my heart; but my nephew told me this morning, he had heard a very bad account of the affair.' —— 'Good heaven! Sir,' said she, —— Well, I must not speak, and yet it is certainly very hard to be obliged

'to

'to hold one's tongue when one hears.'——'Ma-
'dam,' says Allworthy, 'you may say whatever yo
'please, you know me too well to think I have a pre
'judice against any one: and as for that young ma
'I assure you I should be heartily pleased to find h
'could acquit himself of every thing, and particular
'of this sad affair. You can testify the affection
'have formerly borne him. The world, I know
'censured me for loving him so much. I did no
'withdraw that affection from him without thinkin
'I had the justest cause. Believe me, Mrs Miller
'I should be glad to find I have been mistaken.' Mr
Miller was going eagerly to reply, when a servan
acquainted her a gentleman without desired to spea
with her immediately. Allworthy then enquired fo
his nephew, and was told that he had been for som
time in his room with the gentleman who had used t
come to him, and whom Mr Allworthy guessin
rightly to be Mr Dowling, he desired presently to spea
with him.

When Dowling attended, Allworthy put the ca
of the bank-notes to him, without mentioning an
name, and asked in what manner such a person mig
be punished. To which Dowling answered, he thoug
he might be indicted on the Black Act; but said, as
was a matter of some nicety, it would be proper to g
to council. He said he was to attend council presen
ly upon an affair of Mr Western's, and if Mr Allwo
thy pleased, he would lay the case before them. Th
was agreed to; and then Mrs Miller opening th
door, cried, 'I ask pardon, I did not know you ha
'company;' but Allworthy desired her to come i
saying, he had finished his business. Upon which M
Dowling withdrew, and Mrs Miller introduced M
Nightingale the younger, to return thanks for th
great kindness done him by Allworthy: but the h
scarce patience to let the young gentleman finish h
speech before she interrupted him, saying, 'O Si
'Mr Nightingale brings great news about poor M
'Jones; he hath been to see the wounded gentlema
'who is out of all danger of death, and what is mo
'declar

declares he fell upon poor Mr Jones himſelf, and beat him. I am ſure, Sir, you would not have Mr Jones be a coward. If I was a man myſelf, I am ſure if any man was to ſtrike me, I ſhould draw my ſword. Do pray, my dear, tell Mr Allworthy, tell him all yourſelf.' Nightingale then confirmed what Mrs Miller had ſaid; and concluded with many handſome things of Jones, who was, he ſaid, one of the beſt-natured fellows in the world, and not in the leaſt inclined to be quarrelſome. Here Nightingale was going to ceaſe, when Mrs Miller again begged him to relate all the many dutiful expreſſions he had heard him make uſe of towards Mr Allworthy, 'To ſay the utmoſt good of Mr Allworthy,' cries Nightingale, 'is doing no more than ſtrict juſtice, and can have no merit in it; but indeed I muſt ſay, no man can be more ſenſible of the obligations he hath to ſo good a man than is poor Jones. Indeed, Sir, I am convinced the weight of your diſpleaſure is the heavieſt burden he lies under. He hath often lamented it to me, and hath as often proteſted in the moſt ſolemn manner he hath never been intentionally guilty of any offence towards you; nay, he hath ſworn that he would rather die a thouſand deaths than he would have his conſcience upbraid him with one diſreſpectful, ungrateful, or undutiful thought towards you. But I aſk pardon, Sir, I am afraid I preſume, to intermeddle too far in ſo tender a point.' 'You have ſpoke no more than what a Chriſtian ought,' cries Mrs Miller. 'Indeed, Mr Nightingale,' anſwered Allworthy, 'I applaud your generous friendſhip, and I wiſh he may merit it of you. I confeſs I am glad to hear the report you bring from this unfortunate gentleman; and if that matter ſhould turn out to be as you repreſent it (and indeed I doubt nothing of what you ſay) I may perhaps, in time, be brought to think better than lately I have of this young man; for this good gentlewoman here, nay all who know me, can witneſs that I loved him as dearly as if he had been my own ſon. Indeed I have conſidered him as a child

'ſent

'ſent by fortune to my care. I ſtill remember the
'innocent, the helpleſs ſituation in which I found
'him. I feel the tender preſſure of his little hand
'at this moment. — He was my darling, indeed he
'was.' At which words he ceaſed, and the tears ſtood in his eyes.

As the anſwer which Mrs Miller made may lead us into freſh matters, we will here ſtop to account for the viſible alteration in Mr Allworthy's mind, and the abatement of his anger to Jones. Revolutions of this kind, it is true, do frequently occur in hiſtories and dramatic writers, for no other reaſon than becauſe the hiſtory or play draws to a concluſion, and are juſtified by authority of authors; yet though we inſiſt upon as much authority as any author whatever, we ſhall uſe this power very ſparingly, and never but when we are driven to it by neceſſity, which we do not at preſent foreſee will happen in this work.

This alteration then in the mind of Mr Allworthy was occaſioned by a letter he had juſt received from Mr Square, and which we ſhall give the reader in the beginning of the next chapter.

CHAP. IV.

Containing two letters in very different ſtiles.

"My worthy friend,

"I Informed you in my laſt, that I was forbidden "the uſe of the waters, as they were found by ex"perience rather to increaſe than leſſen the ſymptoms "of my diſtemper. I muſt now acquaint you with a "piece of news, which, I believe, will afflict my friend "more than it hath afflicted me. Dr Harrington "and Dr Brewſter have informed me, that there is no "hopes of my recovery.

"I have ſomewhere read, that the great uſe of "philoſophy is to learn to die. I will not therefore "ſo far diſgrace mine, as to ſhew any ſurpriſe at "receiving a leſſon which I muſt be thought to have "ſo long ſtudied. Yet, to ſay the truth, one part

" of the Goſpel teaches this leſſon better than all the
" volumes of ancient or modern philoſophers. The
" aſſurance it gives us of another life is a much
" ſtronger ſupport to a good mind, than all the con-
" ſolations that are drawn from the neceſſity of na-
" ture, the emptineſs or ſatiety of our enjoyments
" here, or any other topic of thoſe declamations
" which are ſometimes capable of arming our minds
" with a ſtubborn patience in bearing the thoughts of
" death; but never of raiſing them to a real con-
" tempt of it, and much leſs of making us think
" it is a real good. I would not here be underſtood
" to throw the horrid cenſure of atheiſm, or even
" the abſolute denial of immortality, on all who are
" called philoſophers. Many of that ſect, as well
" antient as modern, have, from the light of reaſon,
" diſcovered ſome hopes of a future ſtate; but, in
" reality, that light was ſo faint and glimmering,
" and the hopes were ſo uncertain and precarious,
" that it may be juſtly doubted on which ſide their
" belief turned. Plato himſelf concludes his Phæ-
" don with declaring, that his beſt arguments amount
" only to raiſe a probability: and Cicero himſelf
" ſeems rather to profeſs an inclination to believe,
" than any actual belief in the doctrines of immor-
" tality. As to myſelf, to be very ſincere with you,
" I never was much in earneſt in this faith, till I was
" in earneſt a Chriſtian.

" You will perhaps wonder at the latter expreſſion;
" but I aſſure you it hath not been till very lately,
" that I could, with truth, call myſelf ſo. The
" pride of philoſophy had intoxicated my reaſon,
" and the ſubliméſt of all wiſdom appeared to me,
" as it did to the Greeks of old, to be fooliſhneſs.
" God hath however been ſo gracious to ſhew me
" my error in time, and to bring me into the way of
" truth, before I ſunk into utter darkneſs for ever.

" I find myſelf beginning to grow weak I ſhall
" therefore haſten to the main purpoſe of this letter.

" When I reflect on the actions of my paſt life,
" I know of nothing which ſits heavier upon my

" conſcience, than the injuſtice I have been guilty of
" to that poor wretch your adopted ſon. I have in-
" deed not only connived at the villainy of others,
" but been myſelf active in injuſtice towards him.
" Believe me, my dear friend, when I tell you on
" the word of a dying man, he hath been baſely in-
" jured. As to the principal fact, upon the miſre-
" preſentation of which you diſcarded him, I ſolemnly
" aſſure you he is innocent. When you lay upon
" your ſuppoſed death-bed, he was the only perſon
" in the houſe who teſtified any real concern: and
" what happened afterwards aroſe from the wildneſs
" of his joy on your recovery: and I am ſorry to
" ſay it, from the baſeneſs of another perſon (but it
" is my deſire to juſtify the innocent, and to accuſe
" none.) Believe me, my friend, this young man
" hath the nobleſt generoſity of heart, the moſt per-
" fect capacity for friendſhip, the higheſt integrity,
" and indeed every virtue which can enoble a man.
" He hath ſome faults, but among them is not to be
" numbered the leaſt want of duty or gratitude to-
" wards you. On the contrary, I am ſatisfied, when
" you diſmiſſed him from your houſe, his heart bled
" for you more than for himſelf.

" Worldly motives were the wicked and baſe rea-
" ſons of my concealing this from you ſo long; to
" reveal it now, I can have no inducement but the
" deſire of ſerving the cauſe of truth, of doing right
" to the innocent, and of making all the amends in
" my power for a paſt offence. I hope his declara-
" tion therefore will have the effect deſired, and will
" reſtore this deſerving young man to your favour;
" the hearing of which, while I am yet alive, will
" afford the utmoſt conſolation to,

" SIR,

" Your moſt obliged,

" Obedient humble ſervant,

" THOMAS SQUARE."

The

The reader will, after this, ſcarce wonder at the revolution ſo viſibly appearing in Mr Allworthy, notwithſtanding he received from Thwackum, by the ſame poſt, another letter of a very different kind, which we ſhall here add, as it may poſſibly be the laſt time we ſhall have occaſion to mention the name of that gentleman.

"SIR,

"I am not at all ſurpriſed at hearing from your "worthy nephew a freſh inſtance of the villainy of "Mr Square the atheiſt's young pupil. I ſhall not "wonder at any murders he may commit; and I "heartily pray that your own blood may not ſeal up "his final commitment to the place of wailing and "gnathing of teeth.

"Though you cannot want ſufficient calls to re- "pentance for the many unwarrantable weakneſſes "exemplified in your behaviour to this wretch, ſo "much to the prejudice of your own lawful family, "and of your character; I ſay, though theſe may "ſufficiently be ſuppoſed to prick and goad your "conſcience at this ſeaſon; I ſhould yet be wanting "to my duty, if I ſpared to give you ſome admonition "in order to bring you to a due ſenſe of your errors. "I therefore pray you ſeriouſly to conſider the judg- "ment which is likely to overtake this wicked vil- "lain; and let it ſerve at leaſt as a warning to you, "that you may not for the future deſpiſe the advice "of one who is ſo indefatigable in his prayers for "your welfare.

"Had not my hand been with-held from due cor- "rection, I had ſcourged much of this diabolical ſpi- "rit out of a boy, of whom from his infancy I diſ- "covered the devil had taken ſuch entire poſſeſſion; "but reflections of this kind now come too late.

"I am ſorry you have given away the living of "Weſterton ſo haſtily. I ſhould have applied on that "occaſion earlier, had I thought you would not "have acquainted me previous to the diſpoſition. — — "Your objection to pluralities, is being righteous "over-much. If there were any crime in the practice,

" ſo many godly men would not agree to it. If the " vicar of Aldgrove ſhould die (as we hear he is in " a declining way) I hope you will think of me, ſince " I am certain you muſt be convinced of my moſt ſin- " cere attachment to your higheſt welfare. A wel- " fare to which all worldly conſiderations are as trif- " ling as the ſmall tithes mentioned in ſcripture are, " when compared to the weighty matters of the law.

" I am, SIR,

" Your faithful humble ſervant,

" ROGER TWHACKUM."

This was the firſt time Thwackum ever wrote in this authoritative ſtile to Allworthy, and of this he had afterwards ſufficient reaſon to repent, as in the caſe of thoſe who miſtake the higheſt degree of good- neſs for the loweſt dregree of weakneſs. Allworthy had indeed never liked this man. He knew him to be proud and ill natured; he alſo knew that his di- vinity itſelf was tinctured with his temper, and ſuch as in many reſpects he himſelf did by no means ap- prove: but he was at the ſame time an excellent ſcholar, and moſt indefatigable in teaching the two lads. Add to this the ſtrict ſeverity of his life and manners, an unimpeached honeſty, and a moſt devout attachment to religion. So that, upon the whole, though Allworthy did not eſteem nor love the man, yet he could never bring himſelf to part with a tutor to the boys, who was, both by learning and induſtry, extremely well qualified for his office: and he hoped, that as they were bred up in his own houſe, and un- der his own eye, he ſhould be able to correct what- ever was wrong in Thwackum's inſtructions.

CHAP. V.

In which the hiſtory is continued.

MR ALLWORTHY in his laſt ſpeech had recol- lected ſome tender ideas concerning Jones, which had brought tears into the good man's eyes. This

This Mrs Miller obſerving, ſaid. 'Yes, yes, Sir, 'your goodneſs to this poor young man is known, 'notwithſtanding all your care to conceal it; but 'there is not a ſingle ſyllable of truth in what thoſe 'villains ſaid. Mr Nightingale hath now diſcovered 'the whole matter. It ſeems theſe fellows were em-'ployed by a lord, who is a rival of poor Mr Jones, 'to have preſſed him on board a ſhip.——I aſſure 'them I don't know who they will preſs next. Mr 'Nightingale here hath ſeen the officer himſelf, who 'is a very pretty gentleman, and hath told him all, 'and is very ſorry for what he undertook, which he 'would never have done, had he known Mr Jones 'to have been a gentleman; but he was told that he 'was a common ſtrolling vagabond.'

Allworthy ſtared at all this, and declared he was a ſtranger to every word ſhe ſaid. 'Yes, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'I believe you are.——It is a very different ſto-'ry, I believe, from what thoſe fellows told the 'lawyer.'

'What lawyer, Madam? what is it you mean?' ſaid Allworthy. 'Nay, nay,' ſaid ſhe, 'this is ſo 'like you to deny your own goodneſs; but Mr 'Nightingale here ſaw him.' 'Saw whom, Madam?' anſwered he. 'Why your lawyer, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'that you ſo kindly ſent to enquire into the affair.' 'I am ſtill in the dark, upon my honour,' ſaid Allworthy. 'Why then do you tell him, my dear Sir,' cried ſhe. 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid Nightingale, 'I did 'ſee that very lawyer, who went from you when I 'came into the room, at an alehouſe in Aldergate, 'in company with two of the fellows who were em-'ployed by lord Fellamar to preſs Mr Jones, and 'who were by that means preſent at the unhappy 'rencounter between him and Mr Fitzpatrick.' 'I 'own, Sir,' ſaid Mrs Miller, 'when I ſaw this gen-'tleman come into the room to you, I told Mr 'Nightingale that I apprehended you had ſent him 'thither to enquire into the affair.' Allworthy ſhewed marks of aſtoniſhment in his countenance at this news, and was indeed for two or three minutes ſtruck dumb by it. At laſt, addreſſing himſelf to

Mr Nightingale, he ſaid, 'I muſt confeſs myſelf, 'Sir, more ſurpriſed at what you tell me, than I 'have ever been before at any thing in my whole 'life. Are you certain this was the gentleman?' 'I am moſt certain,' anſwered Nightingale. 'At 'Alderſgate?' cries Allworthy, 'And was you in 'company with this lawyer and the two fellows?'— 'I was, Sir,' ſaid the other, 'very near half an 'hour.'——'Well, Sir,' ſaid Allworthy, 'and in 'what manner did the lawyer behave? did you hear 'all that paſt between him and the fellows?' 'No, 'Sir.' anſwered Nightingale, 'they had been toge- 'ther before I came ——In my preſence the lawyer 'ſaid little; but after I had ſeveral times examined 'the fellows, who perſiſted in a ſtory directly con- 'trary to what I had heard from Mr Jones, and 'which I find by Mr Fitzpatrick was a rank falſehood; 'the lawyer then deſired the fellows to ſay nothing 'but what was the truth, and ſeemed to ſpeak ſo 'much in favour of Mr Jones, that when I ſaw the 'ſame perſon with you, I concluded your goodneſs 'had prompted you to ſend him thither.'——— 'And did you not ſend him thither?' ſays Mrs Mil- ler.—'Indeed I did not,' anſwered Allworthy: 'nor 'did I know he had gone on ſuch an errand 'till this 'moment.—'I ſee it all!' ſaid Mrs Miller; 'upon 'my ſoul, I ſee it all! No wonder, they have been 'cloſeted ſo cloſe lately. Son Nightingale, let me 'beg you run for theſe fellows immediately—find 'them out if they are above ground. I will go my- 'ſelf.'——'Dear Madam,' ſaid Allworthy, 'be pa- 'tient, and do me the favour to ſend a ſervant up 'ſtairs to call Mr Dowling hither, if he be in the 'houſe, or if not, Mr Bliſil.' Mrs Miller went out muttering ſomething to herſelf, and preſently re- turned with an anſwer, 'That Mr Dowling was 'gone; but that the t'other, as ſhe called him, was 'coming.'

Allworthy was of a cooler diſpoſition than the good woman, whoſe ſpirits were all up in arms in the cauſe of her friend. He was not however without ſome ſuſpicions which were near akin to hers. When Bliſil

came into the room, he asked him with a very serious countenance, and with a less friendly look than he had ever before given him, 'Whether he knew 'any thing of Mr Dowling's having seen any of the 'persons who were present at the duel between Jones 'and another gentleman?'

There is nothing so dangerous as a question which comes by surprise on a man, whose business it is to conceal truth, or to defend falsehood. For which reason those worthy personages, whose noble office it is to save the lives of their fellow creatures at the Old-Bailey, take the utmost care, by frequent previous examination, to divine every question which may be asked their clients on the day of trial, that they may be supplied with proper and ready answers, which the most fertile invention cannot supply in an instant. Besides, the sudden and violent impulse on the blood, occasioned by these surprises, causes frequently such an alteration in the countenance, that the man is obliged to give evidence against himself. And such indeed were the alterations which the countenance of Blifil underwent from this sudden question, that we can scarce blame the eagerness of Mrs Miller, who immediately cried out, 'Guilty, upon my honour! 'guilty, upon my soul!'

Mr Allworthy sharply rebuked her for this impetuosity; and then turning to Blifil, who seemed sinking into the earth, he said, 'Why do you hesitate, 'Sir, at giving me an answer? you certainly must 'have employed him; for he would not of his own 'accord, I believe, have undertaken such an errand, 'and especially without acquainting me.'

Blifil then answered, 'I own, Sir, I have been 'guilty of an offence, yet may I hope your pardon?' —'My pardon,' said Allworthy, very angrily. — 'Nay, Sir,' answered Blifil, 'I knew you would be 'offended; yet surely my dear uncle will forgive 'the effects of the most amiable of human weaknesses. 'Compassion for those who do not deserve it, I own 'is a crime; and yet it is a crime from which you 'yourself are not entirely free. I know I have been 'guilty of it in more than one instance to this very 'person;

'perſon; and I will own I did ſend Mr Dowling, 'not on a vain and fruitleſs enquiry, but to diſco-'ver the witneſſes, and to endeavour to ſoften 'their evidence. This, Sir, is the truth; which 'though I intended to conceal from you, I will not 'deny.'

'I confeſs,' ſaid Nightingale, 'this is the light 'in which it appeared to me from the gentleman's be-'haviour.'

'Now, Madam,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I believe you 'will once in your life own you have entertained a 'wrong ſuſpicion, and are not ſo angry with my ne-'phew as you was.'

Mrs Miller was ſilent; for though ſhe could not ſo haſtily be pleaſed with Blifil, whom ſhe looked upon to have been the ruin of Jones, yet in this particular inſtance he had impoſed upon her as well as upon the reſt; ſo entirely had the devil ſtood his friend. And, indeed, I look upon the vulgar obſervation, "That the devil often deſerts his friends, and leaves "them in the lurch," to be a great abuſe on that gentleman's character. Perhaps he may ſometimes deſert thoſe who are only his cup acquaintance; or who, at moſt, are but half his; but he generally ſtands by thoſe who are thoroughly his ſervants, and helps them off in all extremities, 'till their bargain expires.

As a conquered rebellion ſtrengthens a government, or as health is more perfectly eſtabliſhed by recovery from ſome diſeaſes; ſo anger, when removed, often gives new life to affection. This was the caſe of Mr Allworthy; for Blifil having wiped off the greater ſuſpicion, the leſſer, which had been raiſed by Square's letter, ſunk of courſe, and was forgotten, and Thwackum, with whom he was greatly offended, bore alone all the reflections which Square had caſt on the enemies of Jones.

As for that young man, the reſentment of Mr Allworthy began more and more to abate towards him. He told Blifil, 'He did not only forgive the extra-'ordinary efforts of his good-nature, but would give 'him the pleaſure of following his example.' Then turning to Mrs Miller, with a ſmile which would have become

become an angel, he cry'd, 'What ſay you, Madam; ſhall we take a hackney-coach, and all of us together pay a viſit to your friend? I promiſe you it is not the firſt viſit I have made in a priſon.'

Every reader, I believe, will be able to anſwer for the worthy woman; but they muſt have a great deal of good nature, and be well acquainted with friendſhip, who can feel what ſhe felt on this occaſion. Few, I hope, are capable of feeling what now paſt in the mind of Blifil; but thoſe who are, will acknowledge, that it was impoſſible for him to raiſe any objection to this viſit. Fortune, however, or the gentleman lately mentioned above, ſtood his friend, and prevented his undergoing ſo great a ſhock; for at the very inſtant when the coach was ſent for, Partridge arrived, and having called Mrs Miller from the company, acquainted her with the dreadful accident lately come to light; and hearing Mr Allworthy's intention, begged her to find ſome means of ſtopping him; 'For,' ſays he, 'the matter muſt at all hazards be kept a ſecret from him; and if he ſhould now go, he will find Mr Jones and his mother, who arrived juſt as I left him, lamenting over one another the horrid crime they have ignorantly committed.'

The poor woman, who was almoſt deprived of her ſenſes at this dreadful news, was never leſs capable of invention than at preſent. However, as women are much readier at this than men, ſhe bethought herſelf of an excuſe, and returning to Allworthy, ſaid, 'I am ſure, Sir, you will be ſurprized at hearing any objection from me to the kind propoſal you juſt now made; and yet I am afraid of the conſequence of it, if carried immediately into execution. You muſt imagine, Sir, that all the calamities which have lately befallen this poor young fellow, muſt have thrown him into the loweſt dejection of ſpirits: and now, Sir, ſhould we all on a ſudden fling him into ſuch a violent fit of joy, as I know your preſence will occaſion, it may, I am afraid, produce ſome fatal miſchief, eſpecially as his ſervant, who is without, tells me he is very far from being well.'

'Is

'Is his ſervant without?' cries Allworthy; 'pray 'call him hither. I will aſk him ſome queſtions con- 'cerning his maſter.'

Partridge was at firſt afraid to appear before Mr Allworthy; but was at length perſuaded, after Mrs Miller, who had often heard his whole ſtory from his own mouth, had promiſed to introduce him.

Allworthy recollected Partridge the moment he came into the room, though many years had paſſed ſince he had ſeen him. Mrs Miller therefore might have ſpared here a formal oration, in which indeed ſhe was ſomething prolix: for the reader, I believe, may have obſerved already, that the good woman, among other things, had a tongue always ready for the ſervice of her friends.

'And are you,' ſaid Allworthy to Partridge, 'the 'ſervant of Mr Jones?' 'I can't ſay, Sir,' anſwered he, 'that I am regularly a ſervant, but I live with 'him, an't pleaſe your honour, at preſent. *Non ſum 'qualis eram*, as your honour very well knows.'

Mr Allworthy then aſked him many queſtions con- cerning Jones, as to his health, and other matters; to all which Partridge anſwered, without having the leaſt regard to what was, but conſidered only what he would have things appear; for a ſtrict adherence to truth was not among the articles of this honeſt fellow's morality, or his religion.

During this dialogue Mr Nightingale took his leave, and preſently after Mrs Miller left the room, when Allworthy likewiſe diſpatched Bliſil; for he imagined that Partridge, when alone with him, would be more explicit than before company. They were no ſooner left in private together, than Allworthy be- gan as in the following chapter.

CHAP. VI.

In which the hiſtory is further continued.

'SURE, friend,' ſaid the good man, 'you are 'the ſtrangeſt of all human beings. Not only 'have ſuffered as you have formerly, for obſtinately 'perſiſting in a falſhood; but to perſiſt in it thus

the laſt, and to paſs thus upon the world for the ſervant of your own ſon; what intereſt can you have in all this? what can be your motive?'

'I ſee, Sir,' ſaid Partridge, falling down upon his knees, 'that your Honour is prepoſſeſſed againſt me, and reſolved not to believe any thing I ſay, and therefore what ſignifies my proteſtations? but yet there is one above who knows that I am not the father of this young man.'

'How!' ſaid Allworthy, 'will you yet deny what you was formerly convicted of upon ſuch unanſwerable, ſuch manifeſt evidence? Nay, what a confirmation is your being now found with this very man, of all which twenty years ago appeared againſt you. I thought you had left the country; nay, I thought you had long ſince been dead.——In what manner did you know any thing of this young man? Where did you meet with him, unleſs you had kept ſome correſpondence together? Do not deny this; for I promiſe you it will greatly raiſe your ſon in my opinion, to find that he hath ſuch a ſenſe of filial duty, as privately to ſupport his father for ſo many years.'

'If your honour will have patience to hear me,' ſaid Partridge, 'I will tell you all.'—Being bid go on, he proceeded thus: 'When your honour conceived that diſpleaſure againſt me, it ended in my ruin ſoon after; for I loſt my little ſchool; and the miniſter, thinking, I ſuppoſe, it would be agreeable to your honour, turned me out from the office of clerk; ſo that I had nothing to truſt to but the barber's ſhop, which, in a country place like that, is a poor livelihood; and when my wife died (for all that time I received a penſion of 12 l. a year from an unknown hand, which indeed I believe was your honour's own, for no body that ever I heard of doth theſe things beſides); but as I was ſaying, when ſhe died, this penſion forſook me; ſo that now, as I owed two or three ſmall debts, which began to be troubleſome to me, particularly one, which an attorney brought up by law-charges from

'15 s.

'15s. to near 30l. *; and as I found all my usual
'means of living had forsook me, I packed up my
'little all as well as I could, and went off.

'The first place I came to was Salisbury, where I
'got into the service of a gentleman belonging to
'the law, and one of the best gentlemen that ever I
'knew; for he was not only good to me, but I know
'a thousand good and charitable acts which he did
'while I staid with him; and I have known him
'often refuse business, because it was paultry and op-
'pressive.'——'You need not be so particular,' said
Allworthy; 'I know this gentleman, and a very
'worthy man he is, and an honour to his profes-
'sion.'——'Well, Sir,' continued Partridge, 'from
'hence I removed to Lymington, where I was about
'three years in the service of another lawyer, who
'was likewise a very good sort of man, and to be
'sure one of the merriest gentlemen in England.
'Well, Sir, at the end of the three years I set up a
'little school, and was likely to do well again, had
'it not been for a most unlucky accident. Here I
'kept a pig; and one day, as ill fortune would have
'it, this pig broke out, and did a trespass, I think
'they call it, in a garden belonging to one of my
'neighbours, who was a proud, revengeful man,
'and employed a lawyer, one—one—I can't think
'of his name; but he sent for a writ against me, and
'had me to Size. When I came there, Lord have
'mercy on me—to hear what the counsellors said!
'There was one that told my lord a parcel of the
'confoundedst lies about me; he said, that I used to
'drive my hogs into other folks gardens, and a great
'deal more: and at last he said, He hoped I had at
'last brought my hogs to a fair market. To be sure
'one would have thought, that instead of being

* This is a fact which I knew happened to a poor clergyman in Dorsetshire, by the villainy of an attorney, who, not content with the exorbitant costs to which the poor man man was put in a single action, brought afterwards another action on the judgment, as it is called. A method frequently used to oppress the poor, and bring money into the pockets of attorneys, to the great scandal of the law, of the nation, of Christianity, and even of human nature itself.

'own

owner only of one poor little pig, I had been the greateſt hog-merchant in England. Well,'—'Pray,' ſaid Allworthy, 'do not be ſo particular. I have heard nothing of your ſon yet.' 'O it was a great many years,' anſwered Partridge, 'before I ſaw my ſon, as you are pleaſed to call him.—I went over to Ireland after this, and taught ſchool at Cork, (for that one ſuit ruined me again, and I lay ſeven years in Wincheſter gaol.)'—'Well,' ſaid Allworthy, 'paſs that over till your return to England.' Then, Sir,' ſaid he, 'it was about half a year ago that I landed at Briſtol, where I ſtaid ſome time, and not finding it do there, and hearing of a place between that and Glouceſter, where the barber was juſt dead, I went thither, and there I had been about two months, when Mr Jones came thither.' He then gave Allworthy a very particular account of their firſt meeting, and of every thing, as well as he could remember, which had happened from that day to this; frequently interlarding his ſtory with panegyrics on Jones, and not forgetting to inſinuate the great love and reſpect which he had for Allworthy. He concluded with ſaying, 'Now, Sir, I have told your Honour the whole truth.' And then repeated a moſt ſolemn proteſtation, 'That he was no more the father of Jones than of the Pope of Rome;' and imprecated the moſt bitter curſes on his head, if he did not ſpeak truth.

'What am I to think of this matter?' cries Allworthy. 'For what purpoſe ſhould you ſo ſtrongly deny a fact, which I think it would be rather your intereſt to own?'—'Nay, Sir,' anſwered Partridge, (for he could hold no longer) 'if your Honour will not believe me, you are like ſoon to have ſatisfaction enough. I wiſh you had miſtaken the mother of this young man, as well as you have his father.'—And now being aſked what he meant, with all the ſymptoms of horror, both in his voice and countenance, he told Allworthy the whole ſtory, which he had a little before expreſſed ſuch deſire to Mrs Miller to conceal from him.

Allworthy was almoſt as much ſhocked at this diſcovery as Partridge himſelf had been while he related it. 'Good heavens!' ſays he, 'in what miſerable 'diſtreſſes do vice and imprudence involve men! how 'much beyond our deſigns are the effects of wicked-'neſs ſometimes carried!' He had ſcarce uttered theſe words, when Mrs Waters came haſtily and abruptly into the room. Partridge no ſooner ſaw her, than he cried, 'Here, Sir, here is the very woman 'herſelf. This is the unfortunate mother of Mr 'Jones; I am ſure ſhe will acquit me before your Ho-'nour.——Pray, Madam——

Mrs Waters, without paying any regard to what Partridge ſaid, and almoſt without taking any notice of him, advanced to Mr Allworthy. 'I believe, Sir, 'it is ſo long ſince I had the honour of ſeeing you, 'that you do not recollect me.'——'Indeed,' anſwered Allworthy, 'you are ſo very much altered on ma-'ny accounts, that had not this man already acquainted me who you are, I ſhould not have immediately 'called you to my remembrance. Have you, Madam, 'any particular buſineſs which brings you to me?'—Allworthy ſpoke this with great reſerve: for the reader may eaſily believe he was not well pleaſed with the conduct of this lady; neither with what he had formerly heard, nor with what Partridge now delivered.

Mrs Waters anſwered,—'Indeed, Sir, I have very 'particular buſineſs with you: and it is ſuch as I can 'impart only to yourſelf.—I muſt deſire therefore the 'favour of a word with you alone; for I aſſure you 'what I have to tell you is of the utmoſt importance.'

Partridge was then ordered to withdraw, but before he went, he begged the lady to ſatisfy Mr Allworthy that he was perfectly innocent. To which ſhe anſwered,—'You need be under no apprehenſion, Sir; 'I ſhall ſatisfy Mr Allworthy very perfectly of that 'matter.'

Then Partridge withdrew, and that paſſed between Mr Allworthy and Mrs Waters which is written in the next chapter.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

Continuation of the history.

MRS Waters remaining a few moments silent, Mr Allworthy could not refrain from saying, 'I am sorry, Madam, to perceive by what I have since 'heard, that you have made so very ill a use'—— 'Mr Allworthy,' says she, interrupting him, 'I know 'I have faults, but ingratitude to you is not one of 'them. I never can nor shall forget your goodness, 'which I own I have very little deserved; but be 'pleased to wave all upbraiding me at present, as I 'have so important an affair to communicate to you 'concerning this young man, to whom you have gi-'ven my maiden name of Jones.'

'Have I then,' said Allworthy, 'ignorantly pu-'nished an innocent man, in the person of him who 'hath just left us? Was he not the father of the child?' 'Indeed he was not,' said Mrs Waters. 'You may 'be pleased to remember, Sir, I formerly told you, 'you should one day know; and I acknowledge my-'self to have been guilty of a cruel neglect, in not ha-'ving discovered it to you before. Indeed I little 'knew how necessary it was.'—'Well, Madam,' said Allworthy, 'be pleased to proceed. 'You must re-'member, Sir,' said she, 'a young fellow whose name 'was Summer.' 'Very well,' cries Allworthy, 'he 'was the son of a clergyman of great learning and 'virtue, for whom I had the highest friendship.' 'So it appeared, Sir,' answered she, 'for I believe 'you bred the young man up, and maintained him at 'the University; where I think he had finished his 'studies, when he came to reside at your house; a 'finer man, I must say, the sun never shone upon; 'for, besides the handsomest person I ever saw, he 'was so genteel, and had so much wit and good-'breeding.' 'Poor gentleman,' said Allworthy, 'he was indeed untimely snatched away; and little 'did I think he had any sins of this kind to answer 'for; for I plainly perceive you are going to tell me 'he was the father of your child.'

'Indeed, Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'he was not.' 'How!' ſaid Allworthy, 'to what then tends all this preface?' 'To a ſtory, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'which I am concerned 'falls to my lot to unfold to you.—O Sir, prepare to 'hear ſomething which will ſurpriſe you, will grieve 'you.' 'Speak,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I am conſcious of 'no crime, and cannot be afraid to hear.'——'Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'that Mr Summer, the ſon of your friend, 'educated at your expence, who, after living a year in 'the houſe as if he had been your own ſon, died 'there of the ſmall-pox, was tenderly lamented by 'you, and buried as if he had been your own; that 'Summer, Sir, was the father of this child.'—'How!' ſaid Allworthy, 'you contradict yourſelf.' 'That I do not,' anſwered ſhe, 'he was indeed the 'father of this child, but not by me.' 'Take care, 'Madam,' ſaid Allworthy; 'do not, to ſhun the im-'putation of any crime, be guilty of falſhood. Re-'member there is one from whom you can conceal 'nothing, and before whoſe tribunal falſhood will 'only aggravate your guilt.' 'Indeed, Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'I am not his mother; nor would I now think my-'ſelf ſo for the world.' 'I know your reaſon,' ſaid Allworthy, 'and ſhall rejoice as much as you to find 'it otherwiſe; yet you muſt remember, you yourſelf 'confeſſed it before me.' 'So far what I confeſſed,' ſaid ſhe, 'was true, that theſe hands conveyed the 'infant to your bed; conveyed it thither at the 'commands of its mother; at her commands I after-'wards owned it, and thought myſelf, by her gene-'roſity, nobly rewarded, both for my ſecrecy and my 'ſhame.' 'Who could this woman be?' ſaid Allworthy. 'Indeed I tremble to name her,' anſwered Mrs Waters. 'By all this preparation I am to gueſs 'that ſhe was a relation of mine,' cried he. 'Indeed ſhe was a near one.' At which words Allworthy ſtarted, and ſhe continued——'You had a 'ſiſter, Sir,'—A ſiſter!' repeated he, looking aghaſt.——'As there is truth in heaven,' cries ſhe, 'your 'ſiſter was the mother of that child you found be-'tween your ſheets.' 'Can it be poſſible?' cries he, 'Good Heavens!' 'Have patience, Sir,' ſaid Mr

Mrs Waters, 'and I will unfold to you the whole 'ſtory. Juſt after your departure for London, Miſs 'Bridget came one day to the houſe of my mother. 'She was pleaſed to ſay ſhe had heard an extraordi-'nary character of me, for my learning and ſuperior 'underſtanding to all the young women there, ſo 'ſhe was pleaſed to ſay. She then bid me come to 'her to the great houſe: where when I attended, 'ſhe employed me to read to her. She expreſſed 'great ſatisfaction in my reading, ſhewed great kind-'neſs to me, and made me many preſents. At laſt 'ſhe began to catechiſe me on the ſubject of ſecrecy, 'to which I gave her ſuch ſatisfactory anſwers, that 'at laſt, having locked the door of her room, 'ſhe took me into her cloſet, and then locking that 'door likewiſe, ſhe ſaid, ſhe ſhould convince me of 'the vaſt reliance ſhe had on my integrity, by com-'municating a ſecret in which her honour, and con-'ſequently her life, was concerned. She then ſtopt, 'and after a ſilence of a few minutes, during which 'ſhe often wiped her eyes, ſhe enquired of me, if I 'thought my mother might ſafely be confided in. 'I anſwered, I would ſtake my life on her fidelity. 'She then imparted to me the great ſecret which 'laboured in her breaſt, and which, I believe, was 'delivered with more pains than ſhe afterwards ſuf-'fered in child-birth. It was then contrived, that 'my mother and myſelf only ſhould attend at the 'time, and that Mrs Wilkins ſhould be ſent out of 'the way, as ſhe accordingly was, to the very fur-'theſt part of Dorſetſhire, to enquire the character 'of a ſervant; for the lady had turned away her 'own maid near three months before; during all 'which time I officiated about her perſon upon trial, 'as ſhe ſaid, though, as ſhe afterwards declared, I 'was not ſufficiently handy for the place. This, 'and many other ſuch things which ſhe uſed to ſay 'of me, were all thrown out to prevent any ſuſpicion 'which Wilkins might hereafter have, when I was 'to own the child; for ſhe thought it could never be 'believed ſhe would venture to hurt a young woman 'with whom ſhe had intruſted ſuch a ſecret. You

'may be aſſured, Sir, I was well paid for all theſe 'affronts, which, together with being informed with 'the occaſion of them, very well contented me. 'Indeed the lady had a greater ſuſpicion of Mrs 'Wilkins than of any other perſon; not that ſhe 'had the leaſt averſion to the gentlewoman, but ſhe 'thought her incapable of keeping a ſecret, eſpeci-'ally from you, Sir: for I have often heard Miſs 'Bridget ſay, that if Mrs Wilkins had committed 'a murder, ſhe believed ſhe would acquaint you with 'it. At laſt the expected day came, and Mrs Wil-'kins, who had been kept a week in readineſs, and 'put off from time to time, upon ſome pretence or 'other, that ſhe might not return too ſoon, was 'diſpatched. Then the child was born, in the pre-'ſence only of myſelf and my mother, and was by 'my mother conveyed to her own houſe, where it 'was privately kept by her till the evening of your 'return. When I, by the command of Miſs Bridget, 'conveyed it into the bed where you found it. And 'all ſuſpicions were afterwards laid aſleep by the art-'ful conduct of your ſiſter, in pretending ill-will to 'the boy, and that any regard ſhe ſhewed him was 'out of mere complaiſance to you.'

Mrs Waters then made many proteſtations of the truth of this ſtory, and concluded by ſaying, 'Thus, Sir, you have at laſt diſcovered your ne-'phew; for ſo I am ſure you will hereafter think 'him, and I queſtion not but he will be both an 'honour and a comfort to you under that appella-'tion.'

'I need not, Madam,' ſaid All-worthy, 'expreſs 'my aſtoniſhment at what you have told me: and 'yet ſurely you would not, and could not, have put 'together ſo many circumſtances to evidence an un-'truth. I confeſs, I recollect ſome paſſages relating 'to that Summer, which formerly gave me a con-'ceit, that my ſiſter had ſome liking to him. I 'mentioned it to her: for I had ſuch a regard to 'the young man, as well on his own account as 'on his father's, that I ſhould willingly have con-'ſented to a match between them; but ſhe expreſſed

'the

'the higheſt diſdain of my unkind ſuſpicion, as ſhe 'called it; ſo that I never ſpoke more on the ſubject. 'Good Heavens! Well! the Lord diſpoſeth all things. '——Yet ſure it was a moſt unjuſtifiable conduct in 'my ſiſter to carry this ſecret with her out of the 'world.' 'I promiſe you, Sir,' ſaid Mrs Waters, 'ſhe always profeſſed a contrary intention, and fre-'quently told me, ſhe intended one day to commu-'cate it to you. She ſaid indeed, ſhe was highly 'rejoiced that her plot had ſucceeded ſo well, and 'that you had of your own accord taken ſuch a fancy 'to the child, that it was yet unneceſſary to make 'any expreſs declaration. Oh! Sir, had that lady 'lived to have ſeen this poor young man turned like 'a vagabond from your houſe; nay, Sir, could ſhe 'have lived to hear that you had yourſelf employed 'a lawyer to proſecute him for a murder of which 'he was not guilty——Forgive me, Mr Allworthy, 'I muſt ſay it was unkind.——Indeed you have been 'abuſed, he never deſerved it of you.' 'Indeed, 'Madam,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I have been abuſed by 'the perſon, whoever he was, that told you ſo.' 'Nay, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'I would not be miſtaken, I 'did not preſume to ſay you were guilty of any 'wrong. The gentleman who came to me, propoſed 'no ſuch matter: he only ſaid, taking me for Mr 'Fitzpatrick's wife, that if Mr Jones had murdered 'my huſband, I ſhould be aſſiſted with any money I 'wanted to carry on the proſecution, by a very 'worthy gentleman, who, he ſaid, was well appriſed 'what a villain I had to deal with. It was by this 'man I found out who Mr Jones was; and this 'man, whoſe name is Dowling, Mr Jones tells me, 'is your ſteward. I diſcovered his name by a very 'odd accident; for he himſelf refuſed to tell it me; 'but Partridge, who met him at my lodgings the 'ſecond time he came, knew him formerly at Saliſ-'bury.'

'And did this Mr Dowling,' ſays Allworthy, 'with great aſtoniſhment in his countenance, 'tell you 'that I would aſſiſt in the proſecution?'——'No, 'Sir,' anſwered ſhe, 'I will not charge him wrong-

'fully.

'fully. He ſaid I ſhould be aſſiſted, but he mention-
'ed no name. -- Yet, you muſt pardon me, Sir, if
'from circumſtances I thought it could be no other.'
'——Indeed, Madam,' ſays Allworthy, 'from cir-
'cumſtances I am too well convinced it was another.'
'——Good Heaven! by what wonderful means is
'the blackeſt and deepeſt villainy ſometimes diſco-
'vered!——Shall I beg you, Madam, to ſtay till
'the perſon you have mentioned comes; for I ex-
'pect him every minute; nay, he may be, perhaps,
'already in the houſe.'

Allworthy then ſtept to the door, in order to call a ſervant, when in came, not Mr Dowling, but the gentleman who will be ſeen in the next chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

Further continuation.

THE gentleman who now arrived was no other than Mr Weſtern. He no ſooner ſaw Allworthy, than, without conſidering in the leaſt the preſence of Mrs Waters, he began to vociferate in the following manner. 'Fine doings at my houſe!
'A rare kettle of fiſh I have diſcovered at laſt; who
'the devil would be plagued with a daughter?'
'What's the matter, neighbour?' ſaid Allworthy.
'Matter enough,' anſwered Weſtern 'When I
'thought ſhe was a juſt coming to; nay, when ſhe
'had in a manner promiſed me to do as I would ha
'her, and when I was a hoped to have had nothing
'more to do than to have ſent for the lawyer, and
'finiſhed all. ---What do you think I have found
'out? that the little b— - hath been playing tricks
'with me all the while, and carrying on a correſpon-
'dence with that baſtard of yours. Siſter Weſtern,
'whom I have quarrelled with upon her account,
'ſent me word o't, and I ordered her pockets to be
'ſearched when ſhe was aſleep, and here I have got
'un ſigned with the ſon of a whore's own name. I
'have not had patience to read half o't, for 'tis
'longer than one of parſon Supple's ſermons; but I
'find plainly it is all about love; and indeed what
'ſhould

'ſhould it be elſe? I have packed her up in chamber
'again, and to-morrow morning down ſhe goes into
'the country, unleſs ſhe conſents to be married di-
'rectly, and there ſhe ſhall live in a garret upon
'bread and water all her days; and the ſooner ſuch
'a b—— breaks her heart the better, though d—n
'her, that I believe is too tough. She will live long
'enough to plague me.' 'Mr Weſtern,' anſwered
Allworthy, 'you know I have always proteſted a-
'gainſt force, and you yourſelf conſented that none
'ſhould be uſed.' 'Ay,' cries he, 'that was only
'upon condition that ſhe ſhould conſent without.
'What the devil and doctor Fauſtus! ſhan't I do
'what I will with my own daughter, eſpecially when
'I deſire nothing but her own good?' 'Well, neigh-
'bour,' anſwered Allworthy, 'if you will give me
'leave, I will undertake once to argue with the
'young lady.' 'Will you?' ſaid Weſtern, 'why
'that is kind now and neighbourly, and mayhap you
'will do more than I have been able to do with her;
'for I promiſe you ſhe hath a very good opinion of
'you.' 'Well, Sir,' ſaid Allworthy, 'if you will
'go home, and releaſe the young lady from her cap-
'tivity, I will wait upon her within this half hour.'
—'But ſuppoſe,' ſaid Weſtern, 'ſhe ſhould run
'away with un in the mean time? For lawyer Dow-
'ling tells me, there is no hopes of hanging the fel-
'low at laſt; for that the man is alive, and like to
'do well, and that he thinks Jones will be out of
'priſon again preſently.'————'How,' ſaid All-
'worthy, 'what did you employ him then to enquire
'or to do any thing in that matter?' 'Not I,' an-
'wered Weſtern, 'he mentioned it to me juſt now
'of his own accord.'——'Juſt now!' cries Allwor-
'thy, 'why where did you ſee him then? I want
'much to ſee Mr Dowling.'——'Why you may ſee
'un an you will preſently at my lodgings; for there
'is to be a meeting of lawyers there this morning,
'about a mortgage.—Icod! I ſhall loſe two or dree
'thouſand pounds, I believe, by that honeſt gentle-
'man, Mr Nightingale.'——'Well, Sir,' ſaid All-
'worthy, 'I will be with you within the half hour.'

And

'And do for once,' cries the 'ſquire, 'take a fool's 'advice; and never think of dealing with her by 'gentle methods, take my word for it, thoſe will 'never do. I have tried 'um, long enough. She muſt 'be frightened into it, there is no other way. Tell 'her I'm her father; and of the horrid ſin of diſo- 'bedience, and of the dreadful punithment of it in 't'other world, and then tell her about being lock- 'ed up all her life in a garret in this, and being kept 'only on bread and water.' 'I will do all I can,' ſaid Allworthy; 'for, I promiſe you, there is nothing 'I wiſh for more than an alliance with this amiable 'creature.' 'Nay, the girl is well enough, for mat- 'ter o'that,' cries the 'ſquire; 'a man may go far- 'ther and meet with worſe meat; that I may de- 'clare o' her, thof ſhe be my own daughter. And 'if ſhe will but be obedient to me, there is n'arrow 'a father within a hundred miles o' the place, that 'loves a daughter better than I do: but I ſee you 'are buſy with the lady here, ſo I will go huome 'and expect you, and ſo your humble ſervant.'

As ſoon as Mr Weſtern was gone, Mrs Waters ſaid, 'I ſee, Sir, the 'ſquire hath not the leaſt re- 'membrance of my face. I believe, Mr Allworthy, 'you would not have known me neither. I am very 'conſiderably altered ſince that day when you ſo 'kindly gave me that advice, which I had been 'happy had I followed.'——'Indeed, Madam,' cries Allworthy, 'it gave me great concern when I 'firſt heard the contrary.' 'Indeed, Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'I was ruined by a very deep ſcheme of villainy, 'which, if you knew, though I pretend not to think 'it would juſtify me in your opinion, it would at 'leaſt mitigate my offence, and induce you to pity 'me; you are not now at leiſure to hear my whole 'ſtory; but this I aſſure you, I was betrayed by the 'moſt ſolemn promiſes of marriage; nay, in the 'eye of heaven I was married to him: for after 'much reading on the ſubject, I am convinced that 'particular ceremonies are only requiſite to give a 'legal ſanction to marriage, and have only a worldly 'ne

uſe in giving a woman the privileges of a wife; but that ſhe who lives conſtant to one man, after a ſolemn private affiance, whatever the world may call her, hath little to charge on her own conſcience.' 'I am ſorry, Madam,' ſaid Allworthy, you made ſo ill an uſe of your learning. Indeed it would have been well that you had been poſſeſſed of much more, or had remained in a ſtate of ignorance. And yet, Madam, I am afraid you have more than this ſin to anſwer for.' 'During his life,' anſwered ſhe, 'which was above a dozen years, I moſt ſolemnly aſſure you I had not. And conſider, Sir, on my behalf, what is in the power of a woman ſtript of her reputation and left deſtitute; whether the good-natured world will ſuffer ſuch a ſtray ſheep to return to the road of virtue, even if ſhe was never ſo deſirous. I proteſt then I would have choſe it, had it been in my power; but neceſſity drove me into the arms of captain Waters, with whom, though ſtill unmarried, I lived as a wife for many years, and went by his name. I parted with this gentleman at Worceſter, on his march againſt the rebels, and it was then I accidentally met with Mr Jones, who reſcued me from the hands of a villain. Indeed he is the worthieſt of men. No young gentleman of his age is, I believe, freer from vice, and few have the twentieth part of his virtues; nay, whatever vices he hath had, I am firmly perſuaded he hath now taken a reſolution to abandon them.' 'I hope he hath,' cries Allworthy, 'and I hope he will preſerve that reſolution. I muſt ſay I have ſtill the ſame hopes with regard to yourſelf. The world, I do agree, are apt to be too unmerciful on theſe occaſions: yet time and perſeverance will get the better of this their diſinclination, as I may call it, to pity; for though they are not, like Heaven, ready to receive a penitent ſinner; yet a continued repentance will at length obtain mercy even with the world. This you may be aſſured of, Mrs Waters, that whenever I find you are ſincere in ſuch good intentions,

'you

'you ſhall want no aſſiſtance in my power to make 'them effectual.'

Mrs Waters fell now upon her knees before him, and in a flood of tears, made him many moſt paſſionate acknowledgments of his goodneſs, which, as ſhe truly ſaid, favoured more of the divine than human nature.

Allworthy raiſed her up, and ſpoke in the moſt tender manner, making uſe of every expreſſion which his invention could ſuggeſt to comfort her, when he was interrupted by the arrival of Mr Dowling, who, upon his firſt entrance, ſeeing Mrs Waters, ſtarted, and appeared in ſome confuſion; from which he ſoon recovered himſelf as well as he could, and then ſaid, he was in the utmoſt haſte to attend council at Mr Weſtern's lodgings; but however, thought it his duty to call and acquaint him with the opinion of council, upon the caſe which he had before told him, which was, that the converſion of the monies in that caſe could not be queſtioned in a criminal cauſe, but that an action of trover might be brought, and if it appeared to the jury to be the monies of plaintiff, that plaintiff would recover a verdict for the value.

Allworthy, without making any anſwer to this, bolted the door, and then advancing with a ſtern look to Dowling, he ſaid, 'Whatever be your haſte, Sir, 'I muſt firſt receive an anſwer to ſome queſtions. 'Do you know this lady?'——'That lady, Sir?' anſwered Dowling, with great heſitation. Allworthy then, with the moſt ſolemn voice, ſaid, 'Look you, 'Mr Dowling, as you value my favour, or your 'continuance a moment longer in my ſervice, do not 'heſitate nor prevaricate; but anſwer faithfully and 'truly to every queſtion I aſk—Do you know this 'lady?——'Yes, Sir,' ſaid Dowling, 'I have ſeen 'the lady.' 'Where, Sir?' At her own lodgings. ——'Upon what buſineſs did you go thither, Sir? 'and who ſent you?' 'I went, Sir, to enquire, Sir, 'about Mr Jones.' 'And who ſent you to enquire 'about him?' 'Who, Sir; why, Sir, Mr Bliſil ſent 'me.' 'And what did you ſay to the lady concern-'ing that matter?' 'Nay Sir, it is impoſſible to re-

collect every word.' 'Will you pleaſe, Madam, to aſſiſt the gentleman's memory?' 'He told me, Sir,' ſaid Mrs Waters, "that if Mr Jones had murdered my huſband, I ſhould be aſſiſted by any money I wanted to carry on the proſecution, by a very worthy gentleman, who was well apprized what a villain I had to deal with.' Theſe, I can ſafely ſwear, were the very words he ſpoke.' —'Were theſe the words, Sir?' ſaid Allworthy. 'I cannot charge my memory exactly,' cries Dowling, 'but I believe I did ſpeak to that purpoſe.' —'And did Mr Blifil order you to ſay ſo?' 'I am ſure, Sir, I ſhould not have gone on my own accord, nor have willingly exceeded my authority in matters of this kind. If I ſaid ſo, I muſt have ſo underſtood Mr Blifil's inſtructions.' 'Look you, Mr Dowling,' ſaid Allworthy, 'I promiſe you before this lady, that whatever you have done in this affair by Mr Blifil's order, I will forgive; provided you now tell me ſtrictly the truth: for I believe what you ſay, that you would not have acted of your own accord, and without authority, in this matter. —Mr Blifil then likewiſe ſent you to examine the two fellows at Alderſgate?'—'He did, Sir.' Well, and what inſtructions did he then give you? Recollect as well as you can, and tell me, as near as poſſible, the very words he uſed.'—'Why, Sir, Mr Blifil ſent me to find out the perſons who were eye-witneſſes of this fight. He ſaid, he feared they might be tampered with by Mr Jones, or ſome of his friends. He ſaid, blood required blood: and that not only all who concealed a murderer, but thoſe who omitted any thing in their power to bring him to juſtice, were ſharers in his guilt. He ſaid, he found you was very deſirous of having the villain brought to juſtice, though it was not proper you ſhould appear in it.'—'He did ſo?' ſays Allworthy.—'Yes, Sir,' cries Dowling, I ſhould not, I am ſure, have proceeded ſuch lengths for the ſake of any other perſon living but your worſhip.—'What lengths, Sir,' ſaid Allworthy.—'Nay, Sir,' cries Dowling, 'I would not

'have your worſhip think I would, on any account, 'be guilty of ſubornation of perjury; but there are 'two ways of delivering evidence. I told them there- 'fore, that if any offers ſhould be made them on the 'other ſide, they ſhould refuſe them, and that they 'might be aſſured they ſhould loſe nothing by being 'honeſt men and telling the truth. I ſaid, we were 'told, that Mr Jones had aſſaulted the gentleman 'firſt, and that if that was the truth, they ſhould 'declare it; and I did give them ſome hints that 'they ſhould be no loſers.'——'I think you went 'lengths indeed,' cries Allworthy.——'Nay, Sir,' anſwered Dowling, 'I am ſure I did not deſire them 'to tell an untruth;—nor ſhould I have ſaid what 'I did, unleſs it had been to oblige you.'——'You 'would not have thought, I believe,' ſays Allwor- thy, 'to have obliged me, had you known that this 'Mr Jones was my own nephew.'——'I am ſure, Sir,' anſwered he, 'it did not become me to take any no- 'tice of what I thought you deſired to conceal.'—— 'How!' cries Allworthy, 'and did you know it 'then?'——'Nay, Sir,' anſwered Dowling, 'if 'your worſhip bids me ſpeak the truth, I am ſure I 'ſhall do it.—Indeed, Sir, I did know it; for they 'were almoſt the laſt words which Madam Bliſil 'ever ſpoke, which ſhe mentioned to me as I ſtood 'alone by her bed-ſide, when ſhe delivered me the 'letter. I brought your worſhip from her.'—— 'What letter?' cries Allworthy.—'The letter, Sir,' anſwered Dowling, 'which I brought from Saliſbu- 'ry, and which I delivered into the hands of Ma- 'Bliſil.'——'O Heavens!' cries Allworthy 'Well! 'and what were the words? what did my ſiſter ſay 'to you?'—'She took me by the hand,' anſwered he, 'and as ſhe delivered me the letter, ſaid, "I "ſcarce know what I have written. Tell my bro- "ther, Mr Jones is his nephew——He is my ſon. "Bleſs him,' ſays ſhe, and then fell backward, as if 'dying away. I preſently called in the people, and 'ſhe never ſpoke more to me, and died within a few 'minutes afterwards.'——Allworthy ſtood a minute ſilent, lifting up his eyes, and then turning to Dow- ling

ling said —— 'How came you, Sir, not to deliver me this meſſage?' 'Your worſhip,' anſwered he, 'muſt remember that you was at that time ill in bed; 'and being in a violent hurry, as indeed I always 'am, I delivered the letter and meſſage to Mr Bliſil, 'who told me he would carry them both to you, 'which he hath ſince told me he did, and that your 'worſhip, partly out of friendſhip to Mr Jones, and 'partly out of regard to your ſiſter, would never 'have it mentioned; and did intend to conceal it 'from the world; and therefore, Sir, if you had not 'mentioned it to me firſt, I am certain I ſhould never 'thought it belonged to me to ſay any thing of the 'matter, either to your worſhip, or any other per-'ſon.'

We have remarked ſome where already, that it is poſſible for a man to convey a lie in the words of truth; this was the caſe at preſent: for Bliſil had, in fact, told Dowling what he now related; but had not impoſed upon him, nor indeed had imagined he was able ſo to do. In reality, the promiſes which Bliſil had made to Dowling, were the motives which had induced him to ſecrecy; and as he now very plainly ſaw Bliſil would not be able to keep them, he thought proper now to make this confeſſion, which the promiſes of forgiveneſs, joined to the threats, the voice, the looks of Allworthy, and the diſcoveries he had made before, extorted from him, who was beſides taken unawares, and had no time to conſider of eva-ſions.

Allworthy appeared well ſatisfied with this relation, and having enjoined on Dowling ſtrict ſilence as to what had paſſed, conducted that gentleman himſelf to the door, leſt he ſhould ſee Bliſil, who was returned to his chamber, where he exulted in the thoughts of his laſt deceit on his uncle, and little ſuſpected what had ſince paſſed below ſtairs.

As Allworthy was returning to his room, he met Mrs Miller in the entry, who with a face all pale and full of terror, ſaid to him, 'O! Sir, I find this 'wicked woman hath been with you, and you know 'all; yet do not on this account abandon the poor

young man. Conſider, Sir, he was ignorant it was his own mother; and the diſcovery itſelf will moſt probably break his heart without your unkindneſs.'

'Madam,' ſays Allworthy, 'I am under ſuch an aſtoniſhment at what I have heard, that I am really 'unable to ſatisfy you; but come with me into my 'room. Indeed, Mrs Miller, I have made ſurpriſing 'diſcoveries, and you ſhall ſoon know them.'

The poor woman followed him trembling; and now Allworthy going up to Mrs Waters, took her by the hand, and then turning to Mrs Miller, ſaid, 'What 'reward ſhall I beſtow upon this gentlewoman for 'the ſervices ſhe hath done me?—O! Mrs Miller, 'you have a thouſand times heard me call the young 'man, to whom you are ſo faithful a friend, my ſon. 'Little did I then think that he was indeed related to 'me at all.—Your friend, Madam, is my nephew; 'he is the brother of that wicked viper which I have 'ſo long nouriſhed in my boſom—She will herſelf 'tell you the whole ſtory, and how the youth came 'to paſs for her ſon. Indeed, Mrs Miller, I am con-'vinced that he hath been wronged, and that I have 'been abuſed; abuſed by one whom you too juſtly 'ſuſpected of being a villain. He is, in truth, the 'worſt of villains.'

The joy which Mrs Miller now felt, bereſt her of the power of ſpeech, and might perhaps have deprived her of her ſenſes, if not of life, had not a friendly ſhower of tears come ſeaſonably to her relief. At length recovering ſo far from her tranſport as to be able to ſpeak, ſhe cried: 'And is my dear Mr 'Jones then your nephew, Sir? and not the ſon of 'this lady? And are your eyes opened to him at 'laſt? And ſhall I live to ſee him as happy as he de-'ſerves?' 'He certainly is my nephew,' cries All-worthy, 'and I hope all the reſt.'——'And is this 'dear good woman, the perſon,' cries ſhe, 'to 'whom all this diſcovery is owing!'——'She is in-'deed,' ſays Allworthy.——'Why then,' cried Mrs Miller upon her knees, 'may Heaven ſhower down its 'choiceſt bleſſings upon her head, and for this one

'good

'good action forgive her all her ſins, be they never ſo 'many.'

Mrs Waters then informed them, that ſhe believed Jones would very ſhortly be releaſed; for that the ſurgeon was gone, in company with a nobleman, to the juſtice who committed him, in order to certify that Mr Fitzpatrick was out of all manner of danger, and to procure the priſoner his liberty.

Allworthy ſaid, he ſhould be glad to find his nephew there at his return home; but that he was then obliged to go on ſome buſineſs of conſequence. He then called to a ſervant to fetch him a chair, and preſently left the two ladies together.

Mr Blifil hearing the chair ordered, came down ſtairs to attend upon his uncle; for he never was deficient in ſuch acts of duty. He aſked his uncle if he was going out? which is a civil way of aſking a man whither he is going; to which the other making no anſwer, he again deſired to know, when he would be pleaſed to return?——Allworthy made no anſwer to this neither, till he was juſt getting into his chair, and then turning about, he ſaid——'Harkee, Sir, 'do you find out, before my return, the letter which 'your mother ſent me on her death bed.' Allworthy then departed, and left Blifil in a ſituation to be envied only by a man who is juſt going to be hanged.

CHAP. IX.

A further continuation.

ALLWORTHY took an opportunity whilſt he was in the chair, of reading the letter from Jones to Sophia, which Weſtern delivered him; and there were ſome expreſſions in it concerning himſelf, which drew tears from his eyes. At length he arrived at Mr Weſtern's, and was introduced to Sophia.

When the firſt ceremonies were paſt, and the gentleman and lady had taken their chairs, a ſilence of ſome minutes enſued; during which the latter, who had been prepared for the viſit by her father, ſat playing with her fan, and had every mark of con-

fusion both in her countenance and behaviour. At length Allworthy, who was himself a little disconcerted, began thus; 'I am afraid, Miss Western, 'my family hath been the occasion of giving you 'some uneasiness! to which, I fear, I have innocently become more instrumental than I intended. Be 'assured, Madam, had I at first known how disagreeable the proposals had been, I should not have suffered you to have been so long persecuted. I hope 'therefore you will not think the design of this 'visit is to trouble you with any further solicitations 'of that kind, but entirely to relieve you from 'them.'

'Sir,' said Sophia, with a little modest hesitation, 'this behaviour is most kind and generous, and such 'as I could expect only from Mr Allworthy: but 'as you have been so kind to mention this matter, 'you will pardon me for saying it hath indeed given 'me great uneasiness, and hath been the occasion of 'my suffering much cruel treatment from a father, 'who was, till that unhappy affair, the tenderest 'and fondest of all parents. I am convinced, Sir, 'you are too good and generous to resent my re'fusal of your nephew. Our inclinations are not in 'our own power; and whatever may be his merit, 'I cannot force them in his favour.' 'I assure you, 'most amiable young lady,' said Allworthy, 'I am 'capable of no such resentment, had the person been 'my own son, and had I entertained the highest e'steem for him. For you say truly, Madam, we can'not force our inclinations, much less can they be di'rected by another.' 'Oh! Sir,' answered Sophia, 'every word you speak proves you to deserve that good, 'that great, that benevolent character the whole world 'allows you. I assure you, Sir, nothing less than the 'certain prospect of future misery could have made me 'resist the commands of my father.' 'I sincerely be'lieve you, Madam,' replied Allworthy, 'and I heartily congratulate you on your prudent foresight 'since by so justifiable a resistance you have avoided mi'sery indeed.' 'You speak now, Mr Allworthy,' cried the

he, 'with a delicacy which few men are capable of feeling: but ſurely, in my opinion, to lead our lives with one to whom we are indifferent, muſt be a ſtate of wretchedneſs.—Perhaps that wretchedneſs would be even encreaſed by a ſenſe of the merits of the object to whom we cannot give our affections. If I had married Mr Blifil'— 'Pardon my interrupting you, Madam,' anſwered Allworthy, 'but I cannot bear the ſuppoſition.—— Believe me, Miſs Weſtern, I rejoice from my heart, I rejoice in your eſcape. —— I have diſcovered the wretch, for whom you have ſuffered all this cruel violence from your father, to be a villain.' 'How, Sir!' cries Sophia,—'you muſt believe this ſurpriſes me.' ——'It hath ſurpriſed me, Madam,' anſwered Allworthy, 'and ſo it will the world—But I have acquainted you with the real truth.' 'Nothing but truth,' ſays Sophia, 'can, I am convinced, come from the lips of Mr Allworthy. —— Yet, Sir, ſuch ſudden, ſuch unexpected news.——Diſcovered, you ſay,———may villainy be ever ſo.' 'You will ſoon enough hear the ſtory,' cries Allworthy;—— at preſent let us not mention ſo deteſted a name,— I have another matter of a very ſerious nature to propoſe.——O! Miſs Weſtern, I know your vaſt worth, nor can I ſo eaſily part with the ambition of being allied to it.—I have a near relation, Madam, a young man whoſe character is, I am convinced, the very oppoſite to that of this wretch, and whoſe fortune I will make equal to what his was to have been.—Could I, Madam, hope you would admit a viſit from him?' Sophia, after a minute's ſilence, anſwered, 'I will deal with the utmoſt ſincerity with Mr Allworthy. His character, and the obligation I have juſt received from him, demand it. I have determined at preſent to liſten to no ſuch propoſals from any perſon. My only deſire is to be reſtored to the affection of my father, and to be again the miſtreſs of his family. This, Sir, I hope to owe to your good offices. Let me beſeech you, let me conjure you, by all the goodneſs which I, and all who know you, have experienced, do

'not

'not the very moment when you have releaſed me 'from one perſecution, do not engage me in another, 'as miſerable and as fruitleſs.' 'Indeed, Miſs Weſ-'tern,' replied Allworthy, 'I am capable of no 'ſuch conduct; and if this be your reſolution, he 'muſt ſubmit to the diſappointment, whatever tor-'ments he may ſuffer under it.' 'I muſt ſmile now, 'Mr Allworthy,' anſwered Sophia, 'when you 'mention the torments of a man whom I do not 'know, and who can conſequently have ſo little 'acquaintance with me.' 'Pardon me, dear young 'lady,' cries Allworthy, 'I begin now to be afraid 'he hath had too much acquaintance for the repoſe 'of his future days; ſince, if ever man was capable 'of a ſincere, violent, and noble paſſion, ſuch, I am 'convinced is my unhappy nephew's for Miſs Weſ-'tern.' 'A nephew of yours! Mr Allworthy,' an-ſwered Sophia. 'It is ſurely ſtrange, I never heard 'of him before.' 'Indeed! Madam,' cries All-'worthy, 'it is only the circumſtance of his being 'my nephew to which you are a ſtranger, and 'which, till this day, was a ſecret to me.—Mr Jones, 'who has long loved you, he! he is my nephew.' 'Mr Jones your nephew, Sir?' cries Sophia, 'Can 'it be poſſible?'—'He is indeed, Madam,' anſwered Allworthy: he is my own ſiſter's ſon———as ſuch I 'ſhall always own him; nor am I aſhamed of own-'ing him. I am much more aſhamed of my paſt 'behaviour to him; but I was as ignorant of his 'merit as of his birth. Indeed, Miſs Weſtern, I 'have uſed him cruelly — indeed I have.'——Here the good man wiped his eyes, and after a ſhort pauſe proceeded. 'I never ſhall be able to reward him for 'his ſufferings, without your aſſiſtance. — Believe 'me, moſt amiable young lady, I muſt have a great 'eſteem of that offering which I make to your worth. 'I know he hath been guilty of faults; but there 'is great goodneſs of heart at the bottom. Believe 'me, Madam, there is.'——Here he ſtopped, ſeeming to expect an anſwer, which he preſently received from Sophia, after ſhe had a little recovered herſelf from the hurry of ſpirits into which ſo ſtrange and ſudden

ſudden information had thrown her: 'I ſincerely 'wiſh you joy, Sir, of a diſcovery in which you ſeem 'to have ſuch ſatisfaction. I doubt not but you will 'have all the comfort you can promiſe yourſelf from 'it. The young gentleman hath certainly a thou-'ſand good qualities, which makes it impoſſible he 'ſhould not behave well to ſuch an uncle.'——— 'I hope, Madam,' ſaid Allworthy, 'he hath thoſe 'good qualities which muſt make him a good huſ-'band. He muſt, I am ſure, be of all men the moſt 'abandoned, if a lady of your merit ſhould con-'deſcend'——'You muſt pardon me, Mr Allwor-'thy,' anſwered Sophia, 'I cannot liſten to a pro-'poſal of this kind. Mr Jones, I am convinced, hath 'much merit; but I ſhall never receive Mr Jones 'as one who is to be my huſband——Upon my ho-'nour I never will.'——'Pardon me, Madam,' cries Allworthy, 'if I am a little ſurpriſed, after what I 'have heard from Mr Weſtern. I hope the unhappy 'young man hath done nothing to forfeit your good 'opinion, if he had ever the honour to enjoy it. 'Perhaps he may have been miſrepreſented to you, 'as he was to me. The ſame villainy may have in-'jured him every where.——He is no murderer I 'aſſure you, as he hath been called.' 'Mr Allwor-'thy,' anſwered Sophia, 'I have told you my reſo-'lution. I wonder not at what my father hath told 'you; but whatever his apprehenſions or fears have 'been, if I know my heart, I have given no occaſion 'for them; ſince it hath always been a fixed principle 'with me, never to have married without his conſent. 'This is, I think, the duty of a child to a parent; 'and this, I hope, nothing could ever have prevailed 'with me to ſwerve from. I do not indeed conceive, 'that the authority of any parent can oblige us to 'marry in direct oppoſition to our inclinations. To 'avoid a force of this kind, which I had reaſon to 'ſuſpect, I left my father's houſe, and ſought pro-'tection elſewhere. This is the truth of my ſtory; 'and if the world, or my father, carry my intentions 'any farther, my own conſcience will acquit me.' 'I hear you, Miſs Weſtern,' cries Allworthy, 'with

'admiration.

'admiration. I admire the juſtneſs of your ſentiments; 'but ſurely there is more in this. I am conſcious of 'offending you, young lady; but am to look on all 'which I have hitherto heard or ſeen, as a dream 'only? And have you ſuffered ſo much cruelty from 'your father on the account of a man to whom you 'have been always abſolutely indifferent?' 'I beg, 'Mr Allworthy,' anſwered Sophia, 'you will not 'inſiſt on my reaſons;—Yes, I have ſuffered indeed: 'I will not, Mr Allworthy, conceal—I will be very 'ſincere with you—I own I had a great opinion of 'Mr Jones. I believe—I know I have ſuffered for 'my opinion—I have been treated cruelly by my 'aunt, as well as by my father; but that is now paſt: 'I beg I may not be further preſſed; for whatever 'hath been, my reſolution is now fixed. Your ne- 'phew, Sir, hath many virtues—he hath great vir- 'tues, Mr Allworthy. I queſtion not but he will do 'you honour in the world, and make you happy.' 'I wiſh I could make him ſo, Madam,' replied Allworthy; 'but that I am convinced is only in 'your power. It is that conviction which hath made 'me ſo earneſt a ſolicitor in his favour.' 'You 'are deceived, indeed, Sir, you are deceived,' ſaid Sophia——'I hope not by him——It is ſufficient to 'have deceived me. Mr Allworthy, I muſt inſiſt 'on being preſſed no farther on this ſubject—I ſhould 'be ſorry——Nay, I will not injure him in your fa- 'vour. I wiſh Mr Jones very well. I ſincerely wiſh 'him well; and I repeat it again to you, whatever 'demerit he may have to me, I am certain he hath 'many good qualities. I do not diſown my former 'thoughts; but nothing can ever recal them. At 'preſent there is not a man upon earth whom I would 'more reſolutely reject than Mr Jones; nor would 'the addreſſes of Mr Blifil himſelf be leſs agreeable to 'me'

Weſtern had been long impatient for the event of this conference, and was juſt now arrived at the door to liſten; when having heard the laſt ſentiments of his daughter's heart, he loſt all temper, and burſting the

the door open in a rage, cried out, 'It is a lye.—It is a d—n'd lie. It is all owing to that d---n'd rascal Jones; and if she cou'd get at un, she'd ha un any hour of the day.' Here Allworthy interposed, and addressing himself to the squire with some anger in his look, he said, 'Mr Western, you have not kept your word with me. You promised to abstain from all violence.' ——'Why so I did,' cries Western, 'as long as it was possible; but to hear a wench telling such confounded lies. Zounds! doth she think if she can make vools of other volk, she can make one of me? ——No, no, I know her better than thee dost.' I am sorry to tell you, Sir,' answered Allworthy, it doth not appear by your behaviour to this young lady, that you know her at all. I ask pardon for what I say; but I think our intimacy, your own desires, and the occasion, justify me. She is your daughter, Mr Western, and I think she doth honour to your name. If I was capable of envy, I should sooner envy you on this account, than any other man whatever.'——'Od-rabbit it,' cries the squire,' I wish she was thine with all my heart——wouldst soon be glad to be rid of the trouble o'her.' Indeed, my good friend,' answered Allworthy, you yourself are the cause of all the trouble you complain of. Place that confidence in the young lady which she so well deserves, and I am certain you will be the happiest father on earth.'——'I confidence in her!' cries the squire,——'Sblood! what confidence can I place in her, when she wont do as I wou'd ha her? Let her gi but her consent to marry as I wou'd ha her, and I'll place as much confidence in her as wouldst ha me.' 'You have no right, neighbour,' answered Allworthy, 'to insist on any such consent. A negative voice your daughter allows you, and God and nature have thought proper to allow you no more.' 'A negative voice?' cries the squire,——Ay, ay, I'll shew you what a negative voice I ha. Go along, go into your chamber, go, you stubborn'——'Indeed, Mr Western,' said Allworthy,——'Indeed you use

'her

'her cruelly—I cannot bear to see this.---You shall, 'you must behave to her in a kinder manner. She 'deserves the best of treatment.' 'Yes, yes,' said the squire, 'I know what she deserves: now she's gone, 'I'll shew you what she deserves ---See here, Sir, here 'is a letter from my cousin, my lady Bellaston, in 'which she is so kind to gi me to understand, that the 'fellow is got out of prison again; and here she 'advises me to take all the care I can o' the wench. 'Odzookers! neighbour Allworthy, you don't know 'what it is to govern a daughter.'

The squire ended his speech with some compliments to his own sagacity; and then Allworthy, after a formal preface, acquainted him with the whole discovery which he had made concerning Jones, with his anger to Blifil, and with every particular which had been disclosed to the reader in the preceding chapters.

Men over-violent in their dispositions, are, for the most part, as changeable in them. No sooner then was Western informed of Mr Allworthy's intention to make Jones his heir, than he joined heartily with the uncle in every commendation of the nephew, and became as eager for her marriage with Jones, as he had before been to couple her to Blifil.

Here Mr Allworthy was again forced to interpose, and to relate what passed between him and Sophia, at which he testified great surprise.

The squire was silent a moment, and looked wild with astonishment at this account. At last he cried out, 'Why, what can be the meaning of this, neigh-'bour Allworthy? Vond o' un she was, that I'll be 'sworn to. Odzookers, I have hit o't. As sure as a 'gun I have hit o' the very right o't. It's all along 'o' zitter. The girl hath got a hankering after the 'son of a whore of a lord. I vound 'em together at 'my cousin, my lady Bellaston's. He hath turned the 'head o' her, that's certain —— but d---n me if he 'shall ha' her—— I'll have no lords nor courtiers in 'my vamily.'

Allworthy now made a long speech, in which he repeated his resolution to avoid all violent measures, and

and very earneſtly recommended gentle methods to Mr Weſtern, as thoſe by which he might be aſſured of ſucceeding beſt with his daughter. He then took his leave, and returned back to Mrs Miller, but was forced to comply with the earneſt entreaties of the 'Squire, in promiſing to bring Mr Jones to viſit him that afternoon, that he might, as he ſaid, 'Make 'all matters up with the young gentleman.' At Mr Allworthy's departure, Weſtern promiſed to follow his advice in his behaviour to Sophia, ſaying, 'I 'don't know how 'tis, but d—n me, Allworthy, if 'you don't make me do always juſt as you pleaſe; 'and yet I have as good an eſteate as you, and 'am in the commiſſion of the peace as well as your-'ſelf.'

CHAP. X.

Wherein the hiſtory begins to draw towards a concluſion.

WHEN Allworthy returned to his lodgings, he heard Mr Jones was juſt arrived before him. He hurried therefore inſtantly into an empty chamber, whither he ordered Mr Jones to be brought to him alone.

It is impoſſible to conceive a more tender or moving ſcene, than the meeting between the uncle and nephew, (for Mrs Waters, as the reader may well ſuppoſe, had at her laſt viſit diſcovered to him the ſecret of his birth.) The firſt agonies of joy which were felt on both ſides, are indeed beyond my power to deſcribe: I ſhall not therefore attempt it. After Allworthy had raiſed Jones from his feet, where he had proſtrated himſelf, and received him into his arms, 'O my child,' he cried, 'how have I been to 'blame! how have I injured you? What amends 'can I ever make you for thoſe unkind, thoſe unjuſt 'ſuſpicions which I have entertained, and for all the 'ſufferings they have occaſioned to you?' 'Am I 'not now made amends?' cries Jones: 'Would not 'my ſufferings, if they had been ten times greater, 'have been now richly repaid? O my dear uncle! 'this goodneſs, this tenderneſs, overpowers, unmans,

'deſtroys me. I cannot bear the tranſports which 'flow ſo faſt upon me. To be again reſtored to 'your preſence, to your favour; to be once more 'thus kindly received by my great, my noble, my 'generous benefactor.'——'Indeed, child,' cries Allworthy, 'I have uſed you cruelly.'——He then explained to him all the treachery of Blifil, and again repeated expreſſions of the utmoſt concern for having been induced by that treachery to uſe him ſo ill. 'O talk not ſo,' anſwered Jones; 'indeed, Sir, you 'have uſed me nobly. The wiſeſt man might be 'deceived as you were, and under ſuch a deception, 'the beſt muſt have acted juſt as you did. Your 'goodneſs diſplayed itſelf in the midſt of your anger, juſt as it then ſeemed. I owe every thing to 'that goodneſs of which I have been moſt unworthy. Do not put me on ſelf-accuſation, by carrying your generous ſentiments too far. Alas, Sir, I 'have not been puniſhed more than I have deſerved; 'and it ſhall be the whole buſineſs of my future life 'to deſerve that happineſs you now beſtow on me; 'for believe me, my dear uncle, my puniſhment 'hath not been thrown away upon me: though I 'have been a great, I am not a hardened ſinner; I 'thank Heaven I have had time to reflect on my paſt 'life, where though I cannot charge myſelf with 'any groſs villainy, yet I can diſcern follies and vices 'more than enough to repent and to be aſhamed of; 'follies which have been attended with dreadful conſequences to myſelf, and have brought me to the 'brink of deſtruction.' 'I am rejoiced, my dear 'child, anſwered Allworthy, 'to hear you talk 'thus ſenſibly; for as I am convinced hypocriſy '(good Heaven, how I have been impoſed on by it 'in others!) was never among your faults; ſo I 'can readily believe all you ſay. You now ſee, 'Tom, to what dangers imprudence alone may 'ſubject virtue (for virtue, I am now convinced, 'you love in a great degree) Prudence is indeed 'the duty which we owe to ourſelves; and if we 'will be ſo much our own enemies as to neglect it, 'we are not to wonder if the world is deficient in

'diſcharging

'discharging their duty to us; for when a man lays 'the foundation of his own ruin, others will, I am 'afraid, be too apt to build upon it. You say, how-'ever, you have seen your errors, and will reform 'them. I firmly believe you, my dear child; and 'therefore, from this moment, you shall never more 'be reminded of them by me. Remember them on-'ly yourself so far, as for the future to teach you 'the better to avoid them; but still remember, for 'your comfort, that there is this great difference 'between those faults which candor may construe 'into imprudence, and those which can be deduced 'from villainy only. The former, perhaps, are 'even more apt to subject a man to ruin; but if he 'reform, his character will, at length, be totally re-'trieved; the world, though not immediately, will 'in time be reconciled to him; and he may reflect, 'not without some mixture of pleasure, on the dan-'gers he hath escaped: but villainy, my boy, when 'once discovered, is irretrievable; the stains which 'this leaves behind, no time will wash away. The 'censures of mankind will pursue the wretch, their 'scorn will abash him in public; and if shame 'drives him into retirement, he will go to it with 'all those terrors with which a weary child, who is 'afraid of hobgoblins, retreats from company to 'go to bed alone. Here his murdered conscience 'will haunt him. Repose, like a false friend, will 'fly from him. Where-ever he turns his eyes, hor-'ror presents itself; if he looks backward, unavail-'able repentance treads on his heels; if forward, 'incurable despair stares him in the face; till, like 'a condemned prisoner confined in a dungeon, he 'detests his present condition, and yet dreads the 'consequence of that hour which is to relieve him 'from it. Comfort yourself, I say, my child, that 'this is not your case: and rejoice, with thankful-'ness to him who hath suffered you to see your er-'rors, before they have brought on you that destruc-'tion, to which a persistance in even those errors 'must have led you. You have deserted them; 'and the prospect now before you is such, that hap-

'pineſs ſeems in your own power.'—At theſe words Jones fetched a deep ſigh; upon which, when Allworthy remonſtrated, he ſaid, 'Sir, I will conceal 'nothing from you; I fear there is one conſequence 'of my vices I ſhall never be able to retrieve. O my 'dear uncle, I have loſt a treaſure' —'You need 'ſay no more,' anſwered Allworthy; 'I will be explicit with you: I know what you lament; I have 'ſeen the young lady, and have diſcourſed with her 'concerning you. This I muſt inſiſt on, as an earneſt of your ſincerity in all you have ſaid, and of 'the ſtedfaſtneſs of your reſolution, that you obey 'me in one inſtance. To abide entirely by the determination of the young lady, whether it ſhall be 'in your favour or no. She hath already ſuffered 'enough from ſolicitations which I hate to think of; 'ſhe ſhall owe no further conſtraint to my family: 'I know her father will be as ready to torment her 'now on your account, as he hath formerly been on 'another's; but I am determined ſhe ſhall ſuffer no more confinement, no more violence, no more uneaſy hours.'—'O my dear uncle,' anſwered Jones, 'ſay, I beſeech you, ſome command on me, in which 'I ſhall have ſome merit in obedience. Believe me, 'Sir, the only inſtance in which I could diſobey 'you, would be to give an uneaſy moment to my 'Sophia. No, Sir, if I am ſo miſerable to have incurred her diſpleaſure beyond all hope of forgiveneſs, that alone, with the dreadful reflection of 'cauſing her miſery, will be ſufficient to overpower 'me. To call Sophia mine is the greateſt, and now 'the only additional bleſſing which Heaven can beſtow; but it is a bleſſing which I muſt owe to her 'alone.' 'I will not flatter you, child,' cries Allworthy; 'I fear your caſe is deſperate: I never ſaw 'ſtronger marks of an unalterable reſolution in any 'perſon, than appeared in her vehement declarations 'againſt receiving your addreſſes; for which, perhaps, 'you can account better than myſelf'—'Oh, Sir! I 'can account too well,' anſwered Jones; 'I have 'ſinned againſt her beyond all hope of pardon; and 'guilty as I am, my guilt unfortunately appears to

'her

'her in ten times blacker than the real colours. O, 'my dear uncle, I find my follies are irretrievable; 'and all your goodneſs cannot ſave me from perdition.

A ſervant now acquainted them, that Mr Weſtern was below ſtairs; for his eagerneſs to ſee Jones could not wait till the afternoon. Upon which Jones, whoſe eyes were full of tears, begged his uncle to entertain Weſtern a few minutes, till he a little recovered himſelf: to which the good man conſented, and having ordered Mr Weſtern to be ſhewn into a parlour, went down to him.

Mrs Miller no ſooner heard that Jones was alone, (for ſhe had not yet ſeen him ſince his releaſe from priſon) than ſhe came eagerly into the room, and advancing towards Jones, wiſhed him heartily joy of his new-found uncle, and his happy reconciliation; adding, 'I wiſh I could give you joy on another ac-'count, my dear child; but any thing ſo inexorable 'I never ſaw.'

Jones with ſome appearance of ſurprize, aſked her what ſhe meant. 'Why then,' ſays ſhe, 'I have 'been with your young lady, and have explained 'all matters to her, as they were told me by my ſon 'Nightingale. She can have no longer any doubt 'about the letter, of that I am certain; for I told her 'my ſon Nightingale was ready to take his oath, if 'ſhe pleaſed, that it was all her own invention, and 'the letter of his inditing. I told her the very rea-'ſon of ſending the letter ought to recommend you 'to her the more, as it was all upon her account, 'and a plain proof, that you was reſolved to quit 'your profligacy for the future; that you had ne-'ver been guilty of a ſingle inſtance of infidelity to 'her ſince your ſeeing her in town; I am afraid I 'went too far there; but Heaven forgive me; I hope 'your future behaviour will be my juſtification. I 'am ſure I have ſaid all I can; but all to no pur-'poſe. She remains inflexible. She ſays, ſhe had 'forgiven many faults on account of youth; but ex-'preſſed ſuch deteſtation of the character of a liber-'tine, that ſhe abſolutely ſilenced me I often at-'tempted to excuſe you; but the juſtneſs of her ac-

'cuſation flew in my face. Upon my honour, ſhe is 'a lovely woman, and one of the ſweeteſt and moſt 'ſenſible creatures I ever ſaw. I could have almoſt 'kiſſed her for one expreſſion ſhe made uſe of. It 'was a ſentiment worthy of Seneca, or of a biſhop. "I once fancied, Madam,' ſaid ſhe, 'I had diſco- "vered great goodneſs of heart in Mr Jones; and "for that I own I had a ſincere eſteem; but an en- "tire profligacy of manners will corrupt the beſt "heart in the world: and all which a good-natured "libertine can expect, is, that we ſhould mix ſome "grains of pity with our contempt and abhorrence.' 'She is an angelic creature, that's the truth on't.'— 'O Mrs Miller,' anſwered Jones, 'can I bear to 'think I have loſt ſuch an angel!' 'Loſt! no,' cries Mrs Miller; 'I hope you have not loſt her yet. 'Reſolve to leave ſuch vicious courſes, and you may 'yet have hopes: nay, if ſhe ſhould remain inexor- 'able, there is another young lady, a ſweet pretty 'young lady, and a ſwinging fortune, who is abſo- 'lutely dying for love of you. I heard of it this very 'morning, and I told it to Miſs Weſtern; nay, I went 'a little beyond the truth again; for I told her you 'had refuſed her; but indeed I knew you would re- 'fuſe her.—And here I muſt give you a little 'comfort: when I mentioned the young lady's name, 'who is no other than the pretty widow Hunt, I 'thought ſhe turned pale: but when I ſaid you had 'refuſed her, I will be ſworn her face was all over 'ſcarlet in an inſtant; and theſe were her very words, "I will not deny but that I believe he has ſome af- "fection for me."

Here the converſation was interrupted by the arrival of Weſtern, who could no longer be kept out of the room even by the authority of Allworthy himſelf; though this, as we have often ſeen, had a wonderful power over him.

Weſtern immediately went up to Jones, crying out, 'My old friend Tom, I am glad to ſee thee 'with all my heart. All paſt muſt be forgotten. I 'could not intend any affront to thee, becauſe, as 'Allworthy here knows, nay, doſt know it thyſelf,

'I took

I took thee for another perſon; and where a body means no harm, what ſignifies a haſty word or two? One Chriſtian muſt forget and forgive another.' 'I hope, Sir,' ſaid Jones, 'I ſhall never forget the many obligations I have had to you; but as for any offence towards me, I declare I am an utter ſtranger.' —'A't?' ſays Weſtern, 'then give me thy fiſt; a't as hearty an honeſt cock, as any in the kingdom. Come along with me; I'll carry thee to thy miſtreſs this moment.' Here Allworthy interpoſed; and the 'ſquire being unable to prevail either with the uncle or nephew, was, after ſome litigation, obliged to conſent to delay introducing Jones to Sophia till the afternoon; at which time Allworthy, as well in compaſſion to Jones, as in compliance with the eager deſires of Weſtern, was prevailed upon to promiſe to attend at the tea-table.

The converſation which now enſued was pleaſant enough; and with which, had it happened earlier in our hiſtory, we would have entertained our reader; but as we have now leiſure only to attend to what is very material, it ſhall ſuffice to ſay, that matters being entirely adjuſted as to the afternoon-viſit, Mr Weſtern again returned home.

CHAP. XI.

The hiſtory draws nearer to a concluſion.

WHEN Mr Weſtern was departed, Jones began to inform Mr Allworthy and Mrs Miller, that his liberty had been procured by two noble lords, who together with two ſurgeons, and a friend of Mr Nightingale's, had attended the magiſtrate by whom he had been committed, and by whom, on the ſurgeon's oath, that the wounded perſon was out of all manner of danger from his wound, he was diſcharged.

One only of theſe lords, he ſaid, he had ever ſeen before, and that no more than once; but the other had greatly ſurprized him, by aſking his pardon for an offence he had been guilty of towards him, occaſioned, he ſaid, entirely by his ignorance who he was.

Now

Now the reality of the caſe, with which Jones was not acquainted till afterwards, was this. The lieutenant whom lord Fellamar had employed, according to the advice of lady Bellaſton, to preſs Jones, as a vagabond, into the ſea-ſervice, when he came to report to his lordſhip the event which we have before ſeen, ſpoke very favourably of the behaviour of Mr Jones on all accounts, and ſtrongly aſſured that lord, that he muſt have miſtaken the perſon; for that Jones was certainly a gentleman: inſomuch that his lordſhip, who was ſtrictly a man of honour, and would by no means have been guilty of an action which the world in general would have condemned, began to be much concerned for the advice which he had taken.

Within a day or two after this, lord Fellamar happened to dine with the Iriſh peer, who, in a converſation upon the duel, acquainted his company with the character of Fitzpatrick; to which indeed he did not do ſtrict juſtice, eſpecially in what related to his lady. He ſaid, ſhe was the moſt innocent, and moſt injured woman alive, and that from compaſſion alone he had undertaken her cauſe. He then declared an intention of going the next morning to Fitzpatrick's lodgings, in order to prevail with him, if poſſible, to conſent to a ſeparation from his wife, who, the peer ſaid, was in apprehenſions for her life, if ſhe ſhould ever return to be under the power of her huſband. Lord Fellamar agreed to go with him, that he might ſatisfy himſelf more concerning Jones, and the circumſtances of the duel; for he was by no means eaſy concerning the part he had acted. The moment his lordſhip gave a hint of his readineſs to aſſiſt in the delivery of the lady, it was eagerly embraced by the other nobleman, who depended much on the authority of lord Fellamar, as he thought it would greatly contribute to awe Fitzpatrick into compliance; and perhaps he was in the right: for the poor Iriſhman no ſooner ſaw theſe noble peers had undertaken the cauſe of his wife than he ſubmitted, and articles of ſeparation were ſoon drawn up, and ſigned between the parties.

Fitzpatrick

Fitzpatrick had been ſo well ſatisfied by Mrs Waters concerning the innocence of his wife with Jones at Upton, or perhaps from ſome other reaſons, was now become ſo indifferent to that matter, that he ſpoke highly in favour of Jones to lord Fellamar, took all the blame upon himſelf, and ſaid the other had behaved very much like a gentleman, and a man of honour; and upon that lord's further enquiry concerning Mr Jones, Fitzpatrick told him he was nephew to a gentleman of very great faſhion and fortune, which was the account he had juſt received from Mrs Waters, after her interview with Dowling.

Lord Fellamar now thought it behoved him to do every thing in his power to make ſatisfaction to a gentleman whom he had ſo groſsly injured, and without any conſideration of rivalſhip, (for he had now given over all thoughts of Sophia) determined to procure Mr Jones's liberty, being ſatisfied as well from Fitzpatrick as his ſurgeon, that the wound was not mortal. He therefore prevailed with the Iriſh peer to accompany him to the place where Jones was confined, to whom he behaved as we have already related.

When Allworthy returned to his lodgings, he immediately carried Jones into his room, and then acquainted him with the whole matter, as well what he had heard from Mrs Waters, as what he had diſcovered from Mr Dowling.

Jones expreſſed great aſtoniſhment, and no leſs concern at this account; but without making any comment or obſervation upon it. And now a meſſage was brought from Mr Blifil, deſiring to know if his uncle was at leiſure, that he might wait upon him. Allworthy ſtarted and turned pale, and then, in a more paſſionate tone than I believe he had ever uſed before, bid the ſervant tell Blifil, he knew him not. 'Conſider, dear Sir,' —— cries Jones, in a trembling voice.—'I have conſidered,' anſwered Allworthy, 'and you yourſelf ſhall carry my meſſage to the villain.—No one can carry him the ſentence of his own ruin ſo properly, as the man whoſe ruin

'he

'he hath ſo villainouſly contrived.' —— 'Pardon me
'dear Sir,' ſaid Jones; 'a moment's reflection will
'I am ſure, convince you of the contrary. Wha
'might perhaps be but juſtice from another tongue
'would from mine be inſult; and to whom?—M
'own brother, and your nephew.———Nor did h
'uſe me ſo barbarouſly.———Indeed that would hav
'been more inexcuſeable than any thing he hath done
'Fortune may tempt men of no very bad diſpoſition
'to injuſtice; but inſults proceed only from blac
'and rancorous minds, and have no temptations t
'excuſe them. —— Let me beſeech you, Sir, to d
'nothing by him in the preſent height of your anger
'Conſider, my dear uncle, I was not myſelf con
'demned unheard.' Allworthy ſtood ſilent a momen
and then embracing Jones, he ſaid, with tears guſhin
from his eyes, 'O my child, to what goodneſs have
'been ſo long blind!'

Mrs Miller entering the room at that momen
after a gentle rap, which was not perceived, an
ſeeing Jones in the arms of his uncle, the poor wo
man, in an agony of joy, fell upon her knees, an
burſt forth into the moſt ecſtatic thankſgivings t
Heaven, for what had happened. ——Then runnin
to Jones, ſhe embraced him eagerly, crying, 'M
'deareſt friend, I wiſh you joy a thouſand and
'thouſand times of this bleſt day;' and next M
Allworthy himſelf received the ſame congratulation
To which he anſwered, 'Indeed, indeed, Mrs Mill
'I am beyond expreſſion happy.' Some few mo
raptures having paſſed on all ſides, Mrs Miller d
ſired them both to walk down to dinner in the pa
lour, where ſhe ſaid there was a very happy ſet of pe
ple aſſembled; being indeed no other than Mr Nig
tingale and his bride, and his couſin Harris with h
bridegroom.

Allworthy excuſed himſelf from dining with t
company, ſaying he had ordered ſome little thing f
him and his nephew in his own apartment; for th
they had much private buſineſs to diſcourſe of, b
could not reſiſt promiſing the good woman, th
bo

both he and Jones would make part of her ſociety at upper.

Mrs Miller then aſked what was to be done with Bliſil; 'for indeed,' ſays ſhe, 'I cannot be eaſy while ſuch a villain is in my houſe.'—Allworthy anſwered, he was as uneaſy as herſelf on the ſame account.' O!' cries ſhe, 'if that be the caſe, leave the matter to me; I'll ſoon ſhew him the outſide of my doors, I warrant you. Here are two or three luſty fellows below ſtairs.' 'There will be no need of any violence,' cries Allworthy; 'if you will carry him a meſſage from me, he will, I am convinced, depart of his own accord.' 'Will I?' ſaid Mrs Miller, I never did any thing in my life with a better will.' ere Jones interfered, and ſaid, 'He had conſidered the matter better, and would, if Mr Allworthy pleaſed, be himſelf the meſſenger.' 'I know,' ſays , 'already enough of your pleaſure, Sir, and I beg leave to acquaint him with it by my own words. Let me beſeech you, Sir,' added he, 'to reflect on the dreadful conſequences of driving him to violent and ſudden deſpair. How unfit, alas! is this poor man to die in his preſent ſituation!' This ſuggeſtion d not the leaſt effect on Mrs Miller. She left the om, crying, 'You are too good, Mr Jones, infinitely too good to live in this world.' But it made deeper impreſſion on Allworthy. 'My good child,' d he, 'I am equally aſtoniſhed at the goodneſs of your heart, and the quickneſs of your underſtanding. Heaven indeed forbid that this wretch ſhould e deprived of any means or time for repentance! That would be a ſhocking conſideration indeed. Go to him therefore, and uſe your own diſcretion; et do not flatter him with any hopes of my forgiveneſs; for I ſhall never forgive villainy farther han my religion obliges me, and that extends not ither to our bounty or our converſation.'

Jones went up to Bliſil's room, whom he found in ituation which moved his pity, though it would e raiſed a leſs amiable paſſion in many beholders. caſt himſelf on his bed, where he lay abandoning nſelf to deſpair, and drowned in tears; not in ſuch

tears

tears as flow from contrition, and wash away gu from minds which have been seduced or surpri into it unawares, against the bent of their natural di positions, as will sometimes happen from huma frailty, even to the good; no, these tears were su as the frighted thief sheds in his cart, and are inde the effects of that concern which the most savage n tures are seldom deficient in feeling for themselves.

It would be unpleasant and tedious to paint th scene at full length. Let it suffice to say, that t behaviour of Jones was kind to excess. He omitt nothing which his invention could supply, to ra and comfort the drooping spirits of Blifil, before communicated to him the resolution of his uncle, th he must quit the house that evening. He offered furnish him with any money he wanted, assured h of his hearty forgiveness of all he had done agai him, that he would endeavour to live with him he after as a brother, and would leave nothing unattem ed to effectuate a reconciliation with his uncle.

Blifil was at first sullen and silent, balancing in mind whether he should yet deny all; but finding last the evidence too strong against him, he beto himself at last to confession. He then asked pard-n his brother in the most vehement manner, prostrat himself on the ground, and kissed his feet: in sho he was now as remarkably mean, as he had been fore remarkably wicked.

Jones could not so far check his disdain, but that a little discovered itself in his countenance at this treme servility. He raised his brother the mom he could from the ground, and advised him to b his afflictions more like a man; repeating at the sa time his promises, that he would do all in his po to lessen them: for which Blifil making many p fessions of his unworthiness, poured forth a profu of thanks: and then he having declared he wo immediately depart to another lodging, Jones retu ed to his uncle.

Among other matters, Allworthy now acquain Jones with the discovery which he made concern the 500l. bank-notes. 'I have,' said he, 'alre

'consulted a lawyer, who tells me, to my great aſtoniſhment, that there is no puniſhment for a fraud of 'this kind. Indeed, when I conſider the black ingra'titude of this fellow toward you, I think a highway'man, compared to him, is an innocent perſon.'

'Good Heaven!' ſays Jones, 'is it poſſible?'—— 'I am ſhocked beyond meaſure at this news. I 'thought there was not an honeſter fellow in the 'world.——The temptation of ſuch a ſum was too 'great for him to withſtand; for ſmaller matters have 'come ſafe to me through his hand. Indeed, my 'dear uncle, you muſt ſuffer me to call it weakneſs 'rather than ingratitude; for I am convinced the 'poor fellow loves me, and hath done me ſome kind'neſſes, which I can never forget; nay, I believe he 'hath repented of this very act: for it is not above 'a day or two ago, when my affairs ſeemed in the 'moſt deſperate ſituation, that he viſited me in my 'confinement, and offered me any money I wanted. 'Conſider, Sir, what a temptation to a man who 'hath taſted ſuch bitter diſtreſs, it muſt be to have a 'ſum in his poſſeſſion, which muſt put him and his 'family beyond any future poſſibility of ſuffering the 'like.'

'Child,' cries Allworthy, 'you carry this forgiving temper too far. Such miſtaken mercy is not only weakneſs, but borders on injuſtice, and is very pernicious to ſociety, as it encourages vice. The diſhoneſty of this fellow I might perhaps have pardoned, but never his ingratitude. And give me leave to ſay, when we ſuffer any temptation to atone for diſhoneſty itſelf, we are as candid and merciful as we ought to be: and ſo far I confeſs I have gone; for I have often pitied the fate of a highwayman, when I have been on the grand jury; and have more than once applied to the judge on the behalf of ſuch as have had any mitigating circumſtances in their caſe; but when diſhoneſty is attended with any blacker crime, ſuch as cruelty, murder, ingratitude, or the like, compaſſion and forgiveneſs then become faults. I am convinced the fellow is

'a villain, and he ſhall be puniſhed; at leaſt as far 'as I can puniſh him.'

This was ſpoke with ſo ſtern a voice, that Jones did not think proper to make any reply: beſides, the hour appointed by Mr Weſtern now drew ſo near, that he had barely time left to dreſs himſelf. Here therefore ended the preſent dialogue, and Jones retired to another room, where Partridge attended, according to order, with his cloaths.

Partridge had ſcarce ſeen his maſter ſince the happy diſcovery. The poor fellow was unable either to contain or expreſs his tranſports. He behaved like one frantic, and made almoſt as many miſtakes while he was dreſſing Jones, as I have ſeen made by Harlequin in dreſſing himſelf on the ſtage.

His memory, however, was not in the leaſt deficient. He recollected now many omens and preſages of this happy event, ſome of which he had remarked at the time, but many more he now remembered; nor did he omit the dreams he had dreamt the evening before his meeting with Jones; and concluded with ſaying, 'I always told your honour ſomething 'boded in my mind, that you would one time or 'other have it in your power to make my fortune.' Jones aſſured him that this boding ſhould as certainly be verified with regard to him, as all the other omens had been to himſelf; which did not a little add to all the raptures which the poor fellow had already conceived on account of his maſter.

CHAP. XII.

Approaching ſtill nearer to the end.

JONES being now compleatly dreſſed, attended his uncle to Mr Weſtern's. He was indeed one of the fineſt figures ever beheld, and his perſon alone would have charmed the greater part of womankind: but we hope it hath already appeared in this hiſtory, that nature, when ſhe formed him, did not totally rely, as ſhe ſometimes doth, on this merit only, to recommend her work.

Sophia

Sophia who, angry as ſhe was, was likewiſe ſet forth to the beſt advantage, for which I leave my female readers to account, appeared ſo extremely beautiful that even Allworthy, when he ſaw her, could not forbear whiſpering Weſtern, that he believed ſhe was the fineſt creature in the world. To which Weſtern anſwered, in a whiſper overheard by all preſent, 'So 'much the better for Tom;——for d---n me if he 'ſhan't ha the touſling her.' Sophia was all over ſcarlet at theſe words, while Tom's countenance was altogether as pale, and he was almoſt ready to ſink from his chair.

The tea-table was ſcarce removed, before Weſtern lugged Allworthy out of the room, telling him, he had buſineſs of conſequence to impart, and muſt ſpeak to him that inſtant in private before he forgot it.

The lovers were now alone, and it will, I queſtion not, appear ſtrange to many readers, that thoſe who had ſo much to ſay to one another when danger and difficulty attended their converſation; and who ſeemed ſo eager to ruſh into each others arms, when ſo many bars lay in their way; now that with ſafety they were at liberty to ſay or do whatever they pleaſed, ſhould both remain for ſome time ſilent and motionleſs: inſomuch that a ſtranger of moderate ſagacity might have well concluded, they were mutually indifferent: but ſo it was, however ſtrange it may ſeem; both ſat with their eyes caſt downwards on the ground, and for ſome minutes continued in perfect ſilence.

Mr Jones, during this interval, attempted once or twice to ſpeak, but was abſolutely incapable, muttering only, or rather ſighing out, ſome broken words; when Sophia at length, partly out of pity to him, and partly to turn the diſcourſe from the ſubject which ſhe knew well enough he was endeavouring to open, ſaid;——

'Sure, Sir, you are the moſt fortunate man in the 'world in this diſcovery.' 'And can you really, 'Madam, think me ſo fortunate,' ſaid Jones, ſighing, 'while I have incurred your diſpleaſure?'——'Nay, 'Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'as to that, you beſt know whether 'you have deſerved it.' 'Indeed, Madam,' anſwered

he, 'you yourself are as well apprized of all my de-
'merits. Mrs Miller hath acquainted you with the
'whole truth. O! my Sophia, am I never to hope
'for forgiveneſs?'------'I think, Mr Jones,' ſaid ſhe,
'I may almoſt depend on your own juſtice, and leave
'it to yourſelf to paſs ſentence on your own conduct'
----- 'Alas! Madam,' anſwered he, 'it is mercy, and
'not juſtice, which I implore at your hands. Juſtice
'I know muſt condemn me.------Yet not for the let-
'ter I ſent to lady Bellaſton. Of that I moſt ſolemn-
'ly declare, you have had a true account.' He
then inſiſted much on the ſecurity given him by
Nightingale, of a fair pretence for breaking off, if,
contrary to their expectations, her ladyſhip ſhould
have accepted his offer; but confeſſed, that he had
been guilty of a great indiſcretion, to put ſuch a
letter as that into her power, 'which,' ſaid he, 'I
'have dearly paid for, in the effect it has upon you.'
'I do not, I cannot,' ſays ſhe, 'believe otherwiſe of
'that letter than you would have me. My conduct,
'I think, ſhews you clearly I do not believe there
'is much in that. And yet, Mr Jones, have I not
'enough to reſent? After what paſſed at Upton, ſo
'ſoon to engage in a new amour with another wo-
'man, while I fancied, and you pretended, your
'heart was bleeding for me!---------Indeed you have
'acted ſtrangely. Can I believe the paſſion you
'have profeſſed to me to be ſincere? Or, if I can,
'what happineſs can I aſſure myſelf of with a man
'capable of ſo much inconſtancy?' 'O! my Sophia,'
cries he, 'do not doubt the ſincerity of the pureſt
'paſſion that ever inflamed a human breaſt. Think,
'moſt adorable creature, of my unhappy ſituation,
'of my deſpair.———---Could I, my Sophia, have
'flattered myſelf with the moſt diſtant hopes of
'being ever permitted to throw myſelf at your feet,
'in the manner I do now, it would not have been in
'the power of any other woman to have inſpired a
'thought which the ſevereſt chaſtity could have con-
'demned. Inconſtancy to you! O Sophia! if you
'can have goodneſs enough to pardon what is paſſed,
'do not let any cruel future apprehenſions ſhut your
'mercy

mercy againſt me.———No repentance was ever more ſincere. O! let it reconcile me to my heaven in this dear boſom.' 'Sincere repentance, Mr Jones,' anſwered ſhe, 'will obtain the pardon of a ſinner, but it is from one who is a perfect judge of that ſincerity. A human mind may be impoſed on; nor is there any infallible method to prevent it. You muſt expect, however, that if I can be prevailed on by your repentance to pardon you, I will at leaſt inſiſt on the ſtrongeſt proof of its ſincerity.'——— 'Name any proof in my power,' anſwered Jones eagerly. 'Time,' replied ſhe; 'Time alone, Mr Jones, can convince me that you are a true penitent, and have reſolved to abandon thoſe vicious courſes, which I ſhould deteſt you for, if I imagined you capable of perſevering in them.' 'Do not imagine it,' cries Jones. 'On my knees I intreat, I implore your confidence, a confidence which it ſhall be the buſineſs of my life to deſerve.' 'Let it then,' ſaid ſhe, 'be the buſineſs of ſome part of your life to ſhew me you deſerve it. I think I have been explicit enough in aſſuring you, that when I ſee you merit my confidence, you will obtain it. After what is paſt, Sir, can you expect I ſhould take you upon your word?'

He replied, 'Don't believe me upon my word; I have a better ſecurity, a pledge for my conſtancy, which it is impoſſible to ſee and to doubt.' 'What is that?' ſaid Sophia, a little ſurpriſed. 'I will ſhew you, my charming angel,' cried Jones, ſeizing her hand, and carrying her to the glaſs. 'There, behold it there in that lovely figure, in that face, that ſhape, thoſe eyes, that mind which ſhines through theſe eyes: can the man who ſhall be in poſſeſſion of theſe be inconſtant? Impoſſible! my Sophia: they would fix a Dorimant, a lord Rocheſter. You could not doubt it, if you could ſee yourſelf with any eyes but your own.' Sophia bluſhed, and half ſmiled; but forcing again her brow into a frown, 'If I am to judge,' ſaid ſhe, 'of the future by the paſt, my image will no more remain in your heart when I am out of your ſight, than it

'will in this glaſs when I am out of the room.' 'By 'Heaven, by all that is ſacred,' ſaid Jones, 'it never 'was out of my heart. The delicacy of your ſex 'cannot conceive the groſſneſs of ours, nor how little 'one ſort of amour has to do with the heart.' 'I 'will never marry a man,' replied Sophia, very gravely, 'who ſhall not learn refinement enough to 'be as incapable as I am myſelf of making ſuch a 'diſtinction.' 'I will learn it,' ſaid Jones. 'I have 'learnt it already. The firſt moment of hope that 'my Sophia might be my wife, taught it me at once; 'and all the reſt of her ſex from that moment be-'came as little the objects of deſire to my ſenſe, as 'of paſſion to my heart.' 'Well,' ſaid Sophia, 'the 'proof of this muſt be from time. Your ſituation, 'Mr Jones, is now altered, and I aſſure you I have 'great ſatisfaction in the alteration. You will now 'want no opportunity of being near me, and con-'vincing me that your mind is altered too.' 'O! 'my angel,' cries Jones, 'how ſhall I thank thy 'goodneſs? And are you ſo good to own, that you 'have a ſatisfaction in my proſperity?——Believe 'me, believe me, Madam, it is you alone have given 'a reliſh to that proſperity, ſince I owe it to the dear 'hope——O! my Sophia, let it not be a diſtant 'one,——I will be all obedience to your commands. 'I will not dare to preſs any thing further than you 'permit me. Yet let me entreat you to appoint a 'ſhort trial. O! tell me, when I may expect you 'will be convinced of what is moſt ſolemnly true.' 'When I have gone voluntarily thus far, Mr Jones,' ſaid ſhe, 'I expect not to be preſſed. Nay, I will 'not.'—'O don't look unkindly thus, my Sophia,' cries he. 'I do not, I dare not preſs you.—Yet per-'mit me at leaſt once more to beg you would fix the 'period. O! conſider the impatience of love.'—— 'A twelvemonth, perhaps,' ſaid ſhe. 'O my So-'phia,' cries he, 'you have named an eternity.'— 'Perhaps it may be ſomething ſooner,' ſays ſhe; 'I 'will not be teazed. If your paſſion for me be what 'I would have it, I think you may now be eaſy.'— 'Eaſy, Sophia! call not ſuch exulting happineſs

'as

'as mine by ſo cold a name.—— O, tranſporting 'thought! am I not aſſured that the bleſſed day will 'come, when I ſhall call you mine; when fears ſhall 'be no more; when I ſhall have that dear, that vaſt, 'that exquiſite, ecſtatic delight of making my Sophia 'happy?'—— 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid ſhe, 'that day is in 'your own power'—— 'O, my dear, my divine an-'gel,' cried he, 'theſe words have made me mad with 'joy.—But I muſt, I will thank thoſe dear lips 'which have ſo ſweetly pronounced my bliſs.' He then caught her in his arms, and kiſſed her with an ardour he had never ventured before.

At this inſtant, Weſtern, who had ſtood ſome time liſtening, burſt into the room, and with his hunting voice and phraſe, cried out, 'To her boy, to her, go 'to her.——That's it, little honeys, O that's it. 'Well, what, is all over? Hath ſhe appointed the day, 'boy? What, ſhall it be to-morrow or next day? It 'ſhan't be put off a minute longer than next day, 'I am reſolved.' 'Let me beſeech you, Sir,' ſays Jones, 'don't let me be the occaſion'—— 'Beſeech 'mine a——,' cries Weſtern, 'I thought thou hadſt 'been a lad of higher mettle, than to give way to a 'parcel of maidenith tricks.——I tell thee 'tis all 'flimflam. Zoodikers! the'd have the wedding to-'night with all her heart. Wouldſt not, Sophy? 'Come, confeſs, and be an honeſt girl for once. 'What, art dumb? Why doſt not ſpeak?' 'Why 'ſhould I confeſs, Sir,' ſays Sophia, 'ſince it ſeems 'you are ſo well acquainted with my thoughts?'—— 'That's a good girl,' cries he; 'and dost conſent 'then?' 'No indeed, Sir,' ſays Sophia, 'I have 'given no ſuch conſent.'—— 'And wunt not ha un 'then to-morrow, nor next day?' ſays Weſtern.—— 'Indeed, Sir,' ſays ſhe, 'I have no ſuch intention.' 'But I can tell thee,' replied he, 'why haſt nut; 'only becauſe thou doſt love to be diſobedient, and 'to plague and vex thy father.' 'Pray, Sir,' ſaid Jones, interfering—— 'I tell thee, thou art a puppy,' cried he. 'When I forbid her, then it was all no-'thing but ſighing, and whining, and languiſhing, 'and writing; now I am vor thee, ſhe is againſt 'thee.

'thee. All the ſpirit of contrary, that's all. She 'is above being guided and governed by her father, 'that is the whole truth on't. It is only to diſo- 'blige and contradict me.' 'What would my papa 'have me do?' cries Sophia. 'What would I ha 'thee do?' ſays he, 'why gi un thy hand this mo- 'ment.'——'Well, Sir,' ſaid Sophia, 'I will obey 'you. There is my hand, Mr Jones.' 'Well, and 'will you conſent to ha un to-morrow morning?' ſays Weſtern.——'I will be obedient to you, Sir,' cries ſhe.——'Why then to-morrow morning be the 'day,' cries he.——'Why then to-morrow morning 'ſhall be the day papa, ſince you will have it ſo,' ſays Sophia. Jones then fell upon his knees, and kiſſed her hand in an agony of joy, while Weſtern began to caper and dance about the room, preſently crying out, 'Where the devil is Allworthy? He is 'without now, a talking with that d——d lawyer 'Dowling, when he ſhould be minding other matters.' He then ſallied out in queſt of him, and very opportunely left the lovers to enjoy a few tender minutes alone.

But he ſoon returned with Allworthy, ſaying, 'If 'you wont believe, you may aſk her yourſelf. Haſt 'nut gin thy conſent, Sophy, to be married to-mor- 'row?' 'Such are your commands, Sir,' cries Sophia, 'and I dare not be guilty of diſobedience.' 'I hope, Madam,' cries Allworthy, 'my nephew will 'merit ſo much goodneſs, and will be always as ſen- 'ſible as myſelf of the great honour you have done 'my family. An alliance with ſo charming and ſo 'excellent a young lady would indeed be an honour 'to the greateſt in England.' 'Yes,' cries Weſtern, 'but if I had ſuffered her to ſtand ſhill I ſhall I, 'dilly dally, you might not have had that honour 'yet a while; I was forced to uſe a little fatherly 'authority to bring her to.' 'I hope not, Sir,' cries Allworthy. 'I hope there is not the leaſt conſtraint' 'Why there,' cries Weſtern, 'you may bid her un- 'ſay all again, if you will. Doſt repent heartily 'of thy promiſe, doſt not, Sophy?' 'Indeed, papa,' cries ſhe, 'I do not repent, nor do I believe I ever

'ſhall,

'shall, of any promiſe in favour of Mr Jones.' 'Then, nephew,' cries Allworthy, 'I felicitate you 'moſt heartily; for I think you are the happieſt of 'men. And, Madam, you will give me leave to con-'gratulate you on this joyful occaſion; indeed I am 'convinced you have beſtowed yourſelf on one who 'will be ſenſible of your great merit, and who will 'at leaſt uſe his beſt endeavours to deſerve it.' 'His beſt endeavours!' cries Weſtern, 'that he will, I warrant un.—Harkee, Allworthy, I'll bet thee five pound to a crown we have a boy to-morrow nine months: But prithee tell me what wut ha! Wut ha Burgundy, Champaigne, or what? for pleaſe Jupiter, we'll make a night on't.' 'Indeed, Sir,' ſaid Allworthy, 'you muſt excuſe me; both my nephew and I were engaged before I ſuſpected the near approach of his happineſs.' 'Engaged!' quoth the ſquire, 'never tell me. I won't part with thee to-night upon any occaſion. Shalt ſup here, pleaſe the lord Harry.' 'You muſt pardon me, my dear neighbour,' anſwered Allworthy; 'I have given a ſolemn promiſe, and that you know I never break.' 'Why, prithee, who art engaged to?' cries the ſquire. Allworthy then informed him; as likewiſe of the company.——'Odzookers!' anſwered the ſquire, 'I will go with thee, and ſo ſhall Sophy; for I wont part with thee to-night; and it would be barbarous to part Tom and the girl.' This offer was preſently embraced by Allworthy; and Sophia conſented, having firſt obtained a private promiſe from her father, that he would not mention a ſyllable concerning her marriage.

CHAP. *The laſt.*

In which the hiſtory is concluded.

YOUNG Nightingale had been that afternoon, by appointment, to wait on his father, who received him much more kindly than he expected. There likewiſe he met his uncle, who was returned to town in queſt of his new married daughter.

This

This marriage was the luckieſt incident which could have happened to the young gentleman; for theſe brothers lived in a conſtant ſtate of contention about the government of their children, both heartily deſpiſing the method which each other took. Each of them therefore now endeavoured as much as he could to palliate the offence which his own child had committed, and to aggravate the match of the other. This deſire of triumphing over his brother, added to the many arguments which Allworthy had uſed, ſo ſtrongly operated on the old gentleman, that he met his ſon with a ſmiling countenance, and actually agreed to ſup with him that evening at Mrs Miller's.

As for the other, who really loved his daughter with the moſt immoderate affection, there was little difficulty in inclining him to a reconciliation. He was no ſooner informed by his nephew, where his daughter and her huſband were, than he declared he would inſtantly go to her. And when he arrived there, he ſcarce ſuffered her to fall upon her knees before he took her up, and embraced her with a tenderneſs which affected all who ſaw him; and in leſs than a quarter of an hour was as well reconciled to both her and her huſband, as if he had himſelf joined their hands.

In this ſituation were affairs, when Mr Allworthy and his company arrived to complete the happineſs of Mrs Miller, who no ſooner ſaw Sophia, than ſhe gueſſed every thing that had happened; and ſo great was her friendſhip to Jones, that it added not a few tranſports to thoſe ſhe felt on the happineſs of her own daughter.

There have not, I believe, been many inſtances of a number of people met together, where every one was ſo perfectly happy as in this company. Among whom the father of young Nightingale enjoyed the leaſt perfect content: for notwithſtanding his affection for his ſon; notwithſtanding the authority and the arguments of Allworthy, together with the other motive mentioned before, he could not ſo entirely be ſatisfied with his ſon's choice; and perhaps the pre-

ſence

ence of Sophia herſelf tended a little to aggravate nd heighten his concern, as a thought now and then ggeſted itſelf, that his ſon might have had that lady r ſome ſuch other. Not that any of the charms hich adorned either the perſon or mind of Sophia, reated the uneaſineſs: it was the contents of her ther's coffers which ſet his heart a longing. Theſe ere the charms which he could not bear to think his n had ſacrificed to the daughter of Mrs Miller.

The brides were both very pretty women; but ſo otally were they eclipſed by the beauty of Sophia, hat had they not been two of the beſt-tempered girls the world, it would have raiſed ſome envy in their reaſts; for neither of their huſbands could long keep s eyes from Sophia, who ſat at the table like a queen eceiving homage, or rather like a ſuperior being reiving adoration from all around her. But it was n adoration which they gave, not which ſhe exacted: r ſhe was as much diſtinguiſhed by her modeſty and affability, as by all her other perfections.

The evening was ſpent in much true mirth. All ere happy, but thoſe the moſt, who had been moſt nhappy before. Their former ſufferings and fears ave ſuch a reliſh to their felicity, as even love and rtune in their fulleſt flow could not have given without the advantage of ſuch a compariſon. Yet as great y, eſpecially after a ſudden change and revolution circumſtances, is apt to be ſilent, and dwells rather the heart than on the tongue, Jones and Sophia apeared the leaſt merry of the whole company. Which eſtern obſerved with great impatience, often crying ut to them, 'Why do'ſt not talk, boy! Why do'ſt look ſo grave! Haſt loſt thy tongue, girl! Drink another glaſs of wine, ſha't drink another glaſs.' nd the more to enliven her, he would ſometimes ſing merry ſong, which bore ſome relation to matrimoy, and the loſs of a maidenhead. Nay, he would have roceeded ſo far on that topic, as to have driven her ut of the room, if Mr Allworthy had not checked m ſometimes by looks, and once or twice by a Fie! r Weſtern. He began indeed once to debate the atter, and aſſert his right to talk to his own daughter

ter as he thought fit; but as nobody ſeconded him, he was ſoon reduced to order.

Notwithſtanding this little reſtraint, he was ſo pleaſed with the chearfulneſs and good humour of the company, that he inſiſted on their meeting the next day at his lodgings. They all did ſo: and the lovely Sophia, who was now in private become a bride too, officiated as the miſtreſs of the ceremonies, or, in the polite phraſe, did the honours of the table. She had that morning given her hand to Jones, in the chapel at Doctors-Commons, where Mr Allworthy, Mr Weſtern, and Mrs Miller, were the only perſons preſent.

Sophia had earneſtly deſired her father, that no others of the company, who were that day to dine with him, ſhould be acquainted with her marriage. The ſame ſecrecy was enjoined to Mrs Miller, and Jones undertook for Allworthy. This ſomewhat reconciled the delicacy of Sophia to the public entertainment, which, in compliance with her father's will, ſhe was obliged to go to, greatly againſt her own inclinations. In confidence of this ſecrecy, the went through the day pretty well, 'till the 'ſquire, who was now advanced into the ſecond bottle, could contain his joy no longer, but, filling out a bumper, drank a health to the bride. The health was immediately pledged by all preſent, to the great confuſion of our poor blushing Sophia, and the great concern of Jones upon her account. To ſay truth, there was not a perſon preſent made wiſer by this diſcovery; for Mrs Miller had whiſpered it to her daughter, her daughter to her huſband, her huſband to his ſiſter, and ſhe to all the reſt.

Sophia now took the firſt opportunity of withdrawing with the ladies, and the 'ſquire ſat in to his cups, in which he was, by degrees, deſerted by all the company, except the uncle of young Nightingale, who loved his bottle as well as Weſtern himſelf. The two, therefore, ſat ſtoutly to it, during the whole evening, and long after that happy hour which had ſurrendered the charming Sophia to the eager arms of her enraptured Jones.

Thus, reader, we have at length brought our hiſtory to a concluſion, in which, to our great pleaſure, though

though contrary perhaps to thy expectation, Mr Jones appears to be the happieſt of all human kind: for what happineſs this world affords equal to the poſſeſſion of ſuch a woman as Sophia, I ſincerely own I have never as yet diſcovered.

As to the other perſons who have made any conſiderable figure in this hiſtory, as ſome may deſire to know a little more concerning them, we will proceed, in as few words as poſſible, to ſatisfy their curioſity.

Allworthy hath never yet been prevailed upon to ſee Blifil, but he hath yielded to the importunity of Jones, backed by Sophia, to ſettle 200*l.* a year upon him; to which Jones hath privately added a third. Upon this income he lives in one of the northern counties, about 200 miles diſtant from London, and lays up 200*l.* a year out of it, in order to purchaſe a ſeat in the next parliament from a neighbouring borough, which he has bargained for with an attorney there. He is alſo lately turned methodiſt, in hopes of marrying a very rich widow of that ſect, whoſe eſtate lies in that part of the kingdom.

Square died ſoon after he writ the before-mentioned letter; and as to Thwackum, he continues at his vicarage. He hath made many fruitleſs attempts to regain the confidence of Allworthy, or to ingratiate himſelf with Jones, both of whom he flatters to their faces, and abuſes behind their backs. But in his ſtead, Mr Allworthy hath lately taken Mr Abraham Adams into his houſe, of whom Sophia is grown immoderately fond, and declares he ſhall have the tuition of her children.

Mrs Fitzpatrick is ſeparated from her huſband, and retains the little remains of her fortune. She lives in reputation at the polite end of the town, and is ſo good an œconomiſt, that ſhe ſpends three times the income of her fortune, without running in debt. She maintains a perfect intimacy with the lady of the Iriſh peer; and in acts of friendſhip to her repays all the obligations ſhe owes to her huſband.

Mrs Weſtern was ſoon reconciled to her niece Sophia, and hath ſpent two months together with her in the country. Lady Bellaſton made the latter a for-

mal visit at her return to town, where she behaved to Jones as to a perfect stranger, and with great civility wished him joy on his marriage.

Mr Nightingale hath purchased an estate for his son in the neighbourhood of Jones, where the young gentleman, his lady, Mrs Miller, and her little daughter reside, and the most agreeable intercourse subsists between the two families.

As to those of lower account, Mrs Waters returned into the country, had a pension of 60*l.* a year settled upon her by Mr Allworthy, and is married to parson Supple, on whom, at the instance of Sophia, Western hath bestowed a considerable living.

Black George hearing the discovery that had been made, run away, and was never since heard of; and Jones bestowed the money on his family, but not in equal proportions, for Molly had much the greatest share.

As for Partridge, Jones hath settled 50*l.* a-year on him; and he hath again set up a school, in which he meets with much better encouragement than formerly; and there is now a treaty of marriage on foot between him and Miss Molly Seagrim, which through the mediation of Sophia is likely to take effect.

We now return to take leave of Mr Jones and Sophia, who, within two days after their marriage, attended Mr Western and Mr Allworthy into the country. Western hath resigned his family-seat, and the greater part of his estate to his son-in-law, and hath retired to a lesser house of his, in another part of the country, which is better for hunting. Indeed he is often as a visitant with Mr Jones, who, as well as his daughter, hath an infinite delight in doing every thing in their power to please him. And this desire of theirs is attended with such success, that the old gentleman declares he was never happy in his life till now. He hath here a parlour and antichamber to himself, where he gets drunk with whom he pleases; and his daughter is still as ready as formerly to play to him whenever he desires it. Jones hath assured her that as next to pleasing her, one of his highest satisfactions is to contribute to the happiness of the old man; so the great duty which she expresses and performs to her father renders her

er almoſt equally dear to him, with the love which he beſtows on himſelf.

Sophia hath already produced him two fine children, a boy and a girl, of whom the old gentleman is ſo fond, that he ſpends much of his time in the nurſery, where he declares the tattling of his little grand-daughter, who is above a year and a half old, is ſweeter muſic than the fineſt cry of dogs in England.

Allworthy was likewiſe greatly liberal to Jones on the marriage, and hath omitted no inſtance of ſhewing his affection to him and his lady, who love him as a father. Whatever in the nature of Jones had a tendency to vice, has been corrected by continual converſation with this good man, and by his union with the lovely and virtuous Sophia. He hath alſo, by reflection on his paſt follies, acquired a diſcretion and prudence very uncommon in one of his lively parts.

To conclude, as there are not to be found a worthier man and woman, than this fond couple, ſo neither can any be imagined more happy. They preſerve the pureſt and tendereſt affection for each other, an affection daily encreaſed and confirmed by mutual endearments and mutual eſteem. Nor is their conduct towards their relations and friends leſs amiable, than towards one another. And ſuch is their condeſcenſion, their indulgence, and their beneficence to thoſe below them, that there is not a neighbour, a tenant, or a ſervant, who doth not moſt gratefully bleſs the day when Mr Jones was married to his Sophia.

THE END OF THE HISTORY OF A FOUNDLING.

PHILOSOPHICAL TRANSACTIONS.

For the YEAR 1742-3.

The CONTENTS.

Several Papers *relating to the* Terreſtrial CHRYSIPUS, GOLDEN-FOOT, *or* GUINEA, *an* Inſect, *or* Vegetable, *which has this ſurpriſing* Property, *that being cut into ſeveral pieces, each piece lives, and in a ſhort time becomes as perfect an Inſect, or Vegetable, as that of which it was originally only a part.*

Abſtract of PART of a Letter from the HEER ROTTENSCRACH in Germany, communicating Obſervations on the CHRYSIPUS.

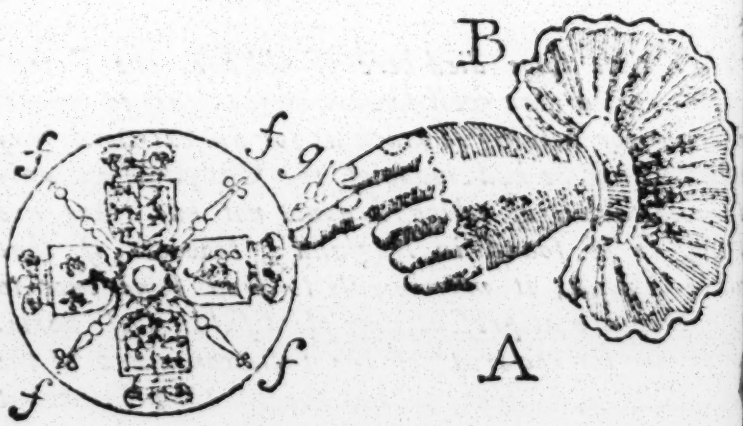
SIR,

SOME time ſince died here of old age, one Petrus Gualterus, a man well known in the learned world, and famous for nothing ſo much as for an extraordinary collection which he had made of the Chryſipi, *an animal or vegetable; of which I doubt not but there are ſtill ſome to be found in England: however, if that ſhould be difficult, it may be eaſy to ſend ſome over to me; as they are at preſent very plentiful in theſe parts. I can anſwer for the truth of the facts contained in the paper I ſend you, as there is not one of them but what I have ſeen repeated above twenty times; and I wiſh others may be encouraged to try the experiments over again, and ſatisfy themſelves of the truth by their own eyes. The accounts of the* Chryſipi, *as well as the collection itſelf, were found in the cabinet of the above-mentioned Petrus, after his death: for he could never be prevailed on to communicate a ſight of either while alive. I am,*

SIR, &c.

The

The figure of the TERRESTRIAL CHRYSIPU*sticking to a finger.*



Observations and experiments upon the TERRESTRIAL CHRYSIPUS, *or* GUINEA, *by Mynheer* P trus Gualterus.

Tranſlated from the FRENCH, *by* P. H. I. Z. C. G.

THE animal in queſtion is a terreſtrial vege table or inſect, of which mention is made the *Philoſophical tranſactions* for ſeveral yea as may be ſeen in N° ooo. Art. oooo. and N° o Art. oo2. and N°—— Art. 18.

This animal or vegetable is of a rotund, orbicula or round form, as repreſented in the figure annexe In which *A.* denotes the ruffle. *B.* the hand. *G* t thumb of that hand. *D.* the finger. *E.* the pa of that finger to which the CHRYSIPUS ſticks.

f. f.

f. f. f. f. four tubes, repreſenting the πῖος *, or *man's ſtaff*, mentioned by Galen in his Treatiſe *de Uſu Partium*; and by Ariſtotle, in that little book called his Αρχαιβιβλιον or *Maſter-piece*. The το θηλυκον, or *woman's pipe*, an oblong perforated ſubſtance, to which the ſaid πῖη directly tend, is repreſented by the letter *C*. *The mouth of the* Chryſipus *is in this anterior middle, it opens into the ſtomach, which takes up the whole length of the body*. The whole body forms but one pipe, a ſort of gut which can be opened but at one end, *i. e.* at letter *C*.

The ſize of the body of the Chryſipus varies according to its different ſpecies.

I know two ſpecies only, differing in extent almoſt one half; which, for diſtinction ſake, I call the *whole Chryſipus*, and the *hemi-Chryſipus*. The latter of theſe is by no means ſo valuable as the former. The length of the πῖη differ likewiſe in proportion to the different ſize or extenſion of theſe two.

The πῖη of thoſe of a modern growth are ſo imperfect and inviſible to the naked eye, that it is much to be feared the ſpecies will ſoon be entirely loſt among us: and indeed in England, they are obſerved of late to be much rarer than formerly, eſpecially in the country, where at preſent there are very few of them to be found: but at the ſame time it is remarked that in ſome places of the continent, particularly in a certain part of Germany, they are much plentier; being to be found in great numbers, where formerly there were ſcarce any to be met with.

I have not, after the minuteſt obſervation, been able to ſettle, with any degree of certainty, whether this be really an animal or vegetable, or whether it be not ſtrictly neither, or rather both. For as I have by the help of my microſcope diſcovered ſome of its parts to reſemble thoſe of a lion; I have at other times taken notice of ſomething not unlike the *Flower-de-luce*. Not to repeat thoſe parts above-mentioned, which bear great analogy to the Αιδοια of the human body. On their extremities (if they are

* See *Philoſ. Tranſact.* concerning the *arbor vitæ*, *anno* 1732.

not

not very old) may be ſeen certain letters forming the names of ſeveral of our kings; whence I have been almoſt inclined to conclude, that theſe are the flowers mentioned by Virgil, and which appear to have been ſo extremely ſcarce in his time.

Dic quibus in terris inſcripti nomina Regum
Naſcuntur flores.

Particularly as he adds,

——*Et Phyllida ſolus habeto.*

Of which we ſhall take notice hereafter, when we come to ſpeak of its properties. What hath principally diſſuaded me from an opinion of its being an animal, is, that I could never obſerve any ſymptoms of voluntary motion: but indeed the ſame may be ſaid of an oyſter, which I think is not yet ſettled by the learned to be *abſolutely* a vegetable.

But though it hath not, or ſeems not to have any progreſſive motion of its own, yet it is very eaſy to communicate a motion to it. Indeed ſome perſons have made them fly all over the town with great velocity.

What is ſaid of the *Polypus*, in a late excellent paper communicated to the Royal Society, is likewiſe applicable to the *Chryſipus*.

"They make uſe of their progreſſive motion, "when communicated to them, to place themſelves "conveniently, ſo as to catch their prey. They are "voracious animals; their mm are ſo many ſnares "which they ſet for numbers of ſmall *inſects*. As "ſoon as any of them touches one of the mm, it is "caught."

But then it differs from the *Polypus* in the conſequence: for inſtead of making the inſect its prey, it becomes itſelf a prey to it; and inſtead of conveying an *inſect* twice as large as its own mouth into it, in imitation of the *Polypus*, the poor *Chryſipus* is itſelf conveyed into the *Loculus* or pouch of an *inſect* a thouſand times as large as itſelf. Notwithſtanding which, this wretched animal (for ſo I think we may be

be allowed to call it) is ſo eager after its prey, that if the *inſect* (which ſeldom happens) makes any reſiſtance, it ſummons other *Chryſipi* to its aid, which in the end hardly ever fail of ſubduing it, and getting into its pouch.

The learned *Gualterus* goes on in theſe words: "A "*Chryſipus*, by the ſimple contact of my own finger, "has ſo cloſely attached itſelf to my hand, that by "the joint and indefatigable labour of ſeveral of my "friends, it could by no means be ſevered, or made "to quit its hold."

As to the generation of the *Chryſipus*, it differs from all other animals or vegetables whatever: for though it ſeems the beſt ſupplied for this natural function, nature having provided each female part with four male ones, which one would think ſufficient; yet it may be ſaid, as of the *Polypus*, they have no diſtinguiſhed place by which they bring forth their young.

Gualterus judiciouſly remarks*: "I have (ſays he) "ſome of them, that have greatly *multiplied under* "*my eyes*, and of which I might almoſt ſay, that "they have produced young ones from all the exterior parts of their body.

"I have learned by a *continual attention* to the "two ſpecies of them, that all the individuals of "theſe ſpecies produce young ones."

"I have for ſixty years had under my eye thouſands of them; and though I have OBSERVED THEM CONSTANTLY, and with ATTENTION, ſo as to watch them night and day, I never obſerved any thing like the common animal copulation."

"I tried at firſt two of them; but theſe I found would not produce a compleat *Chryſipus*; at leaſt I had reaſon to think the operation would be ſo ſlow, that I muſt have waited ſome years for its completion. Upon this, I tried a hundred of them together; by whoſe marvellous union (whether it be, that they mix total, like thoſe heavenly ſpirits mentioned by Milton, or by any

* Vid. Remarks on the *Polypus* p. 5.

"other

" other proceſs not yet revealed to human wit) they
" were found in the year's end to produce three,
" four, and ſometimes five complete *Chryſipi*. I
" have indeed often made them in that ſpace produce
" ten or twenty; but this hath been by ſome held a
" dangerous experiment, not only to the parent
" *Chryſipi* themſelves, which have by theſe means been
" utterly loſt and deſtroyed, but even to the philoſo-
" pher who hath attempted it: for as ſome curious
" perſons have, by hermetic experiments, endanger-
" ed the loſs of their teeth, ſo we, by a too intenſe
" application to this *Chryſipean* philoſophy, have been
" ſometimes found to endanger our ears." He then
proceeds thus:

* " Another fact, which I have obſerved, has
" proved to me, that they have the faculty of mul-
" tiplying, before they are ſevered from their parent.
" I have ſeen a *Chryſipus*, ſtill adhering, bring forth
" young ones: and thoſe young ones themſelves
" have alſo brought forth others. Upon ſuppoſition
" that perhaps there was ſome *copulation between the*
" *parent and young ones*, whilſt they were yet united
" or between the young ones coming from the body
" of the ſame parent; I made divers experiments to
" be ſure of the fact; but not one of thoſe experiments
" ever led me to any thing that could give the idea of
" a copulation."

I now proceed to the ſingularities reſulting from the operation I have tried upon them.

A *Chryſipus* of the larger kind may be divided into one-and-twenty ſubſtances (whether animal or vegetable we determine not) every ſubſtance being at leaſt as large as the original *Chryſipus*. Theſe may again be ſubdivided, each of them into twenty four; and what is very remarkable, every one of theſe parts is heavier, and rather larger than the firſt *Chryſipus*. The only difference in this change, is that of the colour; for the firſt ſort are yellow, the ſecond white, and the third reſemble the complexion and ſubſtance of many human faces.

* Remarks, p. 7.

These ſubdivided parts are by ſome obſerved to loſe in a great degree their adhereſcent quality; notwithſtanding which, *Gualterus* writes, that, from the minuteſt obſervations upon his own experience, they all adhered with equal tenacity to his own fingers.

The manner of dividing a *Chryſipus* differs, however, greatly from that of the *Polypus*; for whereas we are taught in that excellent treatiſe above-mentioned, that

* "If the body of a *Polypus* is cut into two parts "tranſverſely, each of thoſe parts becomes a "complete *Polypus*; on the very day of the operation, "the firſt part, or anterior end of the *Polypus*, that "is, the head, the mouth and the arms, this part, "I ſay, lengthens itſelf, it creeps, and eats."

"The ſecond part, *which has no head, gets one*; a "mouth forms itſelf at the anterior end; and ſhoots "forth arms. This re-production comes about more "or leſs quickly, according as the weather is more "or leſs warm. In ſummer, I have ſeen arms begin "to ſprout out 24 hours after the operation, and *the "new head perfected in every reſpect in a few days.*"

"Each of thoſe parts thus become a perfect *Polypus*, performs abſolutely all its functions. It creeps, it eats, it grows, and it multiplies; *and all that*, as much as a *Polypus* which never had been cut."

"In whatever place the body of a *Polypus* is cut, whether in the middle, or more or leſs near the head, or the poſterior part, the experiment has always the ſame ſucceſs."

"If a *Polypus* is cut tranſverſely at the ſame moment, into three or four parts, they all equally become ſo many complete ones."

"The animal is too ſmall to be cut at the ſame time into a great number of parts; *I therefore did it ſucceſſively.* I firſt cut a *Polypus* into four parts, and let them grow; next, I cut thoſe quarters again; and at this rate I proceeded, *till I had made* 50 *out of one ſingle one*: and here I ſtopp'd, for there would have been *no end of the experiment.*"

* See *Polypus*, pag 8, 9, 10.

"I have now actually by me ſeveral parts of the
" ſame *Polypus* cut into pieces above a year ago;
" ſince which time, they have produced a great
" number of young ones."

" *A Polypus may alſo be cut in two lengthways. Be-*
" *ginning by the head, one firſt ſplits the ſaid head, and*
" *afterwards the ſtomach*: the *Polypus* being in the
" form of a pipe, each half of what is thus cut length-
" ways forms a half pipe, the anterior extremity of
" which is terminated by the half of the head, the half
" of the mouth, and part of the arms. It is not long
" before the two edges of thoſe half-pipes cloſe after
" the operation: they generally begin at the poſterior
" part, and cloſe up by degrees to the anterior part.
" *Then, each half-pipe becomes a whole one, complete:*
" a ſtomach is formed, in which nothing is wanting;
" and *out of each half mouth a whole one is formed alſo.*"

" I have ſeen all this done in leſs than an hour;
" and that the *Polypus* produced from each of thoſe
" halves, at the end of that time did not differ from
" the whole ones, except that it had fewer arms;
" but in a few days more grew out."

" I have cut a *Polypus* lengthways, between ſeven
" and eight in the morning; and between two and
" three in the afternoon, *each of the parts has been*
" *able to eat a worm as long as itſelf.*"

" If a *Polypus* is cut lengthways, beginning at the
" head, and the ſection is not carried quite through;
" the reſult is, a *Polypus* with two bodies, two heads,
" and one tail. Some of thoſe bodies and heads may
" again be cut lengthways ſoon after. In this manner
" I have *produced a* Polypus *that had ſeveral bodies,*
" *as many heads, and one tail.* I afterwards, at once
" cut off the ſeven heads of this new *Hydra*: ſeven
" others grew again: *and the heads that were cut off*
" *became each a complete* Polypus."

" I cut a *Polypus*, tranſverſely into two parts: I
" put theſe two parts cloſe to each other again, and
" they re-united where they had been cut. The *Po-*
" *lypus*, thus re-united, ate the day after it had un-
" dergone this operation: it is ſince grown, and has
" multiplied."

" *I took the poſterior part of one* Polypus, *and the* " *anterior of another, and I have brought them to re-* " *unite in the ſame manner as the foregoing.* Next day " the *Polypus that reſulted*, ate: it has continued well " theſe two months ſince the operation: it is grown, " and has put forth young ones, from each of the " parts of which it was formed. The two foregoing " experiments do not always ſucceed; it often hap- " pens, that the two parts will not join again."

" In order to comprehend the experiment I am " now going to ſpeak of, one ſhould recollect, that " the whole body of a *Polypus* forms only one pipe, " a ſort of gut, or pouch."

" *I have been able to turn that pouch, that body of* " *the* Polypus, INSIDE-OUTWARDS: AS ONE MAY " TURN A STOCKING."

" I have ſeveral by me, that have remained turned " in this manner; THEIR INSIDE IS BECOME THEIR " OUTSIDE, AND THEIR OUTSIDE THEIR INSIDE: " they eat, they grow, and they multiply, as if they " had never been turned."

Now in the diviſion and ſubdiviſion of our *Chryſipus*, we are forced to proceed in quite a different manner; namely, by the metabolic or mutative, not by the ſchyſtic or diviſive. Some have indeed attempted this latter method; but, like that great philoſopher the elder Pliny, they have periſhed in their diſquiſitions, as he did, by ſuffocation. Indeed there is a method called the *Kleptiſtic*, which hath been preferred to the metabolic: but this is too dangerous; the ingenious Gualterus never carried it farther than the metabolic, contenting himſelf ſometimes to divide the original *Chryſipus* into twenty-two parts, and again to ſubdivide theſe into twenty-five; but this requires great art.

It can't be doubted but that Mr Trembley will, in the work he is pleaſed to promiſe us, give ſome account of the longevity of the *Polypus*. As to the age of the *Chryſipus*, it differs extremely; ſome being of equal duration with the life of man, and ſome of ſcarce a moment's exiſtence. The beſt method of preſerving them is, I believe, in bags, or cheſts, in large numbers; for they ſeldom live long when they are alone.

The great Gualterus ſays, he thought he could never put enough of them together. If you carry them in your pockets ſingly, or in pairs, as ſome do, they will laſt a very little while, and in ſome pockets not a day.

* We are told of the *Polypus*, "That they are to "be looked for in ſuch ditches whoſe water is ſtocked "with ſmall inſects. Pieces of wood, leaves, aquatic "plants, in ſhort, every thing is to be taken out of "the water, that is met with at the bottom, or on the "ſurface of the water, on the edges, and in the mid-"dle of the ditches. What is thus taken out, muſt be "put into a glaſs of clear water, and theſe inſects, if "there are any, will ſoon diſcover themſelves; eſpe-"cially if the glaſs is let ſtand a little without moving "it: for thus the inſects, which contract themſelves "when they are firſt taken out, will again extend "themſelves when they are at reſt, and become there-"by ſo much the more remarkable."

The *Chryſipus* is to be looked for in ſcrutores, and behind wainſcots in old houſes. In ſearching for them, particular regard is to be had to the perſons who inhabit, or have inhabited in the ſame houſes, by obſerving which rule you may often prevent throwing away your labour. They love rather to be with old than young perſons, and deteſt finery ſo much, that they are ſeldom to be found in the pockets of laced clothes, and hardly ever in gilded palaces. They are ſometimes very difficult to be met with, even though you know where they are, by reaſon of *pieces of wood, iron*, &c. which muſt be removed away before you can come at them. There are, however, ſeveral ſure methods of procuring them, which are all aſcertained in a treatiſe on that ſubject, compoſed by Petrus Gualterus, which, now he is dead, will ſhortly ſee the light.

I come now, in the laſt place, to ſpeak of the virtues of the *Chryſipus*: in theſe it exceeds not only the *Polypus*, of which not one ſingle virtue is recorded, but all other animals and vegetables whatever. Indeed I intend here only to ſet down ſome of its chief qualities; for to enumerate all, would require a large volume.

* *Polypus*, p. 1, 2.

First

First, then, A ſingle *Chryſipus* ſtuck on to the finger, will make a man talk for a full hour, nay, will make him ſay whatever the perſon who ſticks it on deſires; and again, if you deſire ſilence, it will as effectually ſtop the moſt loquacious tongue. Sometimes, indeed, one or two, or even twenty, are not ſufficient; but if you apply the proper number, they ſeldom or never fail of ſucceſs. It will likewiſe make men blind or deaf, as you think proper; and all this without doing the leaſt injury to the ſeveral organs.

Secondly, It hath a moſt miraculous quality of turning black into white, or white into black. Indeed it hath the powers of the priſmatic glaſs, and can, from any object, reflect what colour it pleaſes.

Thirdly, It is the ſtrongeſt love-powder in the world, and hath ſuch efficacy on the female ſex, that it hath often produced love in the fineſt women to the moſt worthleſs and ugly, old and decrepit of our ſex.

To give the ſtrongeſt idea, in one inſtance, of the falubrious quality of the *Chryſipus*: it is a medicine which the phyſicians are ſo fond of taking themſelves, that few of them care to viſit a patient without ſwallowing a doſe of it.

To conclude, *facts like theſe I have related, to be admitted*, require the moſt convincing proofs. *I venture to ſay, I am able to produce ſuch proofs.* In the mean time, I refer my curious reader to the treatiſe I have above-mentioned, which is not yet publiſhed, and perhaps never may.

POSTSCRIPT.

Since I compoſed the above treatiſe, I have been informed, that theſe animals ſwarm in England all over the country, like the locuſts, once in SEVEN years; and like them too, they generally cauſe much miſchief, and greatly ruin the country in which they have ſwarmed.

THE FIRST

OLYNTHIAC

OF

DEMOSTHENES.

THE FIRST

OLYNTHIAC

OF

DEMOSTHENES.

The ARGUMENT.

Olynthus *was a powerful free city of* Thrace, *on the confines of* Macedonia. *By certain alluring offers,* Philip *had tempted them into an alliance with him, the terms of which were a joint war againſt the* Athenians, *and if a peace, a joint peace. The* Olynthians, *ſome time after, becoming jealous of his growing power, detach themſelves from his alliance, and make a ſeparate peace with the* Athenians. Philip, *exclaiming againſt this, as a breach of their former treaty, and glad of an opportunity which he had long been ſeeking, immediately declares war againſt them, and beſieges their city. Upon this, they diſpatch an embaſſy to* Athens *for ſuccour. The ſubject of this embaſſy coming to be debated among the* Athenians, Demoſthenes *gives his ſentiments in the following oration.*

NO treaſures, O Athenians, can, I am confident, be ſo deſirable in your eyes, as to diſcover what is moſt advantageous to be done for this city, in the affair now before you. And ſince it is of ſo important a nature, the ſtricteſt attention ſhould be given

given to all those who are willing to deliver their opinions: for not only the salutary counsels which any one may have premeditated, are to be heard and received; but I consider it as peculiar to your fortune and good genius, that many things, highly expedient, may suggest themselves to the speakers, even extemporarily, and without premeditation; and then you may easily, from the whole, collect the most useful resolutions. The present occasion wants only a tongue to declare, that the posture of these affairs requires your immediate application, if you have any regard for your preservation. I know not what disposition we all entertain; but my own opinion is, that we vote a supply of men to the Olynthians, and that we send them immediately; and thus by lending them our assistance now, we shall prevent the accidents which we have formerly felt from falling again on us. Let an embassy be dispatched, not only to declare these our intentions, but to see them executed. For my greatest apprehension is, that the artful Philip, who well knows to improve every opportunity, by concessions, where they are most convenient, and by threats, which we may believe him capable of fulfilling, at the same time objecting our absence to our allies, may draw from the whole some considerable advantage to himself. This, however, O Athenians, will give some comfort, that the very particular circumstance which adds the greatest strength to Philip, is likewise favourable to us. In his own person he unites the several powers of general, of king and of treasurer; he presides absolutely in all councils, and is constantly at the head of his army. This indeed will contribute greatly to his successes in the field, but will have a contrary effect with regard to that truce which he is so desirous to make with the Olynthians; who will find their contention not to be for glory, nor for the enlargement of dominion: the subversion or slavery of their country is what they fight against. They have seen in what manner he hath treated those Amphipolitans, who surrendered their city to him; and those Pydnæans, who received him into theirs: and indeed, universally,

universally, a kingly state is, in my opinion, a thing in which republics will never trust; and, above all, if their territories border upon each other. These things, therefore, O Athenians, being well known to you, when you enter on this debate, your resolutions must be for war, and to prosecute it with as much vigour as you have formerly shewn on any occasion. You must resolve to raise supplies with the utmost alacrity; to muster yourselves; to omit nothing: for no longer can a reason be assigned, or excuse alledged, why you should decline what the present exigency requires. For the Olynthians, whom with such universal clamours you have formerly incited on our fomenting against Philip, are now embroiled with him by mere accident; and this most advantageously for you; since had they undertaken the war at your request, their alliance might have been less stable, and only to serve a present turn; but since their animosity arises from injuries offered to themselves, their hostility will be firm; as well on account of their fears, as of their resentment. The opportunity which now offers, is not, O Athenians, to be lost, nor should you suffer what you have already often suffered. For had we, when we returned from succouring the Eubæans, when Hierax and Stratrocles from the Amphipolitans, in this very place, besought you to sail to their assistance, and to receive their city into your protection; had we then consulted our own interest with the same zeal with which we provided for the safety of the Eubæans, we had then possessed ourselves of Amphipolis, and escaped the troubles which have since perplexed us. Again, when we were first acquainted with the sieges of Pydna, Potidea, Methone, Pagasæ, and others, (for I will not waste time in enumerating all) had we then assisted only one of these with proper vigour, we should have found Philip much humbler, and easier to be dealt with: whereas, now, by constantly pretermitting the opportunities when they presented themselves, and trusting in fortune for the good success of future events, we have increased the power, O Athenians, of Philip ourselves, and have raised him

him higher than any king of Macedonia ever was. Now then an opportunity is come. What is it? why this which the Olynthians have of their own accord offered to this city; nor is it inferior to any of those we have formerly lost. To me, O Athenians, it appears, that if we settle a just account with the gods, notwithstanding all things are not as they ought to be, they are entitled to our liberal thanksgivings. For as to our losses in war, they are justly to be set down to our own neglect: but that we formerly suffered not these misfortunes, and that an alliance now appears to balance these evils, if we will but accept it: this, in my opinion, must be referred to the benevolence of the gods. But it happens as in the affair of riches, of which, I think, it is proverbially said, that if a man preserves the wealth he attains, he is greatly thankful to fortune; but if he insensibly consumes it, his gratitude to fortune is consumed at the same time; so in public affairs: if we make not a right improvement of opportunities, we forget the good offered us by the gods: for from the final event we generally form our judgments of all that preceded. It is therefore highly necessary, O Athenians, to take effectual care, that by making a right use of the occasion now offered us, we wipe off the stains contracted by our former conduct; for should we, O Athenians, desert those people likewise, and Philip be enabled to destroy Olynthus, will any man tell me what afterwards shall stop his future progress, wherever he desires to extend it? But consider, O Athenians, and see, by what means this Philip, once so inconsiderable, is now become so great. He first became master of Amphipolis, secondly of Pydna, next of Potidea, and then of Methone. After these conquests, he turned his arms towards Thessaly, where having reduced Phera, Pagasæ, Magnesia, he marched on to Thrace. Here, after he had dethroned some kings, and given crowns to others, he fell sick. On a small amendment of health, instead of refreshing himself with repose, he fell presently on the Olynthians. His expeditions against the Illyrians, the

Paeonians againſt Arymba, and who can recount all the other nations I omit? But ſhould any man ſay, why therefore do you commemorate theſe things to us now? my anſwer is, that you may know, O Athenians, and ſenſibly perceive theſe two things. Firſt, how pernicious it is to neglect the leaſt article of what ought to be done; and, ſecondly, that you may diſcern the reſtleſs diſpoſition of Philip to undertake, and his alacrity to execute: whence we may conclude, he will never think he hath done enough, nor indulge himſelf in eaſe. If then his diſpoſition be to aim ſtill at greater and greater conqueſts, and ours to neglect every brave meaſure for our defence; conſider in what event we can hope theſe things ſhould terminate! Good gods! is there any of you ſo infatuated, that he can be ignorant that the war will come home to us, if we neglect it? and if this ſhould happen, I fear, O Athenians, that we ſhall imitate thoſe who borrow money at great uſury, who, for a ſhort affluence of preſent wealth, are afterwards turned out of their original patrimony. So we ſhall be found to pay dearly for our ſloth, and by giving our minds entirely up to pleaſure, ſhall bring on ourſelves many and grievous calamities, againſt our will ſhall be at laſt reduced to a neceſſity of action, and to contend even for our own country. Perhaps ſome one may object, that to find fault is eaſy, and within any man's capacity; but to adviſe proper meaſures to be taken in the preſent exigency, is the part of a counſellor. I am not ignorant, O Athenians, that not thoſe who have been the firſt cauſes of the misfortune, but thoſe who have afterwards delivered their opinions concerning it, fall often under your ſevere diſpleaſure, when the ſucceſs doth not anſwer their expectations. Be that as it will, I do not ſo tender my own ſafety, that, from any regard to that, I ſhould conceal what I imagine may conduce to your welfare.

The meaſures you are to take are, in my opinion, two. Firſt, to preſerve the Olynthian cities by ſending a ſupply of men to their aſſiſtance; ſecondly, to ravage the country of the enemy; and this by attacking it both by ſea and land. If either of theſe be

neglected, I much fear the success of your expedition: for should he, while you are wasting his territories, by submitting to suffer this, take Olynthus; he will be easily able to return home, and defend his own. On the other hand, if you only send succours to the Olynthians; when Philip perceives himself safe at home, he will set down before Olynthus, and employing every artifice against the town, will at length master it. We must therefore assist the Olynthians with numerous forces, and in two several places. This is my advice concerning the manner of our assisting them. As for the supply of money to be raised; you have a treasury, O Athenians, you have a treasury fuller of money, set apart for military uses, than any other city of Greece; this fund you may apply according to your pleasure, on this occasion: if the army be supplied this way, you will want no tax: if not, you will hardly find any tax sufficient. What? says some one, do you move to have this fund applied to the army? Not I, truly; I only suggest that an army should be levied; that this fund should be applied to it; that those who do their duty to the public, should receive their reward from it; whereas in celebrating the public festivals, much is received by those who do nothing for it.

As to the rest, I think all should contribute, largely if much wanted, less if little. Money is wanted, and, without it, nothing which is necessary to be done can be performed. Others propose other means of raising it; of which do you fix on that which seems most advantageous, and apply yourselves to your preservation, while you have an opportunity: for you ought to consider and weigh well the posture in which Philip's affairs now stand: for it appears to me, that no man, even though he had not examined them with much accuracy, can imagine them to be in the fairest situation. He would never have entered into this war, had he thought it would have been protracted. He hoped, at his very entrance, to have carried all things before him, which expectation hath deceived him. This, therefore, by falling out contrary to his opinion, hath given him the first check,

and

and much dejected him. Then the commotions in Theſſaly: for theſe are by nature the moſt perfidious of mortals, and have always proved ſo; as ſuch he hath now ſufficiently experienced them. They have decreed to demand Pagaſæ of him, and to forbid the fortifying Magneſia. I have moreover heard it ſaid, that the Theſſalians will no longer open their ports to him, nor ſuffer his fleets to be victualed in their markets; for that theſe ſhould go to the ſupport of the republics of Theſſaly, and not to the uſe of Philip. But ſhould he be deprived of theſe, he will find himſelf reduced to great ſtreights to provide for his auxiliaries. And further: can we ſuppoſe that Pæonia and Illyria, and all the other cities, will chuſe rather to be ſlaves than free, and their own maſters? They are not inured to bondage, and the man is, as they ſay, prone to inſolence; which is indeed very credible; for unmerited ſucceſs entirely perverts the underſtanding in weaker minds; whence it is often more difficult to retain advantages than it was to gain them. It is our parts then, O Athenians, to take advantage of this diſtreſs of Philip, to undertake the buſineſs with the utmoſt expedition; not only to diſpatch the neceſſary embaſſies, but to follow them with an army, and to ſtir up all his other enemies againſt him; for we may be aſſured of this, that had Philip the ſame opportunity, and the war was near our borders, he would be abundantly ready to invade us. Are you not then aſhamed through fear to omit bringing that on him, when you have an opportunity, which he, had he that opportunity, would ſurely bring on you? Beſides, let none of you be ignorant that you have now your option, whether you ſhould attack him abroad, or be attacked by him at home: for if the Olynthians, by your aſſiſtance, are preſerved, the kingdom of Philip will be by your forces invaded, and you may then retain your own dominions, your own city in ſafety; but ſhould Philip once maſter the Olynthians, who would oppoſe his march hither? The Thebans? let me not be thought too bitter, if I ſay, they would be ready to aſſiſt him againſt us. The Phocians? they are not able to ſave

themselves, unless you, or some one else, will assist them. But my friend, says one, Philip will have no desire to invade us. —— I answer, it would surely be most absurd, if what he imprudently now threatens us with, he would not, when he conveniently could, perform. As to the difference, whether the war be here or there, there is, I think, no need of argument: for if it was necessary for you to be thirty days in the field within your own territories, and to sustain your army with your own product, supposing no enemy there at the same time; I say the losses of your husbandmen, who supply those provisions, would be greater than the whole expence of the preceding war. But if an actual war should come to our doors, what losses must we then expect? Add to this, the insults of the enemy, and that which to generous minds is not inferior to any loss, the disgrace of such an incident. It becomes us all, therefore, when we consider all these things, to apply our utmost endeavours to expel this war from our borders: the rich, that for the many things they possess, parting with a little, they may secure the quiet possession of the rest: the young men, that having learnt experience in the art of war, at Philip's expence, in his country, they may become formidable defenders of their own: the orators, that they may be judicially vindicated in the advice they have given to the republic; since according to the success of the measures taken in consequence of their opinions, so you will judge of the advisers themselves. May this success be happy, for the sake of every one.

OF THE REMEDY OF AFFLICTION FOR THE LOSS OF OUR FRIENDS.

OF THE

REMEDY

OF

AFFLICTION

FOR THE LOSS OF OUR

FRIENDS.

IT would be a ſtrange conſideration (ſaith Cicero) that while ſo many excellent remedies have been diſcovered for the ſeveral diſeaſes of the human body, the mind ſhould be left without any aſſiſtance to alleviate and repel the diſorders which befal it. The contrary of this he aſſerts to be true, and preſcribes philoſophy to us, as a certain and infallible method to aſſwage and remove all thoſe perturbations which are liable to affect this nobler part of man.

Of the ſame opinion were all thoſe wiſe and illuſtrious antients, whoſe writings and ſayings on this ſubject have been tranſmitted to us. And when Seneca tells us, that *virtue* is ſufficient to ſubdue all our paſſions, he means no other (as he explains it in many parts of his works) than *that exalted divine philoſophy*, which conſiſted not in vain pomp, or uſeleſs curioſity, nor even in the ſearch of more profitable knowledge, but in acquiring ſolid laſting habits of virtue, and ingraſting them into our character. It was not the bare knowing the right way, but the conſtant

ſtant and ſteady walking in it, which thoſe glorious writers recommended and dignified by the auguſt names of *philoſophy* and *virtue*; which two words, if they did not always uſe in a ſynonimous ſenſe, yet they all agreed in this, that virtue was the conſummation of true philoſophy.

Now that this ſupreme philoſophy, this habit of virtue, which ſtrengthened the mind of a Socrates, or a Brutus, is really ſuperior to every evil which can attack us, I make no doubt; but in truth, this is to have a ſound, not a ſickly conſtitution. With all proper deference therefore to ſuch great authorities, they ſeem to me to aſſert no more, than that health is a remedy againſt diſeaſe; for a ſoul once poſſeſſed of that degree of virtue, which can without emotion look on poverty, pain, diſgrace, and death, as things indifferent: a ſoul, as Horace expreſſes it,

Totuſteres atque rotundus:

Or, according to Seneca, *which derives all its comfort from* WITHIN *not from* WITHOUT: which can look down on all the ruffling billows of fortune, as from a rock on ſhore we ſurvey a tempeſtuous ſea, with unconcern; ſuch a ſoul is ſurely in a ſtate of health which no vigour of bodily conſtitution can reſemble.

And as this health of mind exceeds that of the body in degree, ſo doth it in conſtancy or duration. In the latter, the tranſition from perfect health to ſickneſs is eaſy, and often ſudden; whereas the former being once firmly eſtabliſhed in the robuſt ſtate above deſcribed, is never afterwards liable to be ſhocked by any accident, or impulſe of fortune.

It muſt be confeſſed indeed, that thoſe great maſters have pointed out the way to this philoſophy, and have endeavoured to allure and perſuade others into it: but as it is certain, that few of their diſciples have been able to arrive at its perfection; nay, as ſeveral of the maſters themſelves have done little honour to their precepts, by their examples, there ſeems ſtill great occaſion for a mental phyſician, who ſhould conſider the human mind (as is often the caſe of the body)

body) in too weak and depraved a ſituation to be reſtored to firm vigour and ſanity, and ſhould propoſe rather to palliate and leſſen its diſorders, than abſolutely to cure them.

To conſider the whole catalogue of diſeaſes to which our minds are liable, and to preſcribe proper remedies for them all, would require a much longer treatiſe than what I now intend; I ſhall confine myſelf therefore to one only, and to a particular ſpecies of that one, *viz.* to *affliction for the death of our friends.*

This is a malady to which the beſt and worthieſt of men are chiefly liable. It is, like a fever, the diſtemper of a rich and generous conſtitution. Indeed we may ſay of thoſe baſe tempers, which are totally incapable of being affected with it, what a witty phyſician of the laſt age ſaid of a ſhattered and rotten carcaſe, that they are not worth preſerving.

For this reaſon the calm demeanor of Stilpo the philoſopher, who, when he had loſt his children at the taking *Megara* by *Demetrius*, concluded, *he had loſt nothing, for that he carried all which was his own about him*, hath no charms for me. I am more apt to impute ſuch ſudden tranquillity, at ſo great a loſs, to oſtentation or obduracy, than to conſummate virtue. It is rather wanting the affection, than conquering it. To overcome the affliction ariſing from the loſs of our friends, is great and praiſe-worthy; but it requires ſome reaſon and time. This ſudden unruffled compoſure is owing to mere inſenſibility; to a depravity of the heart, not goodneſs of the underſtanding.

But in a mind of a different caſt, in one ſuſceptible of a tender affection, fortune can make no other ravage equal to ſuch a loſs. It is tearing the heart, the ſoul from the body; not by a momentary operation, like that by which the moſt cruel tormentors of the body ſoon deſtroy the ſubject of their cruelty; but by a continued, tedious, though violent agitation; the ſoul having this double unfortunate ſuperiority to the body; that its agonies, as they are more exquiſite, ſo they are more laſting.

If

If however this calamity be not in a more humane diſpoſition to be preſently or totally removed, an attempt to leſſen it is, however, worth our attention. He who could reduce the torments of the gout to one half or a third of the pain, would, I apprehend, be a phyſician in much vogue and requeſt; and ſurely, ſome palliative remedies are as much worth our ſeeking in the mental diſorder; eſpecially if this latter ſhould (as appears to me who have felt both) exceed the former in its anguiſh a hundred fold.

I will proceed therefore, without further apology, to preſent my reader with the beſt preſcriptions I am capable of furniſhing; many of which have this uncommon recommendation, that I have tried them upon myſelf with ſome ſucceſs. And if Montaigne be right in his choice of a phyſician, who had himſelf had the diſeaſe which he undertook to cure, I ſhall at leaſt have that pretenſion to ſome confidence and regard.

And firſt, by way of preparative: while we yet enjoy our friends, and no immediate danger threatens us of loſing them, nothing can be wholeſomer than frequent reflections on the certainty of this loſs, however diſtant it may then appear to us; for if it be worth our while to prepare the body for diſeaſes which may poſſibly (or at moſt probably) attack us; how much more neceſſary muſt it ſeem to furniſh the mind with every aſſiſtance to encounter a calamity, which our own death only, or the previous determination of our friendſhip, can prevent from happening to us.

It hath been mentioned as one of the firſt ingredients of a *wiſe* man, that nothing befalls him entirely unforeſeen, and unexpected. And this is ſurely the principal means of taking his happineſs or miſery out of the hands of fortune. Pleaſure or pain, which ſeize us unprepared, and by ſurprize, have a double force, and are both more capable of ſubduing the mind, than when they come upon us looking for them, and prepared to receive them. That pleaſure is heighten'd by long expectation, appears to me a great though vulgar error. The mind, by conſtant premeditation on either, leſſens the ſweetneſs of the one,

one, and bitterneſs of the other. It hath been well ſaid of lovers, who for a long time procraſtinate and delay their happineſs, that they have loved themſelves out before they come to the actual enjoyment: this is as true in the more ungrateful article of affliction. The objects of our paſſions, as well as of our appetites, may be in great meaſure devoured by imagination; and grief, like hunger, may be ſo palled and abated by expectation, that it may retain no ſharpneſs when its food is ſet before it.

The thoughts which are to engage our conſideration on this head, are too various, and many of them too obvious to be enumerated: the principal are ſurely, Firſt, the certainty of the diſſolution of this alliance, however ſweet it be to us, or however cloſely the knot be tied. Secondly, the extreme ſhortneſs of its duration, even at the beſt. And, Thirdly, the many accidents by which it is daily and hourly liable of being brought to an end.

Had not the wiſe man frequently meditated on theſe ſubjects, he would not have coolly anſwered the perſon who acquainted him with the death of his ſon —I KNEW *I had begot a mortal.* Whereas, by the behaviour of ſome on theſe occaſions, we might be almoſt induced to ſuſpect they were diſappointed in their hopes of their friend's immortality: that ſomething uncommon, and beyond the general fate of men, had happened to them. In a word, that they had flattered their fondneſs for their children and friends as enthuſiaſtically as the poets have their works, which

nec Jovis ira nec ignis,
Nec poterit ferrum, nec edax abolere vetuſtas.

Nor is there any diſſuaſive from ſuch contemplation: it is no breach of friendſhip, nor violence of paternal fondneſs; for the event we dread and deteſt, not by theſe means forwarded, as ſimple perſons think their own death would be by making a will. On the contrary, the ſweeteſt and moſt rapturous enjoyments are thus promoted and encouraged: for what

what can be a more delightful thought than to aſſure ourſelves, after ſuch reflections, that the evil we apprehend, and which might ſo probably have happened, hath been yet fortunately eſcaped. If it be true that the loſs of a bleſſing teaches us its true value, will not theſe ruminations on the certainty of loſing our friends, and the uncertainty of our enjoyment of them, add a reliſh to the preſent poſſeſſion? Shall we not, in a word, return to their converſation, after ſuch reflections, with the ſame eagerneſs and extaſy, with which we receive thoſe we love into our arms, when we firſt wake from a dream which hath terrified us with their deaths?

Thus then we have a double incentive to theſe meditations; as they ſerve as well to heighten our preſent enjoyment, as to leſſen our future loſs, and to fortify us againſt it. I ſhall now proceed to give my reader ſome inſtructions for his conduct, when this dreadful cataſtrophe hath actually befallen him.

And here I addreſs myſelf to common men, and who partake of the more amiable weakneſſes of human nature; not to thoſe elevated ſouls whom the conſummation of virtue and philoſophy hath raiſed to a divine pitch of excellence, and placed beyond the reach of human calamity; for which reaſon I do not expect this loſs ſhall be received with the compoſure of Stilpo. Nay, I ſhall not regard tears, lamentations, or any other indulgence to the firſt agonies of our grief on ſo dreadful an occaſion, as marks of effeminacy; but ſhall rather eſteem them as the ſymptoms of a laudable tenderneſs, than of a contemptible imbecility of heart.

However, though I admit the firſt emotions of our grief to be ſo far irreſiſtible, that they are not to be inſtantly and abſolutely overcome, yet we are not, on the other ſide, totally to abandon ourſelves to them. Wiſdom is our ſhield againſt all calamity, and this we are not cowardly to throw away, though ſome of the ſharper darts of fortune may have pierced us through it. The mind of a wiſe man may be ruffled and diſordered, but cannot be ſubdued: in the former it diſ-

fers from the perfection of the deity; in the latter, from the abject condition of a fool.

With whatever violence our paſſions at firſt attack us, they will in time ſubſide. It is then that reaſon is to be called to our aſſiſtance, and we ſhould uſe every ſuggeſtion which it can lend to our relief; our utmoſt force being to be exerted to repel and ſubdue an enemy when he begins to retreat: this indeed, one would imagine, ſhould want little or no perſuaſion to recommend it; inaſmuch as we all naturally purſue happineſs and avoid miſery.

There are, however, two cauſes of our unwillingneſs to hearken to the voice of reaſon on this occaſion. The firſt is, a fooliſh opinion, that friendſhip requires an exorbitant affliction of us; that we are thus diſcharging our duty to the dead, and offering (according to the ſuperſtition of the ancients) an agreeable ſacrifice to their manes. The other, and perhaps the commoner motive, is the immediate ſatisfaction we ourſelves feel in this indulgence; which though attended with very dreadful conſequences, gives the ſame preſent relief to a tender diſpoſition, that air or water brings to one in a high fever.

Now what can poſſibly, on the leaſt examination, appear more abſurd than the former of theſe? When the grave, beyond which we can enter into no engagement with one another, hath diſſolved all bonds of friendſhip between us, and removed the object of our affection far from the reach of any of our offices; can any thing be more vain and ridiculous, than to nouriſh an affliction to our own miſery, by which we can convey neither profit nor pleaſure to our friend! But I ſhall not dwell on an abſurdity ſo monſtrous in itſelf, that the bare firſt mention throws it in a light, which no illuſtration nor argument can heighten.

And as to the ſecond, it is, as I have ſaid, like thoſe indulgencies, which however pleaſant they may be to the diſtemper, ſerve only to increaſe it, and for which we are ſure to pay the bitterеſt agonies in the end. Nothing can indeed betray a weaker or more childiſh temper of mind than this conduct: by which, like infants, we reject a remedy, if it be the leaſt diſtaſteful;

ful; and are ready to receive any grateful food, without regarding the nouriſhment which at the ſame time we contribute to the diſeaſe.

Without ſtaying therefore longer to argue with ſuch, I ſhall firſt recommend to my diſciple or patient, of another complection, careſully to avoid all circumſtances which may revive the memory of the deceaſed, whom it is now his buſineſs to forget as faſt, and as much as poſſible; whereas, ſuch is the perverſeneſs of our natures, we are conſtantly endeavouring, at every opportunity, to recal to our remembrance the words, looks, geſtures, and other particularities of a friend. One carries about with him the picture; a ſecond the hair: and others, ſome little gift or token of the dead, as a memorial of their loſs. What is all this leſs than being ſelf-tormentors, and playing with affliction? Indeed time is the trueſt and beſt phyſician on theſe occaſions; and our wiſeſt part is to lend him the utmoſt aſſiſtance we can: whereas by purſuing the methods I have here objected to, we withſtand with all our might the aid and comfort which that great reliever of human miſery ſo kindly offers us.

Diverſions of the lighteſt kind have been recommended as a remedy for affliction: but for my part, I conceive they will rather increaſe than diminiſh it; eſpecially where muſic is to make up any part of the entertainment: for the nature of this is to ſooth or inflame, not to alter our paſſions. Indeed I ſhould rather propoſe ſuch diverſions by way of trial than of cure: for when they can be purſued with any good effect, our affliction is, I apprehend, very little grievous or dangerous.

To ſay the truth, the phyſic for this, as well as every other mental diſorder, is to be diſpenſed to us by philoſophy and religion. The former of theſe words (however unhappily it hath contracted the contempt of the pretty gentlemen and fine ladies) doth ſurely convey to thoſe who underſtand it, no very ridiculous idea. Philoſophy, in its purer and ſtricter ſenſe, means no more than the love of wiſdom: but in its common and vulgar acceptation it ſignifies, the ſearch after wiſdom; or often, wiſdom itſelf: for to

diſtinguiſh

diſtinguiſh between wiſdom and philoſophy (ſays a great writer) is rather matter of vain curioſity, than of real utility.

Now from this fountain (call it by which of the names we pleaſe) may be drawn the following conſiderations.

Firſt, the injuſtice of our complaint, who have been only obliged to fulfil the condition on which we firſt received the good, whoſe loſs we deplore, *viz.* that of parting with it again. We are tenants at will to fortune, and as we have advanced no conſideration on our ſide, can have no right to accuſe her caprice in determining our eſtate. However ſhort-lived our poſſeſſion hath been, it was ſtill more than ſhe promiſed, or we could demand. We are already obliged to her for more than we can pay; but like ungrateful perſons, with whom one denial effaces the remembrance of an hundred benefits, we forget what we have already received; and rail at her becauſe ſhe is not pleaſed to continue thoſe favours, which of her own free-will ſhe hath ſo long beſtowed on us.

Again, as we might have been called on to fulfil the condition of our tenure long before, ſo, ſooner or later, of neceſſity we muſt have done it. The longeſt term we could hope for is extremely ſhort, and compared by Solomon himſelf to the length of a ſpan. Of what duration is this life of man computed? A ſcrivener who ſells his annuity at fourteen years and a half, rejoices in his cunning, and thinks he hath outwitted you, at leaſt half a year in the bargain.

But who will inſure theſe fourteen years? No man. On the contrary, how great is the premium for inſuring you one? and great as it is, he who accepts it is often a loſer.

I ſhall not go into the hackneyed common-place of the numberleſs avenues to death: a road almoſt as much beaten by writers, as thoſe avenues to death are by mankind: Tibullus ſums them up in half a verſe:

'——*Leti mille repente viæ.*'

Surely no accident can befal our friend which ſhould ſo little ſurprize us: for there is no other which he may not eſcape. In poverty, pain, or other inſtances, his lot may be harder than his neighbours. In this, the happieſt and moſt miſerable, the greateſt and loweſt, richeſt and pooreſt of mankind ſhare all alike.

It is not then, it cannot be death itſelf (which is a part of life) that we lament ſhould happen to our friend, but it is the time of his dying. We deſire not a pardon, we deſire a reprieve only. A reprieve, for how long? *Sine die.* But if he could eſcape this fever, this ſmall pox, this inflammation of the bowels, he may live twenty years. He may ſo: but it is more probable he will not live ten; it is very poſſible not one. But ſuppoſe he ſhould have twenty, nay, thirty years to come. In proſpect, it is true, the term ſeems to have ſome duration; but caſt your eyes backwards, and how contemptible the ſpan appears! for it happens in life (however pleaſant the journey may be) as to a weary traveller; the plain he is yet to paſs extends itſelf much larger to his eye than that which he hath already conquered.

And ſuppoſe fortune ſhould be ſo generous to indulge us in the poſſeſſion of our wiſh, and give us this twenty years longer poſſeſſion of our friend, ſhould we be then contented to reſign? Or ſhall we not, in imitation of a child who deſires its mamma to ſtay five minutes, and it will take the potion, be ſtill as unwilling as ever? I am afraid the latter will be the caſe; ſeeing that neither our calamity, nor the child's phyſic, becomes leſs nauſeous by the delay.

But admitting this condition to be never ſo hard, will not philoſophy ſhew us the folly of immoderate affliction? Can all our ſorrow mend our caſe? Can we waſh back our friend with our tears, or waft him back with our ſighs and lamentations? It is a fooliſh mean-ſpiritedneſs in a criminal, to blubber to his judge when he knows he ſhall not prevail by it; and it is natural to admire thoſe more who meet their fate with a decent conſtancy and reſignation. Were the ſentences of fate capable of remiſſion; could our ſorrows or

ſufferings

ſufferings reſtore our friends to us, I would commend him who out did the fabled Niobe in weeping: but ſince no ſuch event is to be expected, ſince *from that bourne no traveller returns*, ſurely it is the part of a wiſe man, to bring himſelf to be content in a ſituation which no wit or wiſdom, labour or art, trouble or pain, can alter.

And let us ſeriouſly examine our hearts, whether it is for the ſake of our friends, or ourſelves, that we grieve. I am ready to agree with a celebrated French writer; that *the lamentation expreſſed for the loſs of our deareſt friends, is often, in reality, for ourſelves; that we are concerned at being leſs happy, leſs eaſy, and of leſs conſequence than we were before; and thus the dead enjoy the honour of thoſe tears which are truly ſhed on account of the living*: concluding—that *in theſe afflictions men impoſe on themſelves.* Now if on the enquiry this ſhould be found to be our caſe, I ſhall leave the patient to ſeek his remedy elſewhere; having firſt recommended to him, an aſſembly, a ball, an opera, a play, an amour, or, if he pleaſe, all of them, which will very ſpeedily produce his cure. But, on the contrary, if, after the ſtricteſt examination, it ſhould appear (as I make no doubt is ſometimes the caſe) that our ſorrow ariſes from that pure and diſintereſted affection which many minds are ſo far from being capable of entertaining, that they can have no idea of it: in a word, if it be manifeſt that our tears are juſtly to be imputed to our friend's account, it may be then worth our while to conſider the nature and degree of this misfortune which hath happened to him: and if, on duly conſidering it, we ſhould be able to demonſtrate to ourſelves, that this ſuppoſed dreadful calamity ſhould exiſt only in opinion, and all its horrors vaniſh, on being cloſely and nearly examined; then, I apprehend, the very foundation of our grief will be removed, and it muſt, of neceſſary conſequence, immediately ceaſe.

I ſhall not attempt to make an eſtimate of human life, which to do in the moſt conciſe manner, would fill more pages than I can here allow it; nor will it be neceſſary for me; ſince admitting there was more

real happineſs in life than the wiſeſt men have allowed; as the weakeſt and ſimpleſt will be ready to confeſs, that there is much evil in it likewiſe; and as I conceive every impartial man will, on caſting up the whole, acknowledge that the latter is more than a balance for the former, I apprehend it will appear ſufficiently for my purpoſe, that Death is not that king of terrors he is repreſented to be.

Death is nothing more than the negation of life. If therefore life be no general good, death is no general evil. Now, if this be a point in judgment, who ſhall decide it? Shall we prefer the judgment of women and children, or of wiſe men? If of the latter, ſhall I not have all their ſuffrages with me? Thales, the chief of all the ſages, held life and death as things indifferent. Socrates, the greateſt of all the philoſophers, ſpeaks of death as of a deliverance. Solomon, who had taſted all the ſweets of life, condemns the whole as vanity and vexation: and Cicero (to name no more) whoſe life had been a very fortunate one, aſſures us in his old age, that *if any of the gods would frankly offer him to renew his infancy, and live his life over again, he would ſtrenuouſly refuſe it.*

But if we will be hardy enough to fly in the face of theſe and numberleſs other ſuch authorities; if we will ſtill maintain that the pleaſures of life have in them ſomething truly ſolid, and worthy our regard and deſire; we ſhall not, however, be bold enough to ſay, that theſe pleaſures are laſting, certain, or the portion of many among us. We ſhall not, I apprehend, inſure the poſſeſſion of them to our friend, nor ſecure him from all thoſe evils, which, as I have before ſaid, none have ever denied the real exiſtence of: nor ſhall we ſurely contend, that he may not more likely have eſcaped the latter, than have been deprived of the former.

I remember the moſt excellent of women, and tendereſt of mothers, when, after a painful and dangerous delivery, ſhe was told ſhe had a daughter, anſwering; *Good God! have I produced a creature who is to undergo what I have ſuffered!* Some years after-

wards,

wards, I heard the ſame woman, on the death of that very child, then one of the loveliest creatures ever ſeen, comforting herſelf with reflecting, that *her child could never know what it was to feel ſuch a loſs as ſhe then lamented.*

In reality, ſhe was right in both inſtances; and however inſtinct, youth, a flow of ſpirits, violent attachments, and, above all, folly may blind us, the day of death is (to moſt people at leaſt) a day of more happineſs than that of our birth, as it puts an end to all thoſe evils which the other gave a beginning to. So juſt is that ſentiment of Solon, which Crœſus afterwards experienced the truth of, and which is couched in theſe lines:

——— *ultima ſemper*
Expectanda dies homini, dicique beatus
Ante obitum nemo, poſtremaque funera debet.

If therefore death be no evil, there is certainly no reaſon why we ſhould lament its having happened to our friend: but if there be any whom neither his own obſervation, nor what Plato hath advanced in his apology for Socrates, in his Crito, and his Phædon; or Cicero, in the firſt and third books of his Tuſculan queſtions; or Montaigne, (if he hath a contempt for the ancients) can convince, that death is not an evil worthy our lamentation, let ſuch a man comfort himſelf, that the evil which his friend hath ſuffered, he ſhall himſelf ſhortly have his ſhare in. As nothing can be a greater conſolation to a delicate friendſhip than this, ſo there is nothing we may ſo ſurely depend on. A few days may, and a few years moſt infallibly will bring this about, and we ſhall then reap one benefit from the cauſe of our preſent affliction, that we are not then to be torn from the perſon we love.

Theſe are, I think, the chief comforts which the voice of human philoſophy can adminiſter to us on this occaſion. Religion goes much farther, and gives us a moſt delightful aſſurance, that our friend is not barely no loſer, but a gainer by his diſſolution; that

thoſe

thoſe virtues and good qualities which were the objects of our affection on earth, are now become the foundation of his happineſs and reward in a better world.

Laſtly; It gives a hope, the ſweeteſt, moſt endearing, and raviſhing, which can enter into a mind capable of, and inflamed with friendſhip; the hope of again meeting the beloved perſon, of renewing and cementing the dear union in bliſs everlaſting. This is a rapture which leaves the warmeſt imagination at a diſtance. *Who can conceive* (ſays Sherlock, in his diſcourſe on death) *the melting careſſes of two ſouls in paradiſe?* What are all the traſh and trifles, the bubbles, bawbles, and gewgaws of this life, to ſuch a meeting? This is a hope which no reaſoning ſhall ever argue me out of, nor millions of ſuch worlds as this ſhould purchaſe: nor can any man ſhew me its abſolute impoſſibility, 'till he can demonſtrate that it is not in the power of the Almighty to beſtow it on me.

A

DIALOGUE

BETWEEN

ALEXANDER THE GREAT

AND

DIOGENES THE CYNIC.

A

DIALOGUE

BETWEEN

ALEXANDER THE GREAT,

AND

DIOGENES THE CYNIC.

ALEXANDER.

WHAT fellow art thou, who dareſt thus to ly at thy eaſe in our preſence, when all others, as thou ſeeſt, riſe to do us homage? doſt thou not know us?

DIOGENES.

I cannot ſay I do: but by the number of thy attendants, by the ſplendor of thy habit, but, above all, by the vanity of thy appearance, and the arrogance of thy ſpeech, I conceive thou mayſt be Alexander the ſon of Philip.

ALEXANDER.

And who can more juſtly challenge thy reſpect, than Alexander, at the head of that victorious army, who hath performed ſuch wonderful exploits *, and under his conduct hath ſubdued the world?

DIO-

* This is an anachroniſm; for Diogenes was of Sinope, and the meeting between him and Alexander fell out while the latter

DIOGENES.

Who? why the tailor who made me this old cloak.

ALEXANDER.

Thou art an odd fellow, and I have a curioſity to know thy name.

DIOGENES.

I am not aſhamed of it: I am called Diogenes; a name compoſed of as many and as well-ſounding ſyllables as Alexander.

ALEXANDER.

Diogenes, I rejoice at this encounter. I have heard of thy name, and been long deſirous of ſeeing thee; in which wiſh, ſince Fortune hath accidentally favoured me, I ſhall be glad of thy converſation a-while; and that thou likewiſe may'ſt be pleaſed with our meeting, aſk me ſome favour; and as thou knoweſt my power, ſo ſhalt thou experience my will to oblige thee.

DIOGENES.

Why then, Alexander the Great, I deſire thee to ſtand from between me and the ſun; whoſe beams thou haſt with-held from me ſome time; a bleſſing which it is not in thy power to recompence the loſs of.

Thou haſt a very ſhallow opinion of my power indeed; and if it was a juſt one, I ſhould have travelled ſo far, undergone ſo much, and conquered ſo many nations, to a fine purpoſe truly.

DIOGENES.

That is not my fault.

ALEXANDER.

Doſt thou not know that I am able to give thee a kingdom?

ter was confederating the Grecian ſtates in the Peloponneſe before his Aſiatic expedition: but that ſeaſon would not have furniſhed ſufficient matter for this dialogue; we have therefore fixed the time of it at the conqueror's return from India.

DIOGENES.

I know thou art able, if I had one, to take it from me, and I ſhall never place any value on that which ſuch as thou art can deprive me of.

ALEXANDER.

Thou doſt ſpeak vainly in contempt of a power which no other man ever yet arrived at. Hath the Granicus yet recovered the bloody colour with which I contaminated its waves? are not the fields of Iſſus and Artela ſtill white with human bones? Will Suſa ſhew no monuments of my victory? Are Darius and Porus names unknown to thee? Have not the groans of thoſe millions reached thy ears, who but for the valour of this heart, and the ſtrength of this arm, had ſtill enjoyed life and tranquillity. Hath then this ſon of Jupiter, this conqueror of the world, adored by his followers, dreaded by his foes, and worſhipped by all, lived to hear his power contemned, and the offer of his favour ſlighted, by a poor philoſopher, a wretched Cynic, whoſe cloak appears to be his only poſſeſſion!

DIOGENES.

I retort the charge of vanity on thyſelf, proud Alexander; for how vainly doſt thou endeavour to raiſe thyſelf on the monuments of thy diſgrace; I acknowledge, indeed, all the exploits thou haſt recounted, and the millions thou haſt to thy eternal ſhame deſtroyed. But is it hence thou wouldſt claim Jupiter for thy father? Hath not then every plague or peſtilental vapour the ſame title? If thou art the dread of wretches to whom death appears the greateſt of evils, is not every mortal diſeaſe the ſame? And if thou haſt the adoration of thy ſervile followers, do they offer thee more than they are ready to pay to every tinſel ornament, or empty title? Is then the fear or worſhip of ſlaves of ſo great honour, when at the ſame time thou art the contempt of every brave honeſt man, though, like me, an old cloak ſhould be his only poſſeſſion?

ALEXANDER.

Thou ſeemeſt, to my apprehenſion, to be ignorant, that in profeſſing this diſregard for the glory I have ſo painfully atchieved, thou art undermining the foundation of all that honour, which is the encouragement to and reward of every thing truly great and noble: for in what doth all honour, glory, and fame conſiſt, but in the breath of that multitude whoſe eſtimation with ſuch ill grounded ſcorn thou doſt affect to deſpiſe? A reward which hath ever appeared ſufficient to inflame the ambition of high and exalted ſouls; though, from their meanneſs, low minds may be incapable of taſting, or rather, for which pride, from the deſpair of attaining it, may inſpire thee to feign a falſe and counterfeit diſdain. What other reward than this have all thoſe heroes propoſed to themſelves, who rejected the enjoyments which eaſe, riches, pleaſure, and power, have held forth to them in their native country, have deſerted their homes, and all thoſe things which to vulgar mortals appear lovely or deſirable, and in defiance of difficulty and danger invaded and ſpoiled the cities and territories of others; when their anger hath been provoked by no injury, nor their hope inſpired by the proſpect of any other good than of this very glory and honour, this adoration of ſlaves, which thou, from having never taſted its ſweets, haſt treated with contempt.

DIOGENES.

Thy own words have convinced me, (ſtand a little more out of the ſun, if you pleaſe) that thou haſt not the leaſt idea of true honour. Was it to depend on the ſuffrages of ſuch wretches, it would, indeed, be that contemptible thing which you repreſent it to be eſtimated in my opinion: but true honour is of a different nature; it reſults from the ſecret ſatisfaction of our own minds, and is decreed us by wiſe men and the gods; it is the ſhadow of wiſdom and virtue, and is inſeparable from them: nor is it either in thy power to deſerve, nor in that of thy followers

to

to beſtow. As for ſuch heroes as thou haſt named, who, like thyſelf, were born the curſes of mankind, I readily agree they purſue another kind of glory, even that which thou haſt mentioned, the applauſe of their ſlaves and ſycophants; in this inſtance indeed their maſters, ſince they beſtow on them the reward, ſuch as it is, of all their labours.

ALEXANDER.

However, as you would perſuade me you have ſo clear a notion of my honour, I would be glad to be on a par with you, by conceiving ſome idea of yours; which I can never obtain of the ſhadow, till I have ſome clearer knowledge of the ſubſtance, and underſtand in what your wiſdom and virtue conſiſt.

DIOGENES.

Not in ravaging countries, burning cities, plundering and maſſacring mankind.

ALEXANDER.

No, rather in biting and ſnarling at them.

DIOGENES.

I ſnarl at them becauſe of their vice and folly; in a word, becauſe there are among them many ſuch as thee and thy followers.

ALEXANDER.

If thou wouldſt confeſs the truth, envy is the true ſource of all thy bitterneſs; it is that which begets thy hatred, and from hatred comes thy railing: whereas the thirſt of glory only is my motive. I hate not thoſe whom I attack, as plainly appears by the clemency I ſhew to them when they are conquered.

DIOGENES.

Thy clemency is cruelty. Thou giveſt to one what thou haſt by violence and plunder taken from

another: and in ſo doing, thou only raiſeſt him to be again the mark of fortune's caprice, and to be tumbled down a ſecond time by thyſelf, or by ſome other like thee. My ſnarling is the effect of my love; in order, by my invectives againſt vice, to frighten men from it, and drive them into the road of virtue.

ALEXANDER.

For which purpoſe thou haſt forſworn ſociety, and art retired to preach to trees and ſtones.

DIOGENES.

I have left Society, becauſe I cannot endure the evils I ſee and deteſt in it.

ALEXANDER.

Rather becauſe thou canſt not enjoy the good thou doſt covet in it. For the ſame reaſon I have left my own country, which afforded not ſufficient food for my ambition.

DIOGENES.

But I come not, like thee, abroad to rob and plunder others. Thy ambition hath deſtroyed a million, whereas I have never occaſioned the death of a ſingle man.

ALEXANDER.

Becauſe thou haſt not been able: but thou haſt done all within thy power, by curſing and devoting to deſtruction almoſt as many as I have conquered. Come, come, thou art not the poor-ſpirited fellow thou wouldſt appear. There is more greatneſs of ſoul in thee than at preſent ſhines forth. Poor circumſtances are clouds which often conceal and obſcure the brighteſt minds. Pride will not ſuffer thee to confeſs paſſions which fortune hath not put it in thy power to gratify. It is therefore that thou denieſt ambition: for hadſt thou a ſoul as capacious as mine, I ſee no better way which thy humble fortune would allow thee of feeding its ambition, than what thou haſt

haſt choſen: for when alone in this retreat which thou haſt choſen, thou may'ſt contemplate thy own greatneſs. Here no ſtronger rival will contend with thee; nor can the hateful objects of ſuperior power, riches, or happineſs, invade thy ſight. But be honeſt and confeſs, had fortune placed thee at the head of a Macedonian army——

DIOGENES.

Had fortune placed me at the head of the world, it could not have raiſed me in my own opinion. And is this mighty ſoul, which is, it ſeems, ſo much more capacious than mine, obliged at laſt to ſupport its ſuperiority on the backs of a multitude of armed ſlaves? And who in reality have gained theſe conqueſts, and gathered all theſe laurels, of which thou art ſo vain? Hadſt thou alone paſt into Aſia, the empire of Darius had ſtill ſtood unſhaken. But though Alexander had never been born, who will ſay the ſame troops might not, under ſome other general, have done as great, or perhaps greater miſchiefs? The honour therefore, ſuch as it is, is by no means juſtly thy own. Thou uſurpeſt the whole, when thou art, at moſt, entitled to an equal ſhare only. It is not then Alexander, but Alexander and his army are ſuperior to Diogenes. And in what are they his ſuperiors? In brutal ſtrength — in which they would be again excelled by an equal number of lions, or wolves, or tygers. An army which would be able to do as much more miſchief than themſelves, as they are than Diogenes.

ALEXANDER.

There thy grief broke forth Thou hateſt us becauſe we can do more miſchief than thyſelf. And in this I ſee thou claimeſt the precedence over me; that I make uſe of others as the inſtruments of my conqueſts, whereas all thy raillery and curſes againſt mankind, proceed only out of thy own mouth. And if I alone am not able to conquer the world, thou alone art able to curſe it.

DIOGENES.

If I desired to curse it effectually, I have nothing more to do, than to wish thee long life and prosperity.

ALEXANDER.

But then thou must wish well to an individual, which is contrary to thy nature, who hatest all.

DIOGENES.

Thou art mistaken. Long life to such as thee, is the greatest of curses: for to mortify thy pride effectually, know there is not in thy whole army, no, nor among all thy objects of the triumph, one equally miserable with thyself: for if the satisfaction of violent desires be happiness, and a total failure of success in the most eager pursuits, misery, (which cannot, I apprehend, be doubted) what can be more miserable, than to entertain desires which we know never can be satisfied? And this a little reflection will teach thee is thy own case; for what are thy desires? not pleasures; with that Macedonia would have furnished thee. Not riches; for capacious as thy soul is, if it had been all filled with avarice, the wealth of Darius would have contented it. Not power; for then the conquest of Porus, and the extending thy arms to the farthest limits of the world *, must have satisfied thy ambition. Thy desire consists in nothing certain, and therefore with nothing certain can be gratified. It is as restless as fire, which still consumes whatever comes in its way, without determining where to stop. How contemptible must thy own power appear to thee, when it cannot give thee the possession of thy wish? but how much more contemptible thy understanding, which cannot enable thee to know certainly what that wish is?

ALEXANDER.

I can at least comprehend thine, and can grant it. I like thy humour, and will deserve thy friendship.

* Which was then known to the Greeks.

I know

I know the Athenians have affronted thee, have contemned thy philoſophy, and ſuſpected thy morals. I will revenge thy cauſe on them. I will lead my army back, and puniſh their ill-uſage of thee. Thou thyſelf ſhalt accompany us; and when thou beholdeſt their city in flames, ſhalt have the triumph of proclaiming, that thy juſt reſentment hath brought this calamity on them.

DIOGENES.

They do indeed deſerve it at my hands; and though revenge is not what I profeſs, yet the puniſhment of ſuch dogs may be of good example. I therefore embrace thy offer: but let us not be particular, let Corinth and Lacedæmon ſhare the ſame fate. They are both the neſt of vermin only, and fire alone will purify them. Gods! what a delight it will be to ſee the raſcals, who have ſo often in deriſion called me a ſnarling cur, roaſting in their own houſes.

ALEXANDER.

Yet on a ſecond conſideration, would it not be wiſer to preſerve the cities, eſpecially Corinth, which is ſo full of wealth, and only maſſacre the inhabitants?

DIOGENES.

D——n their wealth, I deſpiſe it.

ALEXANDER.

Well then, let it be given to the ſoldiers, as the demolition of it will not encreaſe the puniſhment of the citizens, when we have cut their throats.

DIOGENES.

True——Then you may give ſome of it to the ſoldiers: but as the dogs have formerly inſulted me with their riches, I will, if you pleaſe, retain a little—perhaps a moiety, or not much more, to my own uſe. It will give me at leaſt an opportunity of ſhewing the world, I can deſpiſe riches when I poſſeſs them, as much as I did before in my poverty.

ALEX-

ALEXANDER.

Art not thou a true dog? is this thy contempt of wealth? this thy abhorrence of the vices of mankind? To ſacrifice three of the nobleſt cities of the world to thy wrath and revenge? and haſt thou the impudence to diſpute any longer the ſuperiority with me, who have it in my power to puniſh my enemies with death, while thou only canſt perſecute with evil wiſhes?

DIOGENES.

I have ſtill the ſame ſuperiority over thee, which thou doſt challenge over thy ſoldiers. I would have made thee the tool of my purpoſe But I will diſcourſe no longer with thee; for I now deſpiſe and curſe thee more than I do all the world beſides. And may perdition ſeize thee, and all thy followers.

[*Here ſome of the army would have fallen upon him, but Alexander interpoſed.*]

ALEXANDER.

Let him alone. I admire his obſtinacy; nay, I almoſt envy it.——Farewel, old Cynic; and if it will flatter thy pride, be aſſured, I eſteem thee ſo much, that *was I not* Alexander, *I could deſire to be* Diogenes.

DIOGENES.

Go to the Gibbet, and take with thee as a mortification; that *was I not* Diogenes, *I could almoſt content myſelf with being* Alexander.

AN

INTERLUDE

BETWEEN

JUPITER, JUNO, APOLLO,

AND

MERCURY.

Which was originally intended as an

INTRODUCTION TO A COMEDY,

CALLED

JUPITER'S DESCENT ON EARTH.

AN INTERLUDE BETWEEN JUPITER, JUNO, APOLLO. AND MERCURY.

SCENE I.

JUPITER, JUNO.

JUPITER.

PRAY be pacified.

Juno. It is intolerable, inſufferable, and I never will ſubmit to it.

Jup. But, my dear.

Juno. Good Mr Jupiter, leave off that odious word: you know I deteſt it. Uſe it to the trollop Venus, and the reſt of your ſluts. It ſounds moſt agreeable to their ears, but it is nauſeous to a goddeſs of ſtrict virtue.

Jup. Madam, I do not doubt your virtue.

Juno. You don't? That is, I ſuppoſe, humbly inſinuating that others do: but who are their divinities? I would be glad to know who they are; they are neither Diana nor Minerva, I am well aſſured; both of whom pity me; for they know your tricks; they can neither of them keep a maid of honour for you. I deſire you will treat me with good manners at leaſt I ſhould have had that, if I had married a mortal, though he had ſpent my fortune, and lain with my chamber-

chamber maids, as you ſuffer men to do with impunity, highly to your honour be it ſpoken.

Jup. Faith! Madam, I know but one way to prevent them, which is by annihilating mankind; and I fancy your friends below, the ladies, would hardly thank you for obtaining that favour at my hands.

Juno. I deſire you would not reflect on my friends below; it is very well known I never ſhewed any favour but to thoſe of the pureſt, unſpotted characters. And all my acquaintance, when I have been on the earth, have been of that kind: for I never return a viſit to any other.

Jup. Nay, I have no inclination to find fault with the women of the earth; you know I like them very well.

Juno. Yes, the trollops of the earth, ſuch as Venus converſes with. You never ſhew any civility to my favourites, nor make the men do it

Jup. My dear, give me leave to ſay, your favourites are ſuch, that man muſt be new made before he can be brought to give them the preference: for when I moulded up the clay of man, I put not one ingredient in to make him in love with uglineſs, which is one of the moſt glaring qualities in all your favourites, whom I have ever ſeen: and you muſt not wonder, while you have ſuch favourites, that the men ſlight them.

Juno. The men ſlight them! I'd have you know, Sir, they ſlight the men; and I can, at this moment, hear not leſs than a thouſand railing at mankind.

Jup. Ay, as I hear at this inſtant ſeveral grave black gentlemen railing at riches, and enjoying them, or at leaſt coveting them, at the ſame time.

Juno. Very fine! Very civil! I underſtand your compariſon. —— Well, Sir, you may go on giving an example of a bad huſband, but I will not give the example of a tame wife; and if you will not make men better, I will go down to the earth and make women worſe; that every houſe may be too hot for a huſband, as I will ſhortly make heaven for you.

Jup. That I believe you will——but if you begin your project of making women worſe, I will take Hymen, and hang him; for I will take ſome care of my votaries, as well as you of yours.

SCENE II.

Enter APOLLO.

Apol. Mr Jupiter, good-morrow to you.

Jup. Apollo, how doſt thou?——You are a wiſe deity, Apollo; prithee will you anſwer me one queſtion?

Apol. To my beſt ability.

Jup. You have been much converſant with the affairs of men, what doſt thou think the fooliſheſt thing a man can do?

Apol. Turn poet

Jup. That is honeſt enough, as it comes from the god of poets: but you have miſſed the mark: for certainly the fooliſheſt thing a man can do, is to marry.

Apol. Fie! what is it then in a god? who, beſides that he ought to be wiſer than man, is tied for ever by his immortality, and has not the chance which you have given to man, of getting rid of his wife.

Jup. Apollo, thy reproof is juſt: but let us talk of ſomething elſe: for when I am out of the hearing of my wife, I beg I may never hear of her.

Apol Have you read any of thoſe books I brought you, juſt ſent me by my votaries upon earth?

Jup. I have read them all——The poem is extremely fine, and the ſimiles moſt beautiful.——There is indeed one little fault in the ſimiles.

Apol. What is that?

Jup. There is not the leaſt reſemblance between the things compared together.

Apol One half of the ſimile is good however.

Jup. The dedications pleaſe me extremely, and I am glad to find there are ſuch excellent men upon earth.——There is one whom I find two or three authors agree to be much better than any of us in heaven are. This diſcovery, together with my wife's

tongue, has determined me to take a trip to the earth, and ſpend ſome time in ſuch god-like company. Apollo, will you go with me?

Apol. I would with all my heart, but I ſhall be of diſſervice to you; for when I was laſt on earth, though I heard of theſe people, I could not get admiſſion to any of them. You had better take Plutus with you, he is acquainted with them all.

Jup. Hang him, proud raſcal, of all the deities he is my averſion; I would have kick'd him out of heaven long ago, but that I am afraid, if he was to take his reſidence entirely upon the earth, he would foment a rebellion againſt me.

Apol. Your fear has too juſt a ground, for the god of riches has more intereſt there, than all the other gods put together: nay, he has ſupplanted us in all our provinces; he gives wit to men I never heard of, and beauty to women Venus never ſaw.—— Nay, he ventures to make free with Mars himſelf; and ſometimes, they tell me, puts men at the head of military affairs, who never ſaw an enemy, nor of whom an enemy ever could ſee any other than the back.

Jup. Faith! it is ſurprizing that a god whom I ſent down to earth when I was angry with mankind, and who has done them more hurt than all the other deities, ſhould ingratiate himſelf ſo far into their favour.

Apol. You may thank yourſelf, you might have made men wiſer if you would.

Jup. What, to laugh at us? No, Apollo, believe me, man far outdoes my intention; and when I read in thoſe little hiſtories called dedications, how excellent he is grown, I am eager to b with him, that I may make another promotion to the ſtars; and here comes my ſon of fortune to accompany us.

SCENE III.

MERCURY, JUPITER, APOLLO.

[MERCURY *kneels.*]

Merc. Pray, father Jupiter, be pleaſed to bleſs me.

Jup

Jup. I do, my boy. What part of heaven, pray, have you been ſpending your time in?

Merc. With ſome ladies of your acquaintance, Apollo. I have been at blind man's-buff with the nine muſes: but before we begin to play, we had charming ſport between Miſs Thally and one of the poets: ſuch a ſcene of courtſhip, or invocation as you call it. *Say, O Thalia,* cries the bard: and then he ſcratches his head: and then, *Say, O Thalia,* again; and repeated it an hundred times over; but the devil a word would ſhe ſay.

Apol. She's a humourſome little jade, and if ſhe takes it into her head to hold her tongue, not all the poets on earth can open her lips.

Jup. I wiſh Juno had ſome of her frolicks, with all my heart.

Merc. No, my mother-in-law is of a humour quite contrary ——

Jup. Ay; for which reaſon I intend to make an elopment from her, and pay a ſhort viſit to our friends on earth, Son Mercury, you ſhall go along with me.

Merc. Sir, I am at your diſpoſal: but pray what is the reaſon of this viſit?

Jup. Partly my wife's temper, and partly ſome informations I have lately received of the prodigious virtue of mankind; which if I find as great as repreſented, I believe I ſhall leave Madam Juno for good-and-all, and live entirely amongſt men.

Merc. I ſhall be glad to be introduced by you into the company of theſe virtuous men: for I am quite weary of the little rogues you put me at the head of. The laſt time I was on the earth, I believe, I had three ſets of my acquaintance hang'd in one year's revolution, and not one man of any reputable condition among them; there were indeed one or two condemned, but, I don't know how, they were found to be honeſt at laſt. And I muſt tell you, Sir, I will be god of rogues no longer, if you ſuffer it to be an eſtabliſhed maxim, that no rich man can be a rogue.

Jup. We'll talk of that hereafter. I'll now go put

on my travelling cloaths, order my charge, and be ready for you in half an hour.

SCENE IV.

APOLLO, MERCURY.

Merc. Do you know the true reaſon of this expedition?

Apol. The great virtue of mankind, he tells us.

Merc. The little virtue of womankind rather—— Do you know him no better, than to think he would budge a ſtep after human virtue? beſides where the devil ſhould he find it, if he would?

Apol. You have not read the late dedications of my votaries.

Merc. Of my votaries, you mean: I hope you will not diſpute my title to the dedications, as the god of thieves. You make no diſtinction, I hope, between robbing with a piſtol and with a pen.

Apol. My votaries robbers, Mr Mercury?

Merc. Yes, Mr Apollo; did not my Lord Chancellor Midas decree me the lawyers for the ſame reaſon. Would not he be a rogue who ſhould take a man's money for perſuading him he was a lord or a baronet, when he knew he was no ſuch thing? Is not he equally ſuch, who picks his pocket by heaping virtues on him which he knows he has no title to? Theſe fellows prevent the very uſe of praiſe, which while only the reward of virtue, will always invite men to it; but when it is to be bought, will be deſpiſed by the true deſerving, equally with a ribbon or a feather, which may be bought by any one in a milliner's or a miniſter's ſhop.

Apol. Very well! at this rate you will rob me of all my panegyrical writers.

Merc. Ay, and of your ſatirical writers too, at leaſt a great many of 'em; for unjuſt ſatire is as bad as unjuſt panegyrick.

Apol. If it is unjuſt indeed——But, Sir, I hope you have no claim to my writers of plays; poems, which have neither ſatire nor panegyrick in 'em.

Merc.

Merc. Yes, Sir, to all who are thieves and ſteal from one another.

Apol. Methinks, Sir, you ſhould not reflect thus on wits to me, who am the god of wit.

Merc. Hey-day, Sir, nor you on thieves, to me who am the god of thieves. We have no ſuch reaſon to quarrel about our votaries, they are much of the ſame kind: for as it is a proverb, That all poets are poor: ſo it is a maxim, That all poor men are rogues.

Apol. Sir, Sir, I have men of quality that write.

Merc. Yes, Sir, and I have men of quality that rob; but neither are the one poets, or the other rogues: for as the one can write without wit, ſo can the other rob without roguery. They call it privilege, I think; Jupiter, I ſuppoſe, gave it them; and inſtead of quarreling with one another, I think it would be wiſer in us to unite in a petition to my father that he would revoke it, and put them on a footing with other votaries.

Apol. It is in vain to petition him any thing againſt mankind at preſent, he is in ſuch good humour with them; if they ſhould ſour his temper, at his return perhaps he may be willing to do us juſtice.

Merc. It ſhall be my fault if he is not in a worſe humour with them; at leaſt I will take care he ſhall not be deceived: and that might happen; for men are ſuch hypocrites, that the greateſt part deceive even themſelves, and are much worſe than they think themſelves to be.

Apol. And Jupiter, you know, though he is the greateſt, is far from being the wiſeſt of the gods.

Merc. His own honeſty makes him the leſs ſuſpicious of others; for, except in regard of women, he is as honeſt a fellow as any deity in all the Elyſian Fields: but I ſhall make him wait for me—Dear Mr Apollo, I am your humble ſervant.

Apol. My dear Mercury, a good journey to you; at your return I ſhall be glad to drink a bottle of nectar with you.

Merc. I ſhall be proud to kiſs your hands.

THE

TRUE PATRIOT.

No 1. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 5, 1745.

ILLE EGO, *qui quondam*———

FASHION is the great governor of this world. It preſides not only in matters of dreſs and amuſement, but in law, phyſic, politics, religion, and all other things of the graveſt kind: indeed the wiſeſt of men would be puzzled to give any better reaſon, why particular forms in all theſe have been, at certain times, univerſally received, and at others univerſally rejected, than that they were in or out of faſhion.

Men as well as things are in like manner indebted to the favour of this *grand monarque*. It is a phraſe commonly uſed in the polite world, that ſuch a perſon is in faſhion: nay, I myſelf have known an individual in faſhion, and then out of faſhion, and then in faſhion again. Shakeſpeare hath ſhared both theſe fates in poetry, and ſo hath Mr Handel in muſic; ſo hath my Lord Coke in law, and in phyſic the great Sydenham: and as to politics and religion, I am ſure every man's memory will ſuggeſt to himſelf very great maſters in both, even in the preſent age, who have been in the higheſt degree, both in and out of faſhion.

It is, therefore, the buſineſs of every man to accommodate himſelf to the faſhion of the times; which if he neglects, he muſt not be ſurpriſed if the greateſt parts and abilities are totally diſregarded. If

Socrates

Socrates himſelf was to go to court in an antique dreſs, he would be neglected, or perhaps ridiculed; or if old Hippocrates was to viſit the college of phyſicians, and there talk the language of his aphoriſms, he would be deſpiſed; the college, as Moliere ſays, *having altered all that* at preſent.

But of all mankind, there are none whom it ſo abſolutely imports to comform to this golden rule as an author; by neglecting this, Milton himſelf lay long in obſcurity, and the world had nearly loſt the beſt poem which perhaps it hath ever ſeen. On the contrary, by adhering to it, Tom Durfey, whoſe name is almoſt forgot, and many others who are quite forgotten, flouriſhed moſt notably in their reſpective ages, and ate and were read very plentifully by their cotemporaries.

In ſtrict obedience to this ſovereign power, being informed by my bookſeller, a man of great ſagacity in his buſineſs, *that nobody at preſent reads any thing but news-papers*, I have determined to conform myſelf to the reigning taſte. The number indeed of theſe writers at firſt a little ſtaggered us both; but upon peruſal of their works, I fancied I had diſcovered two or three little imperfections in them all, which ſomewhat diminiſhed the force of this objection, and gave me hopes that the public will expel ſome of them to make room for their betters.

The firſt little imperfection in theſe writings, is, that there is ſcarce a ſyllable of TRUTH in any of them. If this be admitted to be a fault, it requires no other evidence than themſelves, and the perpetual contradictions which occur not only on comparing one with the other, but the ſame author with himſelf at different days.

2*dly*, There is no SENSE in them; to prove this likewiſe, I appeal to their works.

3*dly*, There is, in reality, NOTHING *in them at all*. And this alſo muſt be allowed by their readers, if paragraphs which contain neither wit nor humour, nor ſenſe, nor the leaſt importance, may be properly ſaid to contain nothing. Such are the arrival of my Lord ——— *with a great equipage*, the marriage of

Miſs

Miſs——*of great beauty and merit*, and the death of Mr——*who was never heard of in his life*, &c. &c.

Nor will this appear ſtrange, if we conſider who are the authors of ſuch tracts; namely, the journeymen of bookſellers, of whom, I believe, much the ſame may be truly predicated, as of theſe their productions.

But the encouragement with which theſe lucubrations are read, may ſeem more ſtrange and more difficult to be accounted for. And here I cannot agree with my bookſeller, that their eminent badneſs recommends them. The true reaſon is, I believe, ſimply the ſame which I once heard an œconomiſt aſſign for the content and ſatisfaction with which his family drank water cyder, *viz.* becauſe they could procure no other liquor. Indeed I make no doubt, but that the underſtanding as well as the palate, though it may out of neceſſity ſwallow the worſe, in general prefers the better.

In this confidence, I have reſolved to provide the public a better entertainment than it hath lately been dieted with; and as it is no great aſſurance in an Author to think himſelf capable of excelling ſuch writings as have been mentioned above, ſo neither can he be called too ſanguine in promiſing himſelf a more favourable reception from the public.

It is not uſual for us of ſuperior eminence in our profeſſion, to hang out our names on the ſign-poſt; however, to raiſe ſome expectation in the mind of every reader, as well as to give a ſlight direction to thoſe conjectures which he will be apt to make on this occaſion, I ſhall ſet down ſome few hints, by which a ſagacious gueſſer may arrive at ſufficient certainty concerning me.

And, *firſt*, I faithfully promiſe him, that I do not live within a mile of Grub-ſtreet; nor am I acquainted with a ſingle inhabitant of that place.

2*dly*, I am of no party; a word which I hope, by theſe my labours, to eradicate out of our conſtitution; this being indeed the true ſource of all thoſe evils which we have reaſon to complain of.

3*dly*,

3*dly*, I am a gentleman: a circumſtance from which my readers will reap many advantages; for at the ſame time that he may peruſe my paper, without any danger of ſeeing himſelf, or any of his friends, traduced with ſcurrility, ſo he may expect, by means of my intercourſe with people of condition, to find here many articles of importance concerning the affairs and tranſactions of the great world, (which can never reach the ears of vulgar news-writers) not only in matters of ſtate and politics, but amuſement. All routs, drums, and aſſemblies will fall under my immediate inſpection, and the adventures which happen at them, will be inſerted in my paper, with due regard, however, to the character I here profeſs, and with ſtrict care to give no offence to the parties concerned.

Laſtly, As to my learning, knowledge, and other qualifications for the office I have undertaken, I ſhall be ſilent, and leave the deciſion to my reader's judgment; of whom I deſire no more than that he would not deſpiſe me before he is acquainted with me.

And to prevent this, as I have already given ſome account *what* I am, ſo I ſhall proceed to throw forth a few hints *who* I am; a matter commonly of the greateſt importance towards the recommendation of all works of literature.

Firſt, then, it is very probable I am Lord *B——ke*. This I collect from my ſtile in writing, and knowledge in politics. Again, it is as probable that I am the *B*—p of ****, from my zeal for the proteſtant religion. When I conſider theſe, together with the wit and humour which will diffuſe themſelves through the whole, it is more than poſſible I may be Lord *C*—— himſelf, or at leaſt he may have ſome ſhare in my paper.

From ſome, or all of theſe reaſons, I am very likely Mr *W——n*, Mr *D——n*, Mr *L——n*, Mr *F——g*, *T——n*, or indeed any other perſon who hath ever diſtinguiſhed himſelf in the republic of letters.

This at leaſt is very probable, that ſome of theſe gentlemen may contribute a ſhare of their abilities to the

e carrying on this work: in which, as nothing ſhall
er appear in it inconſiſtent with decency, or the
eligion and true civil intereſt of my country, no
erſon, how great ſoever, need be aſhamed of being
magined to have a part; unleſs he ſhould be weak
nough to be aſhamed of writing at all; that is, of
aving more ſenſe than his neighbours, or of com-
unicating it to them.

I come now to conſider the only remaining article,
iz. the price, which is one third more than my co-
mporary weekly hiſtorians ſet on their labours.

And here I might, with modeſty enough, inſiſt,
hat if I am either what or who I pretend to be, I
ave ſufficient title to this diſtinction. It is well
nown, that, among mechanics, a much larger ad-
ance is often allowed only for a particular name.
genteel perſon would not be ſuſpected of dealing
ith any other than the moſt eminent in his trade,
ough he is convinced he pays an additional price
r ſo doing. And I hope the polite world, eſpecially
hen they conſider the regard to faſhion which I have
bove profeſſed, will not ſcruple to allow me the ſame
re-eminence.

But, in reality, this is the cheapeſt paper which
as ever given to the public, both in quality, of
hich enough has been ſaid already, and in which
ght a ſhilling would, I apprehend, be a more mo-
rate price that the three halfpence which is de-
anded by ſome others. And, *ſecondly*, (which my
ookſeller chiefly inſiſts on) in quantity; as I ſhall
ntain, he ſays, full three times as many letters as
e above-mentioned papers; and for which reaſon
e at firſt adviſed me to demand four-pence at leaſt,
r that one ninth part would be ſtill abated to the
ublic. To be ſerious; I would deſire my reader to
eigh fairly with himſelf, whether he doth not gain
times the knowledge and amuſement by my paper,
mpared to any other; and then I think he will
ave no difficulty to determine in my favour.

Indeed, the prudent part of mankind will be con-
derable gainers by purchaſing my paper; for as it
will

will contain every thing which is worth their knowing, all others will become abſolutely needleſs: and I leave to their determination, whether three-penny-worth of truth and ſenſe is not more worth their purchaſing, than all the rubbiſh and nonſenſe of the week, which will coſt them twenty times as much. In other words, is it not better to give their underſtanding an entertainment once a-week, than to ſurcharge it every day with coarſe and homely fare?

I ſhall conclude the whole in the words of the fair and honeſt tradeſman: Gentlemen, upon my word and honour, I can afford it no cheaper; and I believe there is no ſhop in town will uſe you better for the price.

No. 5. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 13, 1745.

———*Furit enſis et ignes,*
Quoque caret flammâ ſcelerum eſt locus. SIL. ITAL.

THE rebellion having long been the univerſal ſubject of converſation, in this town, it is no wonder that what ſo abſolutely engages our waking thoughts ſhould attend us to the pillow, and repreſent to us in dreams or viſions thoſe ideas which ſerv had before ſuggeſted to our minds.

It is natural, on all occaſions, to have ſome little attention to our private welfare, nor do I ever honour the patriot leſs (I am ſure I confide in him much the more) whoſe own good is involved in that of the public. I am not, therefore, aſhamed to give the public the following dream or viſion, though my own little affairs, and the private conſequences which the ſucceſs of this rebellion would produce to myſelf, form the principal object: for, I believe,

the ſame time, there are few of my readers who will not find themſelves intereſted in ſome parts of it.

Methought I was ſitting in my ſtudy, meditating for the good and entertainment of the public, with my two little children (as is my uſual courſe to ſuffer them) playing near me; when I heard a very hard knock at my door, and immediately afterwards ſeveral ill-looked raſcals burſt in upon me, one of whom ſeized me with great violence, ſaying, I was his priſoner, and muſt go with him. I aſked him, for what offence? Have you the impudence to aſk that, ſaid he, when the words True Patriot lie now before you? I then bid him ſhew me his warrant. He anſwered, *there it is*, pointing to ſeveral men who were in Highland dreſſes, with broad ſwords by their ſides. My children then ran towards me, and burſting into tears, expreſſed their concern for their poor papa. Upon which one of the ruffians ſeized my little boy, and pulling him from me, daſhed him againſt the ground; and all immediately hurried me away out of my room and houſe, before I could be ſenſible of the effects of this barbarity.

My concern for my poor children, from whom I had been torn in the above manner, prevented me from taking much notice of any objects in the ſtreets through which I was dragged with many inſults. Houſes burnt down, dead bodies of men, women, and children, ſtrewed every where as we paſſed, and great numbers of Highlanders, and Popiſh prieſts in their ſeveral habits, made, however, too forcible an impreſſion on me to be unobſerved.

My guard now brought me to Newgate, where they were informed that goal was too full to admit a ſingle perſon more. I was then conducted to a large booth in Smithfield, as I thought, where I was thut in with a great number of priſoners, amongſt whom were many of the moſt conſiderable perſons in this kingdom. Two of theſe were in a very particular manner reviled by the Highland guards, (for all the ſoldiers were in that dreſs) and theſe two I preſently recollected to be the A—chb—p of Y—k, and the b—p of Win——er.

As there is great inconſiſtency of time and place, in moſt dreams, I now found myſelf, by an unaccountable tranſition, in a court which bore ſome reſemblance to the court of King's Bench; only a great croſs was erected in the middle; and inſtead of thoſe officers of juſtice who uſually attend that court, a number of Highlanders, with drawn ſwords, ſtood there as centinels; the judges too were perſons whoſe faces I had never ſeen before. I was obliged, I thought, to ſtand ſome time at the bar, before my trial came on, the court being buſied in a cauſe where an abbot was plaintiff, in determining the boundaries of ſome abbey land, which they decided for the plaintiff, the chief juſtice declaring, it was his majeſty's pleaſure, in all doubtful caſes, that judgment ſhould be in favour of the church.

A charge of high-treaſon was then, I dreamed, exhibited againſt me, for having writ in defence of his preſent majeſty King GEORGE, and my paper of the True Patriot was produced in evidence againſt me.

Being called upon to make my defence, I inſiſted entirely on the ſtatute of Henry VII. by which all perſons are exempted from incurring the penalties of treaſon, in defence of the king *de facto*. But the chief juſtice told me in broken Engliſh, that if I had no other plea, they ſhould preſently over-rule that; for that his majeſty was reſolved to make an example of all who had any way diſtinguiſhed themſelves, in oppoſition to his cauſe.

Methought I then replied, with a reſolution which I hope every Engliſhman would exert on ſuch an occaſion, THAT THE LIFE OF NO MAN WAS WORTH PRESERVING LONGER THAN IT WAS TO BE DEFENDED BY THE KNOWN LAWS OF HIS COUNTRY; and that if the king's arbitrary pleaſure was to be that law, I was indifferent what he determined concerning myſelf.

The court having put it to the vote, (for no jury I thought, attended) and unanimouſly agreed that I was guilty, proceeded to paſs the ſentence uſual in caſes

eaſes of high treaſon, having firſt made many elogiums on the Pope, the Roman catholic religion, and the king who was to ſupport both, and be ſupported by them.

I was then delivered into the hands of the executioner, who ſtood ready, and was ordered to allow me only three hours to confeſs myſelf and be reconciled to the church of Rome. Upon which a prieſt, whoſe face I remember to have ſeen at a place called an oratory, and who was, for his good ſervices, preferred to be the ordinary of Newgate, immediately advanced, and began to revile me, ſaying, I was the wickedeſt heretick in the kingdom, and had exerted myſelf with more impudence againſt his majeſty and his holineſs than any other perſon whatſoever; but he added, as I had the good fortune to make ſome atonement for my impiety by being hanged, if I would embrace his religion, confeſs myſelf, and receive abſolution, I might poſſibly, after ſome expiation in purgatory, receive a final pardon.

I was hence conducted into a dungeon, where, by a glimmering light, I ſaw many wretches my fellow-priſoners, who for various crimes were condemned to various puniſhments.

Among theſe appeared one in a very ragged plight, whom I very well knew, and who, the laſt time I ſaw him, appeared to live in great affluence and ſplendor. Upon my enquiring the reaſon of his being detained in that region of horror, he very frankly told me it was for ſtealing a loaf. He acknowledged the fact; but ſaid, he had been obliged to it for the relief of his indigent family. I ſee, continued he, your ſurpriſe at this change of my fortune; but, you muſt know, my whole eſtate was in the funds, by the wiping out of which I was at once reduced to the condition in which you now ſee me. I roſe in the morning with 40,000 l. I had a wife whom I tenderly loved, and three blooming daughters. The eldeſt was within a week of her marriage, and I was to have paid down 10,000 l. with her. At noon I found a royal decree had reduced me to downright beggary. My daughter hath loſt her marriage, and is gone

diſtracted. My wife is dead of a broken heart; and my poor girls have neither clothes to cover them, nor meat to feed them: ſo that I may truly ſay,

——Miſer, O miſer, omnia ademit
Una dies infeſta mihi tot præmia vitæ.

Here, methought, he ſtopt, and a flood of tears guſhed from his eyes. I ſhould perhaps have been a greater ſharer in his ſorrow, had not the conſideration of his children's ruin repreſented to me the ſituation of my own. Good Gods! what were the agonies I then felt, though in a dream? Racks, wheels, gibbets, were no longer the objects of terror. My children poſſeſſed my whole mind, and my fearful imagination run through every ſcene of horror which villains can act on their fellow-creatures. Sometimes I ſaw their helpleſs hands ſtruggling for a moment with a barbarous cut-throat. Here I ſaw my poor boy, my whole ambition, the hopes and proſpect of my age, ſprawling on the floor, and weltering in his blood; there my fancy painted my daughter, the object of all my tenderneſs, proſtituted even in her infancy to the brutal luſt of a ruffian, and then ſacrificed to his cruelty. Such were my terrors, when I was relieved from them by the welcome preſence of the executioner, who ſummoned me immediately forth, telling me, ſince I had refuſed the aſſiſtance of the prieſt, he could grant me no longer indulgence.

The firſt ſight which occurred to me as I paſſed through the ſtreets, (for common objects totally eſcape the obſervation of a man in my preſent temper of mind), was a young lady of quality, and the greateſt beauty of this age, in the hands of two Highlanders, who were ſtruggling with each other for their booty. The lovely prize, though her hair was diſhevelled and torn, her eyes ſwollen with tears, her face all pale, and ſome marks of blood, both on that and her breaſt, which was all naked and expoſed, retained ſtill ſufficient charms to diſcover herſelf to me, who have always beheld her with wonder and admiration. Indeed it

it may be queſtioned whether perfect beauty loſes or acquires charms by diſtreſs. This ſight was matter of entertainment to my conductors, who, however, hurried me preſently from it, as I wiſh they had alſo from her ſhrieks, which reached my ears to a great diſtance.

After ſuch a ſpectacle as this, the dead bodies which lay every where in the ſtreets (for there had been, I was told, a maſſacre the night before) ſcarce made any impreſſion; nay, the very fires in which proteſtants were roaſting, were, in my ſenſe, objects of much leſs horror; nay, ſuch an effect had this ſight wrought on my mind, which hath been always full of the utmoſt tenderneſs for that charming ſex, that for a moment it obliterated all concern for my children, from whom I was to be hurried for ever, without a farewel, or without knowing in what condition I left them; or indeed whether they had hitherto ſurvived the cruelty which now methought raged every where, with all the fury which rage, zeal, luſt, and wanton fierceneſs could inſpire into the bloody hearts of popiſh prieſts, bigots, and barbarians. Of ſuch a ſcene my learned reader may ſee a fine picture drawn by Silius Italicus, in his ſecond book, where he deſcribes the ſacking the brave city of Saguntum by a leſs ſavage army.

I then overheard a prieſt admoniſh the executioner to exert the utmoſt rigour of my ſentence towards me; after which the ſame prieſt advancing forwards, and putting on a look of compaſſion, adviſed me, for the ſake of my ſoul, to embrace the holy communion. I gave him no anſwer, and he turned his back, thundering forth curſes againſt me.

At length I arrived at the fatal place which promiſed me a ſpeedy end to all my ſufferings. Here, methought, I ſaw a man who by his countenance and actions expreſſed the higheſt degree of deſpair. He ſtamped with his feet, beat his face, tore his hair, and uttered the moſt horrid execrations. Upon enquiring into the circumſtances of this perſon, I was informed by one of the byſtanders, that he was a nonjurer, who

had lent conſiderable aſſiſtance to the pretender's cauſe, out of principle; and was now lamenting the conſequences which the ſucceſs of it had brought on ſuch honeſt gentlemen as myſelf. My informer added, with a ſmile, the wiſe man expected his majeſty would keep his word with heretics.

The executioner then attempted to put the rope round my neck, when my little girl entered my bed-chamber, and put an end to my dream, by pulling open my eyes, and telling me that the taylor had brought home my cloaths for his majeſty's birth-day.

The ſight of my dear child, added to the name of that gracious prince, at once deprived me of every private and public fear; and the joy which now began to ariſe, being ſoon after heightened by conſideration of the day, the ſound of bells, and the hurry which prevailed every where from the eagerneſs of all ſorts of people to demonſtrate their loyalty at this ſeaſon, gave me altogether as delightful a ſenſation as perhaps the heart of man is capable of feeling; of which I have the pleaſure to know every reader muſt partake, who hath had good-nature enough to ſympathize with me in the foregoing part of this viſion.

No 4. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 26, 1745.

Ambubaiarum collegia, pharmacopolæ,
Mendici, mimi, balatrones; hoc genus omne
Maſtum & ſolicitum eſt. —— HOR.

THE Author of the Serious Addreſs to the People of great Britain (a pamphlet which ought to be in every man's hands at this ſeaſon) hath inconteſtably ſhewn the danger of this rebellion to all who have any regard for the proteſtant religion, or the laws and liberties of their country.

We

We have further endeavoured, in our laſt paper, to give a lively picture of the utter miſery and deſolation it would introduce, and the inſecurity of our eſtates, properties, lives, and families, under the government of an abſolute popiſh prince, (for abſolute he would plainly be) introduced by the conquering arms of France, Spain, and the Highlands.

So that every good and worthy proteſtant in this nation, who is attached to his religion and liberties, or who hath any eſtate or property, either in church-lands or in the funds, (which includes almoſt every man who hath either eſtate or property in the kingdom) is concerned, in the higheſt degree, to oppoſe the preſent rebellion.

I am however aware, that there yet remains a party to be ſpoken to, who are not ſtrictly concerned in point of intereſt in any of the preceding lights; I mean thoſe gentlemen who have no property, nor any regard either for the religion or liberty of their country.

Now if I can make it appear, that thoſe perſons likewiſe are intereſted in oppoſing the pretender's cauſe, I think we may then juſtly conclude, he cannot have a ſingle partizan in this nation (the moſt bigotted Roman catholics excepted) who is ſenſible enough to know his own good.

And firſt, the moſt noble party of free-thinkers, who have no religion, are moſt heartily concerned to oppoſe the introduction of popery, which would obtrude one on them, one not only inconſiſtent with free-thinking, but indeed with any thinking at all. How would a man of ſpirit, whoſe principles are too elevated to worſhip the great Creator of the univerſe, ſubmit to pay his adoration to a rabble of ſaints, moſt of whom he would have been juſtly aſhamed to have kept company with while alive!

But beſides the ſlaviſh doctrines which he muſt believe, or, at leaſt, meanly pretend to believe, how would a genius, who cannot conform to the little acts of decency required by a proteſtant church, ſupport the ſlaviſh impoſitions of auricular confeſſion, penance, faſting,

faſting, and all the tireſome forms and ceremonies exacted by the church of Rome!

Laſtly, whereas the ſaid free-thinkers have long regarded it as an intolerable grievance, that a certain body of men called *parſons* ſhould, for the uſeleſs ſervices of praying, preaching, catechiſing and inſtructing the people, receive a certain fixed ſtipend from the public, which the law fooliſhly allows them to call their own: how would theſe men brook the reſtoration of abbey-lands, impropriations, and the numberleſs flowers which the reformation hath lopped off from the church, and which the re-eſtabliſhment of popery would moſt infallibly reſtore to it.

Again, there are many worthy perſons who, though very little concerned for the true liberty of their country, have, however, the utmoſt reſpect for what is by ſeveral miſtaken for it, I mean licentiouſneſs, or a free power of abuſing the king, miniſtry, and every thing great, noble, and ſolemn.

The impunity with which this liberty hath been of late years practiſed, muſt be acknowledged by every man of the leaſt candour. Indeed to ſuch a degree, that power and government, inſtead of being objects of reverence and terror, have been ſet up as the butts of ridicule and baſſoonry, as if they were only intended to be laughed at by the people.

Now this is a liberty which hath only flouriſhed under this royal family. His preſent majeſty, as he hath leſs deſerved than his predeceſſors to be the object of it, ſo he hath ſupported it with more dignity and contempt than they have done: but how impatient the pretender will be under this liberty, and how certainly he will aboliſh it, may be concluded, not only from the abſolute power which he infallibly brings with him; but from the many ears and noſes which his family, without ſuch power, have, heretofore, ſacrificed on theſe occaſions.

And this is a loſs not only to be deplored by thoſe men of genius, who have exerted and may exert their great talents this way. There are many who, without the capacity of writing, have that of reading, and have

have done their utmoſt to ſupport and encourage ſuch authors and their works. Theſe will loſe their favourite amuſement, all thoſe laughs and ſhrugs which they have formerly vented at the expence of their ſuperiors.

But if theſe concerns ſhould appear chimerical, I come now to pecuniary conſiderations; to a large body of men whoſe whole trade would be ruined by this man's ſucceſs. The reader will be perhaps in doubt what trade can be carried on by ſuch perſons as I have deſcribed in the beginning of this paper: how much more will he be ſurpriſed to hear, that it is the principal trade which of late years hath been carried on in this kingdom. To keep him therefore no longer in ſuſpence, I mean the honeſt method of ſelling ourſelves, which hath flouriſhed ſo notably for a long time among us. A buſineſs which I have ventured to call honeſt, notwithſtanding the objections raiſed by weak and ſcrupulous people againſt it.

I know indeed many anſwers have been given to theſe objections by a late philoſopher of great eminence, and by the followers of his ſchool; ſuch as, *that all mankind are raſcals; that they are only to be governed by corruption*, &c. But to ſay the truth, there is no occaſion of having recourſe to theſe deep and obſcure doctrines for this purpoſe; there is a much fuller and plainer anſwer to be given, and which is founded on principles the very reverſe of thoſe which were taught in this ſchool, namely, the principles of common ſenſe and common honeſty; for if it be granted, as ſurely it will be, that we are freemen, we have certainly a right to ourſelves; and whatever we have a right to, we have alſo a right to ſell. And perhaps it was a doubt in that great philoſopher, *whether we were freemen or no*, that led him into thoſe doctrines I have mentioned.

Now this trade, by which alone ſo many thouſands have got an honeſt livelihood for themſelves and families, muſt be totally ruined; for if this nation ſhould be once enſlaved, it would be impoſſible for an honeſt man

man to carry on this buſineſs any longer. A freeman (as hath been proved) may juſtly ſell himſelf, but a ſlave cannot.

And if a man would be ſo diſhonourable and baſe as to offer at carrying on this trade in an enſlaved country, contrary to all the rules of honeſty, and all the moſt ſolemn ties of ſlavery, yet who would buy him? The reaſons againſt ſuch a purchaſe are too obvious to be mentioned. Indeed we may ſay in general, that as it is diſhoneſt in a ſlave to ſell, ſo it is as fooliſh in a ſlave to buy; for as the one hath no property to part with, ſo neither can the other acquire any.

For theſe reaſons, I think it is viſibly the intereſt of all that part of the nation, to whom I have addreſſed myſelf in the beginning of this paper, to exclude popery and arbitrary power.

There is, however, one objection which I foreſee may and will be made to this concluſion; and that is, whereas the eſtates of all the lords and commons of this kingdom will be forfeited, and at the diſpoſal of the conqueror, and the perſonal fortunes of all others, will, in the confuſion, at leaſt, be liable to plunder, that ſuch honeſt gentlemen may have a ſufficient chance abundantly to repair or compenſate all their loſſes.

I own there is ſomething very plauſible in this argument, and it might perhaps have great force if the pretender's ſon had landed in England as he did in Scotland; and had been pleaſed to place that confidence in an Engliſh rabble, with which he hath vouchſafed rather to honour theſe Highland banditti. In this caſe, I grant, no man could juſtly have been blamed who had fixed the eyes of his affection on his neighbour's eſtate, gardens, houſe, purſe, wife, or daughter, for joining the young man's cauſe, provided the ſucceſs of it had been probable: ſuch a behaviour would then have been highly conſiſtent with all the rules taught in that ſchool of philoſophy abovementioned, and none but a muſty moraliſt, for whoſe doctrine great men have doubtleſs an adequate contempt, would have condemned it.

But

But the fact is otherwiſe: The *Highlanders* are thoſe to whom he muſt owe any ſucceſs he may attain; theſe are therefore to be ſerved before you; and I eaſily refer to your own conſideration, when Rome, and France, and Spain, are repaid their demands, when a vaſt army of hungry Highlanders, and a larger army of as hungry prieſts, are ſatisfied, how miſerable a pittance will remain to your ſhare. Indeed ſo ſmall a one muſt this be, that the greateſt adept in our philoſo-political ſchool would think it ſcarce worth his while to ſacrifice his conſcience to the certainty of obtaining it.

Theſe latter conſiderations I earneſtly recommend to the moſt ſerious attention of the gentlemen for whoſe uſe this paper is calculated; and I am certain that any argument for the pretender's cauſe, drawn from the hopes of plundering their neighbours (with which perhaps ſome honeſt men have too fondly flattered themſelves) will have very little weight with any perſon. Nay, I muſt remind them, that they will not be ſuffered to rifle the very churches themſelves, upon thoſe ſmall riches moſt probably the ſaid gentlemen have caſt their eyes.

It appears then that none will be, or can be gainers by this rebellion but Popiſh prieſts and Highlanders; and I have too good an opinion of my country to apprehend that her religion, liberties and properties, can ever be endangered by ſuch adverſaries.

No. 7. TUESDAY, NOVEMBER 17, 1745.

To the TRUE PATRIOT.

My worthy friend,

I Received your paper, intitled the True Patriot, numbers one and two, incloſed in the franks of my great and moſt honoured patron, for which I have the higheſt thanks to you both. I am delighted, and that greatly, with many paſſages in theſe papers. The moderation which you profeſs towards all parties, perfectly becomes a Chriſtian. Indeed I have always thought, that moderation in the ſhepherd was the beſt, if not only, way to bring home all the ſtraggling ſheep to his flock. I have intimated this at the veſtry, and even at viſitation before the archdeacon:

Sed Caſſandræ non creditum eſt.

I like your method of placing a motto from the claſſics at the head of every paper. It muſt give ſome encouragement to your readers, that the author underſtands (at leaſt) one line of Latin, which is perhaps more than can be ſafely predicated of every writer in this age.

You deſire me, Sir, to write you ſomething proper to be ſeen, *et quidem*, by the public; as therefore a ſubject worthy their moſt ſerious attention now offers itſelf, *viz.* The enſuing faſt ordained by authority, I have communicated my thoughts to you thereon, which you may ſuppreſs or publicate as you think meet.

——————ἔρχευ ἐπ' ἔργον
Θεοῖσιν ἐπευξόμενος τελέσαι. PYTHAGORAS.

——————" Go upon the work,
" Having firſt prayed to the gods for ſucceſs."

As it is impoſſible for any man to reflect ſeriouſly on the progreſs of the preſent unnatural rebellion, without imputing ſuch unparallel'd ſucceſs to ſome other cauſe than has yet appeared, ſome other ſtrength than what any viſible human means hath placed in the hands of the rebels; ſo will it be extremely difficult to aſſign any adequate cauſe whatſoever, without recurring to one, of whoſe great efficacy we have frequent examples in ſacred hiſtory. I mean the juſt judgment of God againſt an offending people

And that this is really ſo, we may conclude from theſe two conſiderations: *firſt*, From the rapidity of the rebels progreſs, ſo unaccountable from all human means; for can hiſtory produce an inſtance parallel to this, of ſix or ſeven men landing in a great and powerful nation, in oppoſition to the inclination of the people, in defiance of a vaſt and mighty army? (for though the greater part of this army was not then in the kingdom, it was ſo nearly within call that every man of them might, within the compaſs of a few days or weeks at fartheſt, have been brought home and landed in any part of it.) If we conſider, I ſay, this handful of men landing in the moſt deſolate corner, among a ſet of poor, naked, hungry, diſarmed ſlaves, abiding there with impunity, till they had, as it were, in the face of a large body of his majeſty's troops, collected a kind of army or rather rabble, together; if we view this army intimidating the king's forces from approaching them by their ſituation; ſoon afterwards quitting that ſituation, marching directly up to the northern capital, and entering it without ſurpriſe or without a blow. If we again view this half-armed, half-diſciplined mob, without the aſſiſtance of a ſingle piece of artillery, march up to, attack, and *finite* a ſuperior number of the king's regular troops, with cannon in their front to defend them. If we conſider

them returning from this complete victory to the capital, which they had before taken; there remaining, for near twelve months, in contempt of twelve millions of people, above a hundred thousand of which have arms in their hands, and one half of these the best troops in Europe. If we consider them afterwards, at the approach of a large army, under a general of great experience and approved merit, bending their course, though not in a direct line, towards this army; and then, by long and painful marches, over almost inaccessible mountains, through the worst of roads, in the worst of seasons: by those means, I say, slipping that army, and leaving it behind them. If we view them next march on towards another army still greater, under a young, brave, vigilant, and indefatigable prince, who were advancing in their front to meet, as the others were in their rear to pursue them. If we consider, I say, these Banditti not yet increased to full 6000, and above a third of these old men and boys, not to be depended on, proceeding without a check, through a long tract of country, through many towns and cities, which they plundered, at least to a degree, up within a few miles of this third army, sent to oppose them; then, by the advantage of a dark night, passing by this army likewise, and by a most incredible march getting between that and the metropolis, into which they struck a terror scarce to be credited; though, besides the two armies at their heels, there was still one in this very metropolis infinitely superior to these rebels, not only in arms and discipline, but in numbers. Who, I say, can consider such things as these, and retain the least doubt, whether he shall impute them to a judgment inflicted on this sinful nation; especially when, in the *second* place, we must allow such judgment to be most undoubtedly our due?

To run through every species of crimes with which our *Sodom* abounds, would fill your whole paper. Indeed such monstrous impieties and iniquities have I both seen and heard of within these three last years, during my sojourning in what is called the world,

world, particularly the laſt winter, while I tarried in the great city, that while I verily believe we are the filleſt nation under heaven in every other light, we are wiſer then *Sodom* in wickedneſs. If we would avoid therefore, that final judgment which was denounced againſt that city: if we would avoid that total deſtruction, with which we are threatened not remotely and at a diſtance, but immediately and at hand; if we would pacify that vengeance which hath already begun to operate by ſending rebels, foreign enemies, peſtilence the forerunner of famine, and poverty among us: if we would pacify that vengeance which ſeems already bent to our deſtruction, by breathing the breath of folly, as well as perfidy, into the noſtrils of the great; what have we to do, but to ſet about THE WORK recommended by the wiſe and pious, though Heathen philoſopher, in my motto? And what is THIS WORK, but a thorough amendment of our lives, a perfect alteration of our ways? But before we begin this, let us, in obedience to the rule of that philoſopher preſcribed above, firſt apply ourſelves by faſting and prayer to the throne of offended grace. My lords the biſhops have wiſely ſet apart a particular day for this ſolemn ſervice. A day, which I hope will be kept univerſally through this kingdom with all thoſe marks of true piety and repentance, which our preſent dreadful ſituation demands. Indeed the wretch whoſe hard heart is not ſeriouſly in earneſt on this occaſion, deſerves no more the appellation of a good Engliſhman, than of a good churchman, or a true Chriſtian. All ſober and wiſe nations have in times of public danger inſtituted certain ſolemn ſacrifices to their gods; now the Chriſtian ſacrifices are thoſe of faſting and prayer; and if ever theſe were in a more extraordinary manner neceſſary, it is ſurely now, when the leaſt reflection muſt convince us that we do in ſo eminent a manner deſerve the judgment of God, and when we have ſo much reaſon to apprehend it is coming upon us. I hope therefore, (I repeat it once more) that this day will be kept by us ALL, in the moſt ſolemn manner, and that not a man will dare refuſe complying with

thoſe duties which the ſtate requires of us: but I muſt, at the ſame time, recommend to my countrymen a caution, that they would not miſtake THE WORK itſelf for what is only the beginning of, or preface to it. Let them not vainly imagine, that when they have faſted and prayed for a day, nay, even for an age, that THE WORK is done. It is a total amendment of life, a total change of manners, which can bring THE WORK to a concluſion, or produce any good effects from it. Here again, to give particular inſtances would be to enumerate all thoſe vices which I have already declined recounting, and would be too prolix. They are known, they are obvious; and few men who reſolve to amend their lives, will, I believe, want any aſſiſtance to diſcover what parts of them ſtand in need of amendment. I ſhall, however, point out two or three particulars, which I the rather ſingle out, becauſe I have heard, that there are ſome who diſpute whether they are really vices or no, though every polity as well as the chriſtian have agreed in condemning them as ſuch. The firſt of theſe is lying. The devil himſelf is, in ſcripture, ſaid to be the father of lies; and liars are perhaps ſome of the vileſt and wickedeſt children he has. Nay, I think the morals of all civilized nations have denied even the character of a gentleman to a liar. So heinous is this vice, that it has not only ſtigmatized particular perſons, but whole communities with infamy. And yet have we not perſons, ay, and very great perſons too, ſo famous for it, that their credit is a jeſt, and their words mere wind? I need not point them out, for they take ſufficient care to point out themſelves. Luxury is a ſecond vice, which is ſo far from being acknowledged as criminal, that it is oſtentatiouſly affected. Now this is not only a vice in itſelf, but it is in reality a privation of all virtue. For firſt, in lower fortunes it prevents men from being honeſt: and, in higher ſituations, it excludes that virtue without which no man can be a Chriſtian, namely, charity. For as ſurely as charity covereth a multitude of ſins, ſo muſt a multitude of diſhes, pictures, jewels,

jewels, houſes, horſes, ſervants, &c. cover all charity. I remember dining laſt winter at a great man's table, where we had among many others one diſh, the expence of which would have provided very liberally for a poor family a whole twelvemonth. In ſhort, I never ſaw, during my abode in the great city, a ſingle man, who gave me reaſon to think that he would have enabled himſelf to be charitable, by retrenching the moſt idle ſuperfluity of his expence. Perhaps the large ſubſcriptions which have prevailed all over the kingdom at this ſeaſon, may be urged as an inſtance of charity. To this I anſwer, in the words of a very great and generous friend of mine, who diſclaimed all merit from a very liberal ſubſcription, ſaying, "It was rather ſenſe than goodneſs, to "ſacrifice a ſmall part for the ſecurity of the whole." Now true charity is of another kind, it has no ſelf-intereſted motives, purſues no immediate return nor worldly good, well knowing that it is laying up a much ſurer and much greater reward for itſelf. But, indeed, who wonders that men are ſo backward in ſacrificing any of their wealth to their conſciences, who before had ſacrificed their conſciences to their acquiſition of that very wealth. Can we expect to find charity in an age, when ſcarce any refuſe to own the moſt profligate rapaciouſneſs? when no man is aſhamed of avowing the purſuit of riches through every dirty road and track? To ſpeak out, in an age when every thing is venal; and when there is ſcarce one among the mighty who would not be equally aſhamed at being thought not to ſet *ſome price* on himſelf, as he would at being imagined to ſet too low a one. This is an aſſertion whoſe truth is too well known. Indeed my four years knowledge of the world hath ſcarce furniſhed me with examples of any other kind. I believe I have already exceeded my portion of hour glaſs; I ſhall therefore reſerve what I have farther to ſay on this ſubject to ſome other opportunity.

I am, &c.

ABRAHAM ADAMS.

No 9. TUESDAY, DECEMBER 31, 1745.

Non hoc iſta ſibi tempus ſpectacula poſcit. VIRG.

THE following letter came attended with a ſmall preſent of Bologna ſauſages, Naples ſoap, Florence oyl, and a paper of maccaroni.

" SIGNIOR SAR,

" Me be inform, dat you be de Patriat, dat is to " ſay, van parſon who take part vor de muny; " now, Sar, dat be commodity me did forget to bring " over vid me; but ven me ave got one two touſand " pound me ſal ſend you ſum; me deſire darefor, dat " you would rite ſumting to recommend de opera, or " begar me ſal be oblige to go back to Italy like one " fool as me did cum, and dey will laff at me for " bring no muny from an country vich ave give ſo " much muny for ſong.

" Me be, Signior Sar,

" Of your excellence, de moſt humble ſclave,

" GIOVANI CANTILENA."

Though I by no means admit that character of patriotiſm which the ſignior hath conceived, whether in Italy or England I will not determine, yet as I think it one part of integrity to dare oppoſe popular clamour, I ſhall, in compliance with my good friend, and in return for his kind preſent, offer ſuch thoughts as occur to me in favour of a diverſion, againſt which ſo much diſguſt ſeems to prevail at this ſeaſon.

And in the firſt place, I think it ſhould be conſidered, that theſe poor Italians, whoſe property is their throats, did not come over of their own accord; but were invited hither. Nor is the rebellion a ſufficient excuſe to ſend them back unrewarded, ſince the poverty

poverty and diſtreſs of this nation, even before this rebellion, occaſioned by debts, wars, and almoſt every public calamity, muſt have deterred any perſons from ſuch an undertaking, who had not reſolved to have an opera at any rate, and in any ſituation.

But perhaps this melancholy ſituation of our affairs was a principal reaſon for the introduction of this opera. Is any thing more proper to ſoften and compoſe the mind in misfortunes than muſic? Hath it not always been found the moſt effectual remedy in grief? and was accordingly uſed as ſuch by the great Nero, to calm and compoſe the agonies of his mind, while his own city was in flames; and Homer informs us, that Achilles uſed to aſſuage the wrath and impetuoſity of his temper by the muſic which old Chiron had taught him. Nay, it hath been preſcribed, by phyſicians, as a medicine for a diſeaſed mind; and we are told by Joſephus, that "When Saul was "agitated with fits, like a dæmoniac, his *phyſicians* "*not being able to give any natural or philoſophical* "*account of the diſtemper*, only adviſed the having "ſomebody about him that could ſing and play upon the harp well, that might be ready at hand to "give him the diverſion of an hymn or air. This "advice was taken, and David ſent for, who by his "voice and harp cured the patient."

The great power over the paſſions, which the ancient philoſophers aſſigned to muſic, is almoſt too well known to be mentioned. Socrates learned to ſing, in his old age. Plato had ſo high an opinion of muſic, that he conſidered the application of it to amuſement only, as a high perverſion of its inſtitution: for he imagined it given by the gods to men for much more divine and noble purpoſes. And Pythagoras (to mention no more) is known to have held, that virtue, peace, health, and all other good things, was nothing but harmony. Hence perhaps aroſe that notion maintained by ſome of the Greeks, from obſerving the ſympathy between them, that the ſoul of man was ſomething very like the ſound of a fiddle.

And

And this power muſic is not only capable of exerciſing to allay and compoſe, it is altogether as efficacious in rouſing and animating the paſſions. Thus Xenophantus is recorded to have incited Alexander to arms with his muſic. And Plutarch, in his Laconic Apothegms, tells us, that Ageſilaus being aſked, why the Spartans marched (or rather danced) up to the emeny to ſome tune, anſwered, that muſic diſcovered the brave man from the coward: for thoſe ſame notes which made the eyes of the valiant ſparkle with fire, overſpread the timorous face with paleneſs, and every other mark of terror.

This, therefore, is a ſecond good reaſon for an opera at preſent, provided the muſic be properly adapted to the times, be chiefly martial, and conſiſt moſtly of trumpets and kettle-drums. The ſubject likewiſe of the drama (though that is generally conſidered as a matter of little conſequence in thoſe compoſitions) may lend ſome aſſiſtance; as ſuppoſe, for inſtance, the famous opera in which the celebrated Nicolini formerly killed a lion with ſo much bravery, ſhould be revived on this occaſion. Such an example would almoſt animate the ladies, nay, even the beaus, to take up arms in defence of their country.

And what are the objections which our antimuſical enemies make to this entertainment?

Firſt, I apprehend it hath been ſaid, that the ſoftneſs of Italian muſic is calculated to enervate the mind. This hath been obviated already: but admitting the objection true, where is its validity, when we conſider of what perſons the audiences will be compoſed? for not only the common ſoldiers, but all inferior officers, are excluded by the price. Indeed the audience at an opera conſiſts chiefly of fine gentlemen, fine ladies, and their ſervants, and except a few general officers, whoſe courage we ought to imagine ſuperior to the power of a languiſhing air, ſcarce a perſon is ever preſent, who is likely to ſee a camp, or handle a muſquet; unleſs the opera, by being regulated as above, ſhould inſpire a martial ſpirit into them.

Secondly,

Secondly, it is ſaid, that the immoderate expence of this diverſion, at a ſeaſon when poverty ſpreads its black banner over the whole nation, and when much the greater part are reduced to the moſt miſerable degrees of want and neceſſity, is an argument of moſt abandoned extravagance, and indecent profligacy, ſcarce to be equalled by any example in hiſtory.

This, I conceive, is the objection on which our adverſaries principally rely. I ſhall apply myſelf, therefore, in a very particular manner, to anſwer it.

And here I muſt premiſe, that this objection proceeds on a tacit admiſſion of what is by no means true, *viz.* That the ſums expended on an opera ſubſcription would otherwiſe be employed in the public ſervice of the nation, or at leaſt in private charity to ſome of the numberleſs objects of it.

But this would certainly not be the caſe: for the perſon who could think of promoting ſuch a diverſion in the midſt of ſo much calamity, muſt have neither heart nor head good enough to feel the diſtreſſes of a fellow-creature, much leſs to relieve them; and ſurely it cannot be ſuppoſed, that theſe people will advance any thing in defence of his majeſty, when they fly in his ſacred face, by attempting an opera, though he hath himſelf (or I am groſsly miſinformed) been pleaſed to declare, it is not now a time for operas.

We muſt therefore conclude that this money, if not exhauſted for the preſent good purpoſe, would either remain dormant in the purſe of its owner, or would otherwiſe be ſacrificed at cards, or laviſhed on ſome leſs innocent article of luxury or wantonneſs.

The expence then of this entertainment, however great it ſhould be, will not injure the public. On the contrary, ſuch will be its political utility, that I queſtion whether this opera may not preſerve the nation.

For, in the firſt place, can any thing tend more to raiſe the public credit abroad, or ſo effectually to refute the ſlanders of thoſe enemies, who have endeavoured

deavoured to repreſent us in a bankrupt condition, than this very undertaking. It hath been eſteemed a maſter ſtroke of Roman policy, as well as greatneſs, that in their higheſt diſtreſs, they endeavoured by all kinds of art, to inſinuate their great ſtrength, and aſſert their independency; for which purpoſe was that ever memorable puff, with which they refuſed the preſents of King Hiero, after the battle of Thraſimene.

I cannot help regarding our ſending for a troop of Italian ſingers, in this time of diſtreſs, as a ſtate puff of the ſame kind. Indeed I am convinced it was done with this deſign: for are not the very perſons who are the forwardeſt in promoting this diverſion, courtiers, and conſequently friends to the preſent eſtabliſhment? Are they not people of fortune, and therefore highly intereſted in the preſervation of national credit? Nor can I help obſerving as a proof of the policy of this meaſure, another piece of ſtate craft, tending to ſhew our great inward ſtrength and ſecurity; for while we ſent for this troop of ſingers into England, we left ſeveral troops of our ſoldiers abroad. And in what part of Europe could this policy be played off with ſuch advantage as in Italy, where our principal enemies reſide, and where the ſcheme of our deſtruction is ſuppoſed to have been laid? The ſucceſs with which this ſcheme hath been attended, muſt have anſwered our expectation, ſince it is apparent, by the arrival of theſe ſingers, that they are *fairly taken in*, and impoſed upon to believe we have ſtill as much money as ever.

In this light then the opera and thoſe who encourage it will deſerve our higheſt encomiums, and the ſubſcription to it may be ranked with the other public ſubſcriptions at this ſeaſon. And in this light we ought to ſee the intention of thoſe who have promoted it, for the reaſons above-mentioned; to which I will add the humane maxim, of always aſſigning the beſt motive poſſible to the actions of every one.

But, on the contrary, ſhould we be ſo cruel to deny any ſuch good purpoſe to be at the bottom; nay,

nay, ſhould we derive this deſire of an opera at preſent from the moſt depraved levity of mind, an utter inſenſibility of public good or evil, yet we may ſtill draw advantages from our opera, though I muſt own I could be ſcarce ſanguine enough to derive them from deſign. For could it be imagined of any nation, at ſuch a ſeaſon of danger and diſtreſs, (which I decline painting at length, as the picture is diſagreeable, and already ſufficiently known) that conſiderable numbers of the inhabitants, inſtead of contributing all the aſſiſtance in their ſeveral capacities to the public, ſhould employ their time and their money in endeavouring to promote an expenſive foreign diverſion, compoſed of all the ingredients of ſoftneſs and luxury, ſuch a nation would not be worth invading. No powerful prince could look on ſuch a people with any eyes of fear or jealouſy, nor no wiſe one would ſend his ſubjects among them, for fear of enervating their minds, and debauching their morals.

Such a nation could inſpire no other ideas into its neighbours, than thoſe of contempt and ridicule. We ought to be conſidered as the ſilly ſwan, whoſe laſt breath goes out in a cantata. And as nothing but wanton cruelty could move any power to attack us, ſo would the conqueſt of us be no leſs infamous than barbarous; and we ſhould from the ſame reaſon, be as ſafe in the neighbourhood of France, as the little commonwealth of Lucca was in that of her great ſiſter of Rome.

For all theſe reaſons I am for an opera: but I muſt then inſiſt on it, that we ſtrike up immediately, otherwiſe I muſt deſire that ghoſt of an advertiſement, calling for latter payment from the ſubſcribers, which hath haunted the public papers this month, without having, (as it ſeems) been ſpoken to by any one, to diſappear immediately: for I would by no means have all Europe imagine, that *we want nothing* to eſtabliſh our opera at preſent, *but money*.

No. 10. TUESDAY, JANUARY 7, 1746.

Tu, Jupiter, quem ſtatorem hujus urbis atque imperii vere nominamus: HUNC *et* HUJUS *ſocios a tuis aris ceteriſque templis, a tectis urbis ac mœnibus, a vita fortunisque civium omnium arcebis: et omnes bonorum inimicos, hoſtes patriæ, latrones Italiæ, ſceleratum fœdere inter ſe ac nefaria ſocietate conjunctos æternis ſupplicüs, vios mortuoſque mactabis*

Cic. in L. Catil.

To the TRUE PATRIOT.

Dear Sir, Dec. 14. 1745.

THOUGH I live on a ſmall fortune, in great obſcurity, yet I cannot but be intereſted in our preſent troubles. My thoughts ſometimes lead me to meditate, what we are likely to expect, ſhould ſucceſs attend the preſent ravagers of our country. Nay, I have even gone ſo far as to ſuppoſe them actual victors, and have in this light framed an imaginary journal of events, with which I here preſent you, as with a waking dream.

The perſon of my drama or journaliſt, I ſuppoſe to be an honeſt tradeſman, living in the buſy part of the city.

January 1, 1746.

THIS day the ſuppoſed conqueror was proclaimed at Stocks Market, amidſt the loud acclamations of Highlanders and friars. I was enabled, from my own windows, to view this ceremony; Walbrook church, the Manſion houſe, and ſeveral others adjoining, having been burnt and razed in the maſſacre of laſt week. Father O-Blaze, an Iriſh dominican, read upon the occaſion a ſpeech out of a paper, which he ſtiled an extempore addreſs. Melancholy as I was, I could not help ſmiling at one of his expreſſions, when

when ſpeaking of the new year, he talked of *Janus*'s faces, each of which looked both backward and forward.

Jan. 2. A proclamation iſſued for a free parliament (according to the declaration) to meet the 20th inſtant. The twelve judges removed, and twelve new ones appointed, ſome of whom had ſcarce ever been in Weſtminſter-hall before

Jan. 3. Queen Anne's ſtatue in St Paul's church-yard taken away, and a large crucifix erected in its room.

Jan. 4, 5, 6. The caſh, transfer books, &c. removed to the Tower, from the Bank, South-ſea, and India-houſes, which ('tis reported) are to be turned into convents.

Jan. 10. Three anabaptiſts committed to Newgate, for pulling down the crucifix in St Paul's church-yard.

Jan. 12. Being the firſt Sunday after Epiphany, father Mac-dagger, the royal confeſſor, preached at St James's——ſworn afterwards of the privy-council——arrived the French ambaſſador with a numerous retinue.

Jan. 20. The free parliament opened—the ſpeech and addreſſes filled with ſentiments of civil and religious liberty.——An act of grace propoſed from the crown, to pardon all treaſons committed under pretext of any office, civil or military, before the firſt declaration's being promulgated, which was in the iſle of Mull, about nineteen months ago. The judges conſulted, whether all perſons throughout Great Britain were intended to be bound by this promulgation, as being privy to it. 'I was held they were, becauſe *Ignorantia legis non excuſat*.

Jan. 22. Three members, to wit, Mr D—n, Mr P—t, and Mr L—n, were ſeized in their houſes, and ſent to the Tower, by a warrant from a ſecretary of ſtate. The ſame day I heard another great man was diſmiſſed from his place, but his name I could neither learn nor gueſs.

Jan. 23. His highneſs ſends a meſſage to the houſe, that he would make no further removals, till he ſaw better reaſon.

Jan. 24. A great court at St James's, at which were preſent * and * and * and * and *, and all kiſſed hands.

Jan. 25. The three anabaptiſts above-mentioned tried for their offence, and ſentenced to be hanged. Executed the ſame day, attended by Mr Mac-henly the ordinary. Their teacher, Mr Obadiah Waſhum the currier, was refuſed acceſs from their firſt commitment.

Jan. 26. This day the Gazette informs us, that Portſmouth, Berwick, and Plymouth, were delivered into the hands of French commiſſaries, as cautionary towns; and alſo twenty ſhips of the line, with their guns and rigging, purſuant to treaty.

Jan. 27. Tom Blatch, the old ſmall-coal man, committed to the Compter, for a violent aſſault on father Mac-dagger and three young friars. 'Twas the talk about town, that they had attempted the chaſtity of his daughter Kate.

Jan. 28. A bill brought into the Commons, and twice read the ſame day, to repeal the act of *habeas corpus*, and that by which the writ *de heretico comburendo* was aboliſhed. A mutiny the ſame day among the Highland ſoldiers——quelled by doubling their pay.

Jan. 31. The above bill paſſed, and the royal aſſent given. A motion made about the reſtoration of abbey lands;———rejected by the lords, ſeven Engliſh Roman Catholic peers being in the majority.

Feb. 1. All peerages declared void ſince the revolution, and twenty-four new peers created, without a foot of land in the iſland. A ſecond mutiny among the ſoldiery.

Feb. 2. Long-Acre and Covent-Garden allotted out in portions to the Highland guards. Two watermen and a porter committed to the Lollards tower at Lambeth, for hereſy.

Feb.

Feb. 3. Father Poignardini, an Italian Jeſuit, made privy-ſeal. A bill propoſed againſt the liberty of the preſs, and to place the nomination of jurors, exempt from challenge, in the crown. Several Catholic lords and gentlemen, being Engliſh, quit the court and retire into the country. More heretics ſent to Lambeth.

Feb. 5. A promotion of eighteen general officers, three only of which were Engliſh. Lord John Drummond made colonel of the firſt regiment of foot-guards, the Duke of Perth of the ſecond, and Lord George Murray of the third.

Feb. 6. Various grants paſſed the privy ſeal of lands in various counties to generals, eccleſiaſtics, and other favourites, all foreigners.

Feb. 9. A petition from various perſons, ſufferers by the ſaid grants, ſetting forth their fidelity to the government, and that particularly in the late troubles, though they had never entered into any ſchemes in favour of his preſent Highneſs, yet they had conſtantly declined all ſubſcriptions, aſſociations, &c. to his prejudice. Father Mac-dagger brought them for anſwer, that the aſſociators and ſubſcribers had at leaſt ſhewn their attachment to ſome government, but that an indifference to all government deſerved favour from none, and that therefore their petition was rejected.

Feb. 13. Four heretics burnt in Smithfield——Mr Mac-henly attended them, aſſiſted on this extraordinary occaſion by father O-Blaze the dominican.

Feb. 19. Rumours of a plot. More heretics committed. The judges declare the power of the crown to ſuſpend laws. Father Mac-dagger made preſident of Magdalen college in Oxford.

Feb. 23. Four lords and two commoners taken into cuſtody for the plot, all Engliſh, and two of them Roman catholics. The deanry of Chriſt-church given to father Poignardini, and the biſhopries of Wincheſter and Ely, to the general of the Jeſuits order, reſident in Italy.

Feb. 28. Six more heretics burnt in Smithfield. A freſh motion made to reſtore the abbey-lands——

carried in the lords houſe, but rejected by the commons. Several members of the lower houſe ſent to the Tower by a ſecretary of ſtate's warrant, and the next day expelled, and fined by the privy council 1000 *l.* each.

March 1. The French ambaſſador made a duke, with precedence. The motion for reſtoring abbey lands carried, and an addreſs of both houſes prepared upon the occaſion. Cape Breton given back to the French, and Gibraltar and Portmahon to the Spaniards.

March 2. Seven more heretics burnt. A meſſage from the crown, deſiring the advice of the free parliament touching the funds. An humble addreſs immediately voted by way of anſwer, praying that his Highneſs would take ſuch methods, as they might be effectually and ſpeedily annihilated.

March 4. An eminent phyſician fined 200 marks in the King's-bench, for an inuendo at Batſon's, that Bath water was preferable to holy water. Three hundred Highlanders, of the oppoſite party, with their wives and children, maſſacred in Scotland. The Pope's nuncio arrived this evening at Greenwich.

March 7. The Pope's nuncio makes his public entry—met at the Royal-Exchange by my lord Mayor (a Frenchman) with the Aldermen, who have all the honour to kiſs his toe—proceeds to Paul's-church-yard—met there by father O-Blaze, who invites him, in the name of the new vicar-general and his doctors, to a *combuſtio hæreticorum*, juſt then going to be celebrated. His eminence accepts the offer kindly, and attends them to Smithfield, where the ordinary is introduced and well received—The nuncio proceeds thence to St James's, where he had been expected for five hours—the nobility and great officers of ſtate all admitted to kiſs his toe—A grand office opened the ſame night in Drury-lane for the ſale of pardons and indulgences.

March 9. My little boy Jacky taken ill of the itch. He had been on the parade with his godfather

the

the day before, to ſee the life-guards, and had juſt touched one of their plaids.

March 12. His Highneſs ſends a meſſage to the commons, acquainting them with his deſign of equipping a large fleet for the aſſiſtance of his good brother of France, and for that purpoſe demanding two millions, to be immediately raiſed by capitation. A warm debate thereon. His Highneſs goes to the houſe of commons at 12 at night, places himſelf in the ſpeaker's chair, and introduces the French ambaſſador. His excellency makes a long ſpeech, ſetting forth the many ſervices which his maſter had done this nation, and the great good-will he had always borne towards them, and concluding with many haughty menaces, in caſe they ſhould prove ungrateful for all his favours. He is ſeconded by the laird of Keppoch, chancellor of the Exchequer. The ſpeaker ſtands up, and utters the word privilege, upon which he is ſent to the Tower. Then Mr Chancellor of the Exchequer moved, that the members againſt the motion might have leave to withdraw; and ſeveral having left the houſe, the queſtion was put, and carried in the affirmative, *nemine contradicente.*

March 16. Lord C. J. W—les, and admiral V——n, hang'd at Tyburn. Several others were reprieved, on the merit of having been enemies to thoſe two great men, and were only ordered to be whipt at the cart's tail.

March 17. Freſh rumours of a plot—a riot in the city—a riſing in the north—a deſcent in the weſt—confuſions, uproars, commitments, hangings, burnings, *&c. &c.*

——*verbum non amplius addam.*

No. 11. TUESDAY, JANUARY 14, 1746.

Τὰ χρηματ' ἀνθρώτοισιν τιμιώτατα
Δυναμίν τε πλείστην τῶν ἐν' ἀνθρώποις ἔχει.

EURIP. in PHÆNIS.

To the TRUE PATRIOT.

SIR,

I AM a citizen, a haberdasher by trade, and one of those persons to whom the world allow the epithets of wise and prudent. And I enjoy this character the more, as I can fairly assure myself I deserve it; nor am indebted on this account, to any thing but my own regular conduct, unless to the good instructions with which my father launched me into the world, and upon which I formed this grand principle, "That there is no real value in any thing "but money."

The truth of this proposition may be argued from hence, that it is the only thing in the value of which mankind are agreed; for, as to all other matters, while they are held in high estimation by some, they are disregarded and looked on as cheap and worthless by others. Nay, I believe it is difficult to find any two persons, who place an equal valuation on any virtue, good or great quality whatever.

Now, having once established this great rule, I have, by reference to it, been enabled to set a certain value on every thing else; in which I have governed myself by two cautions, 1st, Never to purchase too dear; and, 2dly, (which is a more uncommon degree of wisdom) never to overvalue what I am to sell; by which latter misconduct I have observed many persons guilty of great imprudence.

It is not my purpose to trouble you with exemplifications of the foregoing rule, in my ordinary calling

ing: I ſhall proceed to acquaint you with my conduct concerning thoſe things which ſome ſilly people call invaluable, ſuch as reputation, virtue, ſenſe, beauty, *&c.* all which I have reduced to a certain ſtandard: For, as your friend Mr Adams ſays, in his letter on the late faſt, I imagine every man, woman, and thing to have their price. His aſtoniſhment at which truth made me ſmile, as I dare ſwear it did you; it is, indeed, agreeable enough to the ſimplicity of his character.

But to proceed.——In my youth I fell violently in love with a very pretty woman. She had a good fortune; but it was 500*l.* leſs than I could with juſtice demand, (I was heartily in love with her, that's the truth on it); I therefore took my pen and ink (for I do nothing without them) and ſet down the particulars in the following manner:

Mrs Amey Fairface debtor to Stephen Grub.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
For fortune, as *per* marriage	5000	00	00
Per contra creditor.			
Imprimis, To caſh - -	4500	00	00
Item, To beauty (for ſhe had a great deal, and I had a great value for it)	100	00	00
Item, To wit, as *per* converſation	2	10	00
Item, To her affection for me	30	00	00
Item, To good houſewifery, a ſober chaſte education, and being a good workwoman at her needle, in all	50	00	00
Item, To her ſkill in muſic - -	1	01	00
Item, To dancing - - -	00	00	06
	4683	11	06
Mrs Amey debtor - - -	5000	00	00
Per contra creditor - -	4683	11	06
Due to balance - - -	316	08	06

You

You ſee, Sir, I ſtrained as hard as poſſible, and placed a higher value (perhaps) on her ſeveral perfections, than others would have done; but the balance ſtill remained againſt her, and I was reduced to the neceſſary alternative of ſacrificing that ſum for ever, or of quitting my miſtreſs. You may eaſily gueſs on which a prudent man would determine. Indeed, I had ſufficient reaſon to be afterwards pleaſed with my prudence, as ſhe proved to be a leſs valuable woman than I imagined: for, two years afterwards, having had a conſiderable loſs in trade, by which the balance above was ſatisfied, I renewed my addreſſes, but the falſe-hearted creature (forſooth) refuſed to ſee me.

A ſecond occaſion which I had for my pen and ink, in this way, was, when the ſituation of my affairs, after ſome loſſes, was ſuch, that I could clearly have put 1500l. in my pocket by breaking. The account then ſtood thus:

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
Stephen Grub, debtor to caſh	1500	00	00

Per contra creditor.

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
To danger to ſoul as *per* perjury	105	00	00
To danger to body as *per* felony	1000	00	00
To loſs of reputation - -	500	00	00
To conſcience as *per* injuring others	0	02	06
To incidental charges, trouble, *&c.*	100	00	00

I am convinced you are ſo good a maſter of figures, that I need not caſt up the balance, which muſt ſo viſibly have determined me to preſerve the character of an honeſt man.

Not to trouble you with more inſtances of a life of which you may eaſily gueſs the whole by this ſpecimen, for it hath been entirely tranſacted by my golden rule; I ſhall haſten to apply this rule, by which I ſuppoſe many other perſons in this city conduct themſelves, to the preſent times.

And here, Sir, have we not reaſon to ſuppoſe that ſome good men, for want of duly conſidering the

the danger of their property, &c. from the preſent rebellion, and low ſtate of public credit, have been too tenacious of their money on the preſent occaſion: for, if we admit that the whole is in danger, ſurely it is the office of prudence to be generous of the leſſer part, in order to ſecure the greater.

Let us ſee how this ſtands on paper; for thus only we can argue with certainty.

Suppoſe, then, the given ſum of your property be 20,000*l.*

The value of ſecuring this will be more or leſs in proportion to the danger; for the truth of which I need only appeal to the common practice of inſurance.

If the chance then be twenty to one, it follows that the value of inſurance is at an average with 1000l.

And proportionally more or leſs, as the danger is greater or leſs.

There are beſides two other articles, which I had like to have forgot, to which every man almoſt affixes ſome value. Theſe are religion and liberty. Suppoſe therefore we ſet down,

	l.	*s.*	*d.*
Religion at - - -	00	15	00
And liberty at - - -	00	02	06

And I think none but a profligate fellow can value them at a lower rate; it follows, that to ſecure them from the ſame proportion of danger as above, is worth 10$\frac{1}{7}$ *d.*

Now this laſt ſum may be undoubtedly ſaved, as it would not be miſſed or called for, if men would only ſeriouſly conſider the preſervation of what is ſo infinitely more valuable, their property: and advance their money in its defence, in due proportion to the degree of its danger. And as there is nothing ſo pleaſant as clear gain, it muſt give ſome ſatisfaction to every thinking man, that while he riſques his money for the preſervation of his property, his religion and liberty are toſſed him into the bargain.

You

You ſee, Sir, I have fairly balanced between thoſe hot-headed zealots, who ſet theſe conveniencies above the value of money, and thoſe profligate wicked people, who treat them as matters of no concern or moment.

I have therefore been a little ſurpriſed at the backwardneſs of ſome very prudent men on this occaſion: for it would be really doing them an injury to ſuſpect they do not ſet a juſt value on money, while every action of their lives demonſtrates the contrary. I can therefore impute this conduct only to a firm perſuaſion that there will be fooliſh people enough found, who, from loyalty to their king, zeal for their country, or ſome other ridiculous principle, will ſubſcribe ſufficient ſums for the defence of the public: and ſo they might ſave their own money, which will ſtill increaſe in value, in proportion to the diſtreſs and poverty of the nation.

This would be certainly a wiſe and right way of reaſoning; and ſuch a conduct muſt be highly commendable, if the fact ſuppoſed was true: for as nothing is ſo truly great as to turn the penny while the world ſuſpects your ruin; ſo to convert the miſfortunes of a whole community to your own emolument muſt be a thing highly eligible by every good man, *i. e.* every Plumb. But I am afraid this rule will reach only private perſons at moſt, and cannot extend to thoſe whoſe examples, while they keep their own purſes ſhut, lock up the purſes of all their neighbours.

A fallacy of the ſame kind I am afraid we fall into, when we refuſe to lend our money to the government at a moderate intereſt, in hopes of extorting more from the public purſe; with which thought a very good ſort of man, a plumb, ſeemed yeſterday to hug himſelf in a converſation which we had upon this ſubject: but upon the neareſt computation I could make with my pen, which I handled the moment he left me, I find that this very perſon who propoſed to gain 1 *per cent.* in 20,000 *l.* would, by the conſequential effect on the public credit, be a clear loſer of 2 *l. d.*

In

In ſhort, I am afraid certain perſons may at this time run the hazard of a fate which too often attends very wiſe men, who have not on all occaſions a recourſe to figures, and may incur the cenſure of an old proverb, 'By being penny wiſe and pound foolish.' And ſince I may be involved, againſt my will, in the calamity, I ſhall be obliged to you if you will publiſh theſe cautions, from,

SIR,

Your humble ſervant,

STEPHEN GRUB.

N. B. As your paper ſupplies the place of three Evening Poſts, I ſave 1½*d. per* week by it; for which pray accept my acknowledgment.

No. 13. TUESDAY, JANUARY 28, 1746.

Qui non recte inſtituunt atque erudiunt liberos, non ſolum liberis ſed et reipublicæ faciunt injuriam. CIC.

MR Adams having favoured me with a ſecond letter, I ſhall give it the public without any apology. If any thing in it ſhould at firſt a little ſhock thoſe readers who know the world better, I hope they will make allowances for the ignorance and ſimplicity of the writer.

To the TRUE PATRIOT.

My Worthy Friend,

I AM concerned to find, by all our public accounts, that the rebels ſtill continue in the land. In my laſt I evidently proved, that their ſucceſſes were owing to a judgment denounced againſt our ſins, and concluded with ſome exhortations for averting the divine

divine anger, by the only methods which ſuggeſted themſelves to my mind. Theſe exhortations, by the event, I perceive have not had that regard paid to them I had reaſon to expect. Indeed I am the more confirmed in this conjecture, by a lad whom I lately met at a neighbouring baronet's, where I ſojourn'd the two laſt days of the year, with my good friend Mr Wilſon.

This lad, whom I imagined to have been come from ſchool to viſit his friends for the holidays, (for though he is perhaps of ſufficient age, I found, on examination, he was not yet qualified for the univerſity) is, it ſeems, a man *ſui juris*; and is, as I gather from the young damſels Sir John's daughters, a member of the ſociety of Bowes. I know not whether I ſpell the word right: for I am not aſhamed to ſay, I neither underſtand its Etymology nor true import, as it hath never once occurred in any lexicon or dictionary which I have yet peruſed.

Whatever this ſociety may be, either the lad with whom I communed is an unworthy member, or it would become the government to put it down by authority; for he uttered many things during our diſcourſe, for which I would have well ſcourged any of the youth under my care.

He had not long entered the chamber before he acquainted the damſels, that he and his companions had carried the opera, in oppoſition to the puts; by which I afterwards learnt, he meant all ſober and diſcreet perſons. And fags! ſays he, (I am afraid though he made uſe of a worſe word) we expected the biſhops would have interfered; but if they had, we ſhould have ſilenced them. I then thought to myſelf, ſtrippling, if I had you well-horſed on the back of another lad, I would teach you more reverence to their lordſhips.

This opera, I am informed, is a diverſion in which a prodigious ſum of money, more than is to be collected out of twenty pariſhes, is laviſhed away on foreign eunuchs and papiſts, very ſcandalous to be ſuffered at any time, eſpecially at a ſeaſon when both war and famine hang over our heads.

During the whole time of our repaſt at dinner, the young gentleman entertained us with an account of ſeveral drums and routs, at which he had been preſent. Theſe are, it ſeems, large congregations of men and women, who inſtead of aſſembling together to hear ſomething that is good; nay, or to divert themſelves with gambols, which might be allowed now and then in holiday times, meet for no other purpoſe but that of gaming, for a whole guinea and much more at a ſtake. At this married women ſit up all night, nay ſometimes till one or two in the morning, neglect their families, loſe their money, and ſome, Mr Wilſon ſays, have been ſuſpected of doing even worſe than that. Yet this is ſuffered in a Chriſtian kingdom; nay, *(quod prorſus incredibile eſt)* the holy ſabbath is, it ſeems, proſtituted to theſe wicked revellings; and card-playing goes on as publicly then, as on any other day; nor is this only among the young lads and damſels, who might be ſuppoſed to know no better, but men advanced in years, and grave matrons, are not aſhamed of being caught at the ſame paſtime. *O tempora! O mores!*

When grace was ſaid after meat, and the damſels departed, the lad began to grow more wicked. Sir John, who was an honeſt Engliſhman, hath no other wine but that of Portugal. This our Bowe could not drink; and when Sir John very nobly declared he ſcorned to indulge his palate with rarities, for which he muſt furniſh the foe with money to carry on a war with the nation, the ſtripling replied, Rat the nation (God forgive me for repeating ſuch words!) I had rather live under French government than be debarred from French wine. Oho, my youth! if I had you horſed, thinks I again.—— But Indeed, Sir John well ſcourged him with his tongue for that expreſſion, and I ſhould have hoped he had made him aſhamed, had not his ſubſequent behaviour ſhewn him totally void of grace. For when Sir John aſked him for a toaſt, which you know is another word for drinking the health of one's friend or wife, or ſome perſon of public eminence, he named

the health of a married woman, filled out a bumper of wine, ſwore he would drink her health in Vinegar, and at laſt openly profeſſed he would commit adultery with her if he could. *Proh pudor!* Nay, and if ſuch a ſin might admit of any aggravation, ſhe is, it ſeems, a Lady of very high degree, *et quidem*, the wife of a lord.

Et dies et charta deficerent ſi omnia vellem percurrere, multa quidem impura et impudica quæ memorare nefas recitavit. Nor is this youth, it ſeems, a monſter, or prodigy in the age he lives; on the contrary, I am told he is an exemplar only of all the reſt.

But I now proceed to what muſt ſurprize you. After he had ſpent an hour in rehearſing all the vices to which youth have been ever too much addicted, and ſhown us that he was poſſeſſed of them all; *ut qui impudicus, adulter, Ganeo, Aleea, manu, ventre pene, bona Patria laceverat*, he began to enter upon politics.

O Proceres cenſore opus an haruſpice nobis.

This ſtripling, this bowes, this rake, diſcovered likewiſe all the wickedneſs peculiar to age, and that he had not with thoſe vices which proceed from the warmth of youth, one of the virtues which we ſhould naturally expect from the ſame ſanguine diſpoſition. He ſhewed us, that gray hairs could add nothing but hypocriſy to him; for he avowed public proſtitution; laughed at all honour, public ſpirit and patriotiſm, and gave convincing proofs that the moſt phlegmatic old miſer upon earth could not be ſooner tempted with gold to perpetrate the moſt horrid iniquities than himſelf.

Whether this youth be *(quod vix credo)* concerned himſelf in the public weal, or whether he have his information from others, I hope he greatly exceeded the truth in what he delivered on this ſubject. For was he to be believed, the concluſion we muſt draw would be, that the only concern of our great men, even at this time, was for places and penſions; that inſtead of applying themſelves to renovate and reſtore

our

our ſick and drooping commonweal, they were ſtruggling to get cloſeſt to her heart, and, like leeches, to ſuck her laſt drop of vital blood.

I hope, however, better things, and that this lad deſerves a good rod as well for lying as for all his other iniquity; and if his parents do not take care to have it well laid on, I can aſſure them they have much to anſwer for.

Mr Wilſon now found me grow very uneaſy, as indeed I had been from the beginning, nor could any thing but reſpect to the company have prevented me from correcting the boy long before; he therefore endeavoured to turn the diſcourſe, and aſked our ſpark, when he left London? To which he anſwered, the Wedneſday before. How, Sir, ſaid I, travel on Chriſtmas-day? Was it ſo? ſays he, fags! that's more than I knew; but why not travel on Chriſtmas-day as well as any other? Why not? ſaid I, lifting my voice; for I had loſt all patience. Was you not brought up in the Chriſtian religion? Did you never learn your catechiſm? He then burſt out into an unmannerly laugh, and ſo provoked me, that I ſhould certainly have ſmote him, had I not laid my crabſtick down in the window, and had not Mr Wilſon been fortunately placed between us. Odſo, Mr Parſon, ſays he, are you there? I wonder I had not ſmoked you before. Smoke me! anſwered I, and at the ſame time leapt from my chair, my wrath being highly kindled. At which inſtant a jackanapes, who ſat on my left hand, whipt my peruke from my head, which I no ſooner perceived than I preſented him a remembrance over the face, which laid him ſprawling on the floor. I was afterwards concerned at the blow, tho' the conſequence was only a bloody noſe, and the lad, who was a companion of the others, and had uttered many wicked things, which I pretermitted in my narrative, very well deſerved correction.

A buſtle now aroſe, not worth recounting, which ended in my departure with Mr Wilſon, tho' we had propoſed to tarry there that night.

In our way home, we both lamented the peculiar hardineſs of this country, which ſeems bent on its own deſtruction, nor will take warning by any viſitation, till the utmoſt wrath of divine vengeance overtakes it.

In diſcourſing upon this ſubject, we imputed much of the preſent profligacy to the notorious want of care in parents in the education of youth, who, as my friend informs me, with very little ſchool learning, and not at all inſtructed *(ne minime quidem imbuti)* in any principles of religion, virtue and morality, are brought to the great city, or ſent to travel to other great cities abroad, before they are twenty years of age, where they become their own maſters, and enervate both their bodies and minds with all ſorts of diſeaſes and vices, before they are adult.

I ſhall conclude with a paſſage in Ariſtotle's Politics, Lib VIII. Cap 1. Ὅτι μεν ἐν τῷ νομοθέτῃ μαλιστα πραγμα ἑητέον περι την των νέων παιδειαν, ἀδηλος ουδενι ἀμφισβητησις. και γαρ ἐν ταῖς πολισιν ὑπολαμβανομενον τοῦτο βλαπτει τας πολιτειας. Which for the ſake of women, and thoſe few gentlemen who do not underſtand Greek, I have rendered ſomewhat paraphraſtically in the vernacular. 'No man 'can doubt but that the education of youth ought to 'be the principal care of every legiſlator; by the neg'lect of which, great miſchief accrues to the civil 'polity in every city.'

I am, while you write like an honeſt man, and a good Chriſtian,

Your hearty friend and well-wiſher,

ABRAHAM ADAMS.

No. 23. TUESDAY, APRIL 8, 1746.

——Inſanus paucis videatur eo quod
Maxima pars hominum morbo jactatur eodem.

HOR.

I HAVE heard of a man who believed there was no real exiſtence in the world but himſelf; and that whatever he ſaw without him was mere phantom and illuſion.

This philoſopher, I imagine, hath not had many followers in theory; and yet if we were to derive the principles of mankind from their practice, we ſhould be almoſt perſuaded that ſomewhat like this madneſs had poſſeſſed not only particular men, but their ſeveral orders and profeſſions. For though they do not abſolutely deny all exiſtence to other perſons and things, yet it is certain they hold them of no conſequence, and little worth their conſideration, unleſs they trench ſomewhat towards their own order or calling.

As an inſtance of this, let us obſerve three or four members of any profeſſion met together in a general company, though it be never ſo large, they make no ſcruple of engroſſing the whole converſation, and turning it to their own profeſſion, without the leaſt conſideration of all the other perſons preſent.

Another example of the ſame temper may be ſeen in the monopolizing particular words, and confining their meaning to their own purpoſes, as if the reſt of the world had in reality no right to their application. A ſignal inſtance of which is in the adjective *good*. A word which of all others mankind would leaſt wiſh to be debarred from the uſe of, or from appropriating to themſelves and their friends.

Now when the divine, the free-thinker, the citizen, the whig, the tory, *&c.* pronounce ſuch an individual to be a good man, it is plain that they have all ſo

many different meanings; and he may be a very good man in the opinion of one in the company, who would be a very bad one in that of all the others.

I remember to have ſupped laſt winter, at a ſurgeon's, where were preſent ſome others of the faculty. The gentleman of the houſe declared he had a very good ſubject above in the garret. As the gentleman who ſaid this was, I knew, himſelf as good a ſubject as any in the kingdom, I could not avoid ſurprize at his chuſing to confine ſuch a perſon in a cold night, in ſuch a place: but I ſoon found my miſtake, and that this good ſubject had been hanged the day before for a moſt heinous felony.

An error of the ſame kind once happened to me amongſt ſome gentlemen of the army, who all agreed that one Mr Thunderſon was the beſt man in England. I own I was ſomewhat ſtaggered when I heard he was a corporal of grenadiers; but how much more was I aſtoniſhed when I found that he had half a dozen wives, and was the wickedeſt fellow in the whole regiment!

I cannot quit this head without remarking, that much inconvenience may ariſe from theſe miſtakes; and one indeed happened in the laſt mentioned inſtance; for a grave wealthy widow, of about forty, in the town where the regiment was quartered, having doubtleſs heard the ſame character of this man from his officers, and miſunderſtanding them, as I myſelf had done before their explanation, fell in love with his goodneſs and married him. A third example may be drawn from the attention of the readers of books, or the ſpectators at plays. I have ſomewhere heard of a Geographer who received no other pleaſure from the Æneid of Virgil, than by tracing out the Voyage of Æneas in the map. To which I may add a certain coachmaker, who having ſufficient Latin to read the ſtory of Phaeton in the Metamorphoſis, ſhook his head that ſo fine a genius for making chariots as Ovid had, was thrown away on making poems.

This ſelfiſh attention (if I may ſo call it) in the ſpectators at our theatres muſt be evident to all who have

have ever frequented them. Every joke on a courtier's not paying his debts, is ſure to receive a thundering applauſe from the pit and galleries. This debt is, however, paid by the boxes, on the firſt facetious alluſion to horns, or any other ſymbol of cuckoldom. Indeed the whole houſe are ſeldom unanimous in their claps, unleſs when the ridicule is againſt the miniſtry, the law or the clergy; whence, I ſuppoſe, that as government, law, and religion, are looked upon as the great grievances of the nation, the whole audience think themſelves alike intereſted in their demolition.

I knew a gentleman, who had great delight in obſerving the humours of the vulgar, and for that purpoſe uſed frequently to mount into the upper gallery. Here, as he told me, he once ſeated himſelf between two perſons, one of whom he ſoon diſcovered to be a broken taylor; and the other, a ſervant in a country family, juſt arrived in town. The play was Henry the Eighth, with that auguſt repreſentation of the coronation. The former of theſe, inſtead of admiring the great magnificence exhibited in that ceremony, obſerved with a ſigh, 'That he believed very few of 'theſe clothes were paid for' And the latter being aſked how he liked the play, (being the firſt he had ever ſeen) anſwered, 'It was all very fine: but no-'thing came up, in his opinion, to the ingenuity of 'ſnuffing the candles.'

I cannot omit the following ſtory, which I think a very ſtrong example of the temper I have above remarked. I remember to have been preſent at a certain religious aſſembly of the people called Methodiſts, where the preacher named the following text: "It is reported that fornication is among you." The whole congregation, as well as myſelf, expected, I believe, a wholeſome diſſertation on all criminal converſe between the ſexes; and ſome, who laboured under ſuſpicions of that kind, began to expreſs much apprehenſion and uneaſineſs in their countenances: but to our great ſurprize, the ſermon was entirely confined to the former part of the text, and we were only inſtructed in the nature and various kinds of reports.

This

This gave me ſome curioſity to enquire into the character of ſo extraordinary a preacher; and I found, to my perfect ſatisfaction, that he had got his living many years by collecting articles of news for one of the public papers.

If we reflect ſeriouſly on this diſpoſition of mankind, ſo univerſally exerted in private life, it will lead us to account for the behaviour of men and parties in public; and we ſhall loſe much of that ſurprize, which might otherwiſe naturally enough affect us, from obſerving the rigid adherence which men of no diſhoneſt characters preſerve to their own party and their own ſchemes. Hence it is, that men become more the ſubjects of our conſideration than meaſures; and hence it hath ſometimes happened, that men (and thoſe not the worſt of men neither) have been more intent on advancing their own ſchemes, than on advancing the good of the public, and would have riſqued the preſervation of the latter, rather than have given up the purſuit of the former. I have ſaid it; I have invented it; I have writ upon it; are as ſubſtantial arguments with ſome politicians, as they are with the doctor in Gil Blas, who had writ on the virtues of hot water, and therefore refuſed to agree with thoſe who preſcribe cold. To ſay the truth, this partiality to ourſelves, our own opinions, and our own party hath introduced many dangerous evils into commonwealths. It is this humour which keeps up the name of Jacobitiſm in this kingdom; and it is this humour only from which his preſent Majeſty or his adminiſtration can derive a ſingle enemy within it. The OPPOSITION (if a handful of men, and thoſe for the moſt part totally inſignificant, as well in fortune as abilities, are worthy that name) would, I believe, be puzzled to give any better reaſon for their conduct than the aforeſaid doctor, or than parſon Adams hath done for them, who ſays, that Oppoſition is derived from the verb *oppono*, and that the Engliſh of the verb *oppono* is to oppoſe.

No. 24. TUESDAY, APRIL 15, 1746.

——*Medici mediam pertundite venam.* Juv.

I Have heard it often objected to the friends of the government, when they have expreſſed their apprehenſions of a Jacobite party in this kingdom, that theſe fears were counterfeited, in order to form an argument for the ſupport of a ſtanding army, or to excuſe ſome other miniſterial ſchemes; for that, in reality, the very ſeeds of Jacobitiſm were deſtroyed, and rooted out from the minds of every Proteſtant Britiſh ſubject.

I am not aſhamed to own myſelf to have been one of the many who were impoſed on by theſe ſuggeſtions: I am much more concerned to ſee that this was an impoſition, and that experience ſhould at laſt have convinced every man, that there are ſtill ſome perſons, (an inconſiderable party indeed, when compared to the number of loyal ſubjects) who profeſs the proteſtant religion, while they wiſh well to the deſigns of a popiſh pretender.

The principal motive which induced me to hold my former opinion, was the reaſonableneſs of it. I diſbelieved the exiſtence of proteſtant Jacobitiſm, from the ſame principles which inſpire me to deny our aſſent to many of theſe ſtrange relations which certain voyage-writers recount to us. I looked upon ſuch an animal as a greater monſter than the moſt romantic of theſe writers have ever deſcribed, and was therefore eaſily perſuaded to credit thoſe who very ſolemnly aſſured us, there was no ſuch to be found in the land.

I have hitherto avoided any conteſt with theſe ſort of gentlemen, not from the contempt of ſo poor a victory: for I ſhould think my labours well beſtowed in bringing the weakeſt of them over to the cauſe of truth;

truth; but in plain fact, they are the laſt perſons with whom I would willingly enter the liſts of diſputation, from abſolute deſpair of ſucceſs; for what is ſo difficult to anſwer as nothing, or what more impoſſible to be evinced, than the light of the ſun to him who hath not eyes to diſcern it? I have therefore greatly admired the patriotiſm of thoſe heroes, who have formerly waſted much of their time to prove, that millions were not intended by an all-good Being, for the uſe and wanton diſpoſition of one man; that a proteſtant church was not abſolutely ſecure under the protection of a prince who looks on himſelf as bound by his religion, and that on pain of damnation, to deſtroy it; that a magiſtrate attempting to deſtroy thoſe laws and conſtitutions which he was ſworn and obliged to defend, forfeited that power which he ſo entirely perverted; with numberleſs other propoſitions equally plain and demonſtrable, or rather indeed ſelf-evident. So that if the abſurdity of their tenets was not of itſelf ſufficiently apparent, and did not glare them in the face, it hath been ſo irrefragably proved by the labours of thoſe good men, who have undertaken the defence of the revolution, that the Jacobites of this age have no other excuſe left, but that of not being able to read.

This is an excuſe which I am ſenſible may be fairly pleaded by many, and thoſe none of the leaſt conſiderable pillars of the party. There have been, however, ſome who have not only read, but have endeavoured to anſwer theſe writers; and have very modeſtly attempted to oppoſe the common ſenſe of mankind, in a point wherein their higheſt intereſt is concerned.

As ſuch performances are ſeldom long-lived, few of them have reached our days: but the following letter, which I look upon as a very curious piece, and which was written in the reign of the late King William, contains, I believe, the ſum of all thoſe arguments which have been ever uſed on the behalf of Jacobitiſm; I ſhall therefore give it the reader, after having premiſed, that it was written by a nonjuror to his ſon at Oxford.

" DEAR

" DEAR SON,

" I Received yours of the 4th paſt, and am ſo well " ſatisfied with your conduct on the birth-day of " that old rump rogue with an orange, that I have " ſent you a draught on your tutor, according to your " deſires. As long as my ſon preſerves his principles " ſound, I ſhall not be angry at any frolicks of youth. " Provided therefore you never get drunk but on holi- " days, (as the government are pleaſed to call them), " and in toaſting the damnation of the rump, and " confuſion to the day, &c. you may confeſs your- " ſelf freely, without fear of incurring my diſpleaſure. " I approve the company you keep much Be ſure " not to herd with the ſons of courtiers; for there " is no conſcience nor honeſty in them; nor will the " nation ever thrive till the king enjoys his own again; " a health which I never fail to drink every day of my " life in a bumper, and I hope you do the like. I " ſhall never think I can remind you often enough " of theſe matters; for I had rather ſee you hanged " for your true king, than enjoy a place under this " orange raſcal, who has undone the nation. Our " family have always, I thank God, been of the ſame " kidney, and I hope will remain ſo to all poſterity. " It is the true old cauſe, and we will live and die by " it, boy. Damn the rump: that is my motto. Old " England will never ſee any good days, till it is " thoroughly roaſted. Your god-father, Sir John, " dined with me yeſterday, he aſked kindly after you. " We drank nine bottles a piece of ſtum, and talked " over all matters. We ſcarce uttered a word for " which the raſcally whigs would not have hanged " us; but I deſire no better from fellows who would " pull down the church, if they had it in their power. " I fear not, however, that it will be able to ſtand " in ſpite of all their malice, and that i ſhall drink " church and king as long as I live. You know what " king I mean. God remove him from that ſide of " the water on which he now is. Let every man have " his own, I ſay, and I am ſure that is the ſentiment " of an honeſt man; and of one who abhors theſe

" per-

" perſecuting raſcals, who make men pay for their
" conſciences. But do thou, my boy, rather ſubmit
" to their power than court their favour; for right
" is right; and though might may overcome it, it can
" never be aboliſhed. If kings derive their power
" from Heaven, men can have no juſt pretence to
" deprive them of it. Orange hath no ſuch right.
" We know he was made by men, and conſequently
" his title cannot be deduced from Heaven. Your
" tutor informs me you have been in great apprehen-
" ſion for the church at Oxford, and we in the
" country agree it is in danger: But let her enemies
" do what they can, honeſt hearts will continue to
" drink to her preſervation; and while the whigs
" ſee the unalterable determination of our party,
" they will always be afraid of executing their wicked
" purpoſes. As to taxes, we muſt expect them, while
" the government is in ſuch hands, and the true king
" in baniſhment. A whig juſtice of peace at the
" ſeſſions the other day, had the impudence to tell
" me they were impoſed by parliament: but how
" can that be a parliament which wants one part in
" three of its conſtituents; nay, and that the head.
" Is not the head ſuperior to the body? And conſe-
" quently, hath not the king a better right to impoſe
" taxes, than lords and commons without a king?
" Let right take place, ſay I, and then we will pay
" without grumbling; but to be taxed by a rump, a
" ſet of whigs and preſbyterians, and fellows with
" an orange in their mouths; I will drink confuſion
" to them as long as I can ſtand. However, I hope
" ſoon to ſee better times, and that we may change
" our healths, and drink to our friends openly; for
" we are aſſured here by ſome Roman Catholic prieſts,
" who are honeſter fellows than whigs, and may be
" brought over to go to church in time, that the
" French king will do his utmoſt to reſtore us again
" to our liberties and properties: for which reaſon,
" we always drink his health and ſucceſs, immedi-
" ately after church and king, and confuſion to the
" rump. I hop you will do the ſame at your club
" at Oxford; for take it from me as I have it from

" others, that all the hopes this nation have of being
" preſerved is from that quarter. Indeed there wants
" no other reaſon for our drinking him, than that the
" whigs are his enemies; for nothing can ever be
" good for this nation which thoſe raſcals wiſh well
" to. I am ſure no one ever ſuſpected me of wiſhing
" well to the Pope, and yet I would drink his health
" ſooner than I would that of a preſbyterian. I hope
" you will never converſe with any ſuch, but when
" you can't find true church-of-England-men, rather
" chuſe papiſts; for they are leſs enemies to our
" church; and that they would deſtroy it muſt be a
" lie, becauſe the whigs ſay it: but confuſion to them!
" and may the king enjoy his own again, will always
" be the toaſt of, &c."

THE

JACOBITE's JOURNAL.

By JOHN TROTT-PLAID, Esq;

No. 15. SATURDAY, March 12, 1748.

To the Writer of the JACOBITE's JOURNAL.

SIR;

YOU have here a tranſlation of a Latin poem, intitled, *De Arte Jacobitica*, in three books. I have ſent you the Engliſh verſion of the firſt book, becauſe I have been told that Jacobites are no ſcholars, and underſtand no Latin. If you like this, you may hereafter receive the tranſlation of the ſecond book. Mean time, I remain yours, *&c.*

M. O. A. J.

HORACE wrote the art of poetry, Ovid the art of love, and I write the art of ja-cobitiſm.—Come, Tiſiphone, from hell, bring with thee ill-judging zeal, and obſtinate bigotry, and inſpire me with all thy furies, while I teach the black art of Jacobitiſm. 'Twas thou that didſt inſtruct the holy Inquiſitors, and thoſe miſcreants that belyed the ſacred name of Jeſus, to embrue their hands in Chriſtian blood: Nor haſt thou been unmindful of the Engliſh nation: we too can boaſt our Lauds, our Sacheverels, our **ok**ippen* [Here ſeveral proper names were doubtleſs in the original, but the rats or moths have devoured them.]

Firſt of all, learn the art of lying, and miſrepreſenting. Fling dirt enough, and ſome will certainly ſtick. You may venture to abuſe the king himſelf; but do this with caution, for the ſake of your ears and head. But ſpare not his miniſters; give a wrong turn to their moſt plauſible actions. If they proſecute the war with vigour, ſwear they are neglectful; if they deſire a peace, call them cowards; if war, call them blood-thirſty, and ſeekers after the ruin of their country. 'Twas by ſuch arts as theſe that the brave Marlborough, and the juſt Godolphin, fell a victim to the intrigues of Harley and ***. You may add perjury to your lies. Jupiter, 'tis ſaid, laughs at the perjury of lovers; he has many a time forſworn himſelf to Juno. You have Jupiter for your example: what can a pagan, like yourſelf, deſire more?

The next thing you are to remember, is to feign a love to your country and religion: the leſs you have of both, the better you can feign both. O liberty, O virtue, O my country! Remember to have ſuch expreſſions as theſe conſtantly in your mouth. Words do wonders with ſilly people: but don't too openly diſcover your deſign of ruining your country by changing the religion of it, and introducing arbitrary power and a Popiſh king. Don't be caught in your own trap. Remember the end of Perillus, who was burnt in his own bull; and you may be ruined yourſelf before you bring about the ruin of your country. Keep therefore to general terms, and never deſcend to particulars: you may wiſh things went better.—You can't tell, but ſurely 'twas better in good Queen Anne's days—or in the bacchanalian times of Charles—or in the holy martyr's reign. At the mentioning the martyr, you may drop a tear; and if you are ſure of your ſilly company, you may ſwear the preſent miniſtry cut off his head. An anachroniſm in politics, is no more faulty than an anachroniſm in poetry. If you are among good and orthodox churchmen, you may ſwear the church of England is in danger under a church of England king, and cannot be ſecure unleſs the Popiſh pretender is reſtored. Paradoxes in converſation are to be ſupported with confidence and ſophiſtry.

ſophiſtry. Remember, likewiſe, that you frequently inculcate the divine right of kings to do wrong; and that they are accountable to God only for being devils upon earth.

Various people are to be taken by various methods; and a wiſe Proteus will turn himſelf into all ſhapes. This Proteus, the fables ſay, was an Egyptian conjuror, and transformed himſelf into what monſtrous appearance he pleaſed: he roar'd a lion, he grinn'd a wolf, he flaſh'd a fire, he flow'd a river. This Proteus be thou; roar, grin, flaſh, and flow. Spread thy nets, and catch the various fry with various baits. Conſider a little the diſpoſitions of mankind; the young are open and honeſt, the old are cautious and wary. Old birds are not to be caught with chaff; and an old hare will be ſure to double.

But you will aſk perhaps where the proper perſons are to be found to make proſelytes of to jacobitiſm. This is an enquiry worthy a ſportſman: for he is a bad huntſman who would beat about the Royal Exchange, for a hare or a fox; and not a much better gunner or fiſherman, who goes a ſhooting in Somerſet-Gardens, or attempts to angle in the magnificent baſon there. As thoſe all know the places where their game reſort, ſo muſt you. You have no occaſion to go with parſon Whitefield to Georgia after a young jacobite; but you may go with parſon Whitefield to Kennington Common, or Bagſhot Heath, or Hounſlow, in queſt of one; for want has made many a man a jacobite, revenge more, and ignorance thouſands. Want and penury bid you hope for change. Revenge works ſtronger in the human heart than even penury. Who can bear to ſee a rival prevail? Hence the affected patriotiſm of *** and ** and *. [Here likewiſe are many proper names loſt, never to be retrieved but by conjecture.] Ignorance is the mother of jacobitiſm. Hence the rural ſportſmen and fox-hunters will fall an eaſy prey; and the country will afford ſufficient plenty of younger brothers, whoſe eyes their good mothers have kept betimes from poring on Greek and Latin authors; thoſe Greek and Latin authors, which have been the bane

of the jacobite cauſe, and inſpired men with the love of Athenian liberty and old Rome, and taught them to hate tyrants and arbitrary governments. London too has all ſorts of game for the net. Whores and rogues abound there; many are ruined, and moſt in a fair way of being ſo. How many diſappointed out-of-place poor rogues do we every day meet? and what univerſal ignorance, attended with complicated impudence? In ſhort, the variety is ſo great, that it will even diſtract your choice.

But above all, in times of public calamities, then remember your leſſon; ſay God himſelf is turn'd our enemy. And if, by chance, our monarch ſhould meditate new triumphs, and reſolve on the puniſhment of France; then, when William the avenger is abroad, do thou raiſe commotions and tumults at home. Whilſt he, all gold, ſhines in the Galic plains, carrying in his hand his father's thunder; do thou, all lies, walk the dirty ſtreets of London: and remember, I repeat it again, fling dirt enough; blacken, lie, and defame. Perhaps ſome Jack Cade may ariſe in the glorious cauſe of jacobitiſm, and ſhake the throne itſelf; while ſwarms of locuſts and caterpillars come from the north, and devour the fruits of England.

Part of our undertaking ſtill remains, and part is finiſh'd; here then let us caſt anchor, and moor the ſhip.

No. 34. SATURDAY, JULY 23, 1748.

——Talem ſe læta ferebat
Per medios, inſtans operi, regniſque futuris. VIRG.

To the AUTHOR of the JACOBITE JOURNAL.

SIR,

THE ſerious truths contained in this letter, will, I hope, make an apology unneceſſary. You are to know, that I am of that high order of beings, which

which the world calls a married man; that to render my ſtate of life happy, as well as honourable, I have, in every thing, ſubmitted to the will of my wife: and this, I can truly ſay, not more from a conviction of the great duty of obedience, than to avoid contention, and to promote family peace, and good-humour in my houſe. It is now eleven years ſince the kindeſt and loveliеſt of her ſex honoured me with the poſſeſſion of her ſweetneſs: in all which time, 'till within a little more than a twelvemonth, ſhe has condeſcended to make my ſervitude my delight, abridging me only where my wiſhes were ſtrongeſt, and conſequently leading to exceſs; and indulging me in every thing indifferent in my own opinion, or deſirable in hers. This uniformity of conduct had rendered us the admiration and envy of all our acquaintance; there was hardly a married woman who viſited us, but propoſed me as an example to her huſband, and treaſured up the maxims of my wife, as ſo many leſſons for her own conduct. We were, in ſhort, a couple who left not happineſs to chance; one planned what the other executed, and both enjoyed the fruits of our care. Alas! Mr Trott-plaid, I wiſh the buſineſs of this letter was only to tell you of my happineſs; but that (however well ſecured as you may think) has known its period, and I am at preſent the moſt miſerable of all beings.

It is now about a year ſince a grave clergyman from Oxford came to board with us. To this gentleman (though no ſeducer of what my wife calls her virtue) I owe all my misfortunes. He had not been a month in the family, before I obſerved that my wife's head had taken a political turn; the affairs of her family began to be neglected; and notwithſtanding we owed our entire ſupport to a genteel poſt I enjoyed under the government, I was compelled every day at table to hear that government abuſed. At every glaſs after dinner, a laugh and a whiſpered toaſt between my wife and her friend, gave me freſh cauſe of uneaſineſs. My eldeſt boy made his appearance in a plaid waiſtcoat, and my girl's petticoat and doll were of the ſame ſtuff. I was pleaſed indeed, at firſt,

to

of the jacobite cauſe, and inſpired men with the love of Athenian liberty and old Rome, and taught them to hate tyrants and arbitrary governments. London too has all ſorts of game for the net. Whores and rogues abound there; many are ruined, and moſt in a fair way of being ſo. How many diſappointed out-of-place poor rogues do we every day meet? and what univerſal ignorance, attended with complicated impudence? In ſhort, the variety is ſo great, that it will even diſtract your choice.

But above all, in times of public calamities, then remember your leſſon; ſay God himſelf is turn'd our enemy. And if, by chance, our monarch ſhould meditate new triumphs, and reſolve on the puniſhment of France; then, when William the avenger is abroad, do thou raiſe commotions and tumults at home. Whilſt he, all gold, ſhines in the Galic plains, carrying in his hand his father's thunder; do thou, all lies, walk the dirty ſtreets of London: and remember, I repeat it again, fling dirt enough; blacken, lie, and defame. Perhaps ſome Jack Cade may ariſe in the glorious cauſe of jacobitiſm, and ſhake the throne itſelf; while ſwarms of locuſts and caterpillars come from the north, and devour the fruits of England.

Part of our undertaking ſtill remains, and part is finiſh'd; here then let us caſt anchor, and moor the ſhip.

No. 34. SATURDAY, JULY 23, 1748.

——Talem ſe læta ferebat
Per medios, inſtans operi, regniſque futuris. VIRG.

To the AUTHOR of the JACOBITE JOURNAL.

SIR,

THE ſerious truths contained in this letter, will, I hope, make an apology unneceſſary. You are to know, that I am of that high order of beings, which

which the world calls a married man; that to render my ſtate of life happy, as well as honourable, I have, in every thing, ſubmitted to the will of my wife: and this, I can truly ſay, not more from a conviction of the great duty of obedience, than to avoid contention, and to promote family peace, and good-humour in my houſe. It is now eleven years ſince the kindeſt and loveliest of her ſex honoured me with the poſſeſſion of her ſweetneſs: in all which time, 'till within a little more than a twelvemonth, ſhe has condeſcended to make my ſervitude my delight, abridging me only where my wiſhes were ſtrongeſt, and conſequently leading to exceſs; and indulging me in every thing indifferent in my own opinion, or deſirable in hers. This uniformity of conduct had rendered us the admiration and envy of all our acquaintance; there was hardly a married woman who viſited us, but propoſed me as an example to her huſband, and treaſured up the maxims of my wife, as ſo many leſſons for her own conduct. We were, in ſhort, a couple who left not happineſs to chance; one planned what the other executed, and both enjoyed the fruits of our care. Alas! Mr Trott-plaid, I wiſh the buſineſs of this letter was only to tell you of my happineſs; but that (however well ſecured as you may think) has known its period, and I am at preſent the moſt miſerable of all beings.

It is now about a year ſince a grave clergyman from Oxford came to board with us. To this gentleman (though no ſeducer of what my wife calls her virtue) I owe all my misfortunes. He had not been a month in the family, before I obſerved that my wife's head had taken a political turn; the affairs of her family began to be neglected; and notwithſtanding we owed our entire ſupport to a genteel poſt I enjoyed under the government, I was compelled every day at table to hear that government abuſed. At every glaſs after dinner, a laugh and a whiſpered toaſt between my wife and her friend, gave me freſh cauſe of uneaſineſs. My eldeſt boy made his appearance in a plaid waiſtcoat, and my girl's petticoat and doll were of the ſame ſtuff. I was pleaſed indeed, at firſt,

to

to hear the child checked by her mamma, for drinking the King over the water; but was as much diſpleaſed at the reaſon of that check, which was, that James was a plain name, and would ſave the trouble of ſuch unneceſſary diſtinctions.

Upon this occaſion it was, that I took upon me, for the firſt time, to make a remonſtrance, in private, to my wife: which though I did with all the ſubmiſſion of a huſband, I found to my coſt, that I had done wrong. Inſtead of the compliance I in ſome meaſure expected, I was upbraided by her as a mean-ſpirited wretch; one who was willing to ſubſiſt by ſhame, and to acknowledge favours from a ſet of men whoſe friendſhip was a diſgrace to me; and that if I expected the continuance of her regard, I muſt think of ſome other means of ſupporting my family, than by an infamous place, given me by thoſe, who derived their power of beſtowing it from one who wanted right to confer that power. You will judge of my concern, Mr Trott plaid, at theſe words. ——I was ſorry to differ in my opinion from my wife, and yet was almoſt apt to imagine that opinion a little unreaſonable. To think of giving up my poſt was an impracticable thing, and to live under the diſpleaſure of my wife, an impoſſible one. I entreated her to proceed with the utmoſt caution in this affair; and telling her I would aſk her friend's advice in it, I left her to conſult him.

I had the pleaſure of finding this honeſt clergyman of a contrary opinion. He ſaw no objection, he ſaid, to my holding a place under the worſt of governments, provided I endeavoured, as much as in me lay, to act in oppoſition to thoſe who had obliged me. That neither religion nor conſcience required me to refuſe favours from the hands of thoſe whom it was my duty to deteſt. That an oppoſition of this kind was the more meritorious, as it was the more diſintereſted; and the hazard of property would be the beſt proof I could give of the ſincerity of my zeal. That all men were under an obligation to provide for their families in the beſt manner they were able: but tho' neceſſity compelled me to eat the bread of ſhame, yet

conſcience

conſcience forbad me to live a life of it. It was no ſin, he ſaid, in war, to plunder the enemy that we have firſt killed: And, by a ſimilitude of reaſoning, he conceived it was as innocent to plunder the friend we intended afterwards to kill. That meaſures, more than men, wanted a change: and that power was the ſureſt means to ruin thoſe who raiſed us to it. That, for his own part, he had hopes of preferment himſelf from the government, which he intended to accept of without ſcruple, as it might furniſh him with the means of doing good, and of keeping weaker men from power, whoſe miſtaken gratitude for obligations might tempt them to make unſuitable returns. For theſe reaſons, he ſaid, he begged leave to differ from the good lady of the houſe, and adviſed me to continue in my poſt, as it ſerved me in a double capacity, both for private ſupport, and national advantage.

I cannot conceal the ſatisfaction of my mind at the reaſoning of this worthy gentleman. I ſubmitted entirely to his opinion; my wife, who is the beſt of women, was eaſily brought over by her friend, and domeſtic harmony was again reſtored. The groans of our bleeding country indeed were too often in our ears, and ſomewhat diſturbed the tranquillity of our minds; but the hope that every one would have his own at laſt, ſet all things right, and we lived in expectation of the happy change.

It was about this time that my wife, who had very much improved her ſpelling under the tuition of her friend, commenced writer in the cauſe. A pamphlet, called, *The State of the Nation*, and Three Letters to the Whigs, are the product of her invention. In theſe ſhe ſo well ſucceeded, that many were of opinion they wanted nothing but truth to be finiſhed performances. Indeed that noble and free ſpirit of ſcandal, which is the characteriſtic of thoſe pamphlets, is ſufficient evidence that their author could be no other than a woman.

We had the pleaſure, ſoon after this, to learn from the clergyman, that a friend of his in the adminiſtration had preſented him to a conſiderable benefice in the country. The good man received our congratu-

lations

lations upon the occaſion with tears; and taking a moſt affectionate leave, he retired to his living. The ſatisfaction we received in our friend's promotion would hardly have made us amends for the pains of parting with him, if an unfortunate accident, and ſome information that followed it, had not opened our eyes to ſee that worthy gentleman in his proper character.

My wife was buſied in her political ſtudies one day, with her Bailey's dictionary before her, when I received a meſſage from above, that my employment was taken from me.——I enquired into the meaning of ſuch procedure, and I was anſwered, that I was an infamous, ungrateful fellow; one that deſerved hanging; and if I did not mend my manners and my wife, the government might poſſibly take a ſeverer notice of me. With theſe words the meſſenger left me; and I retired to my wife's apartment for comfort and advice. That heroic woman, inſtead of calling my diſmiſſion a misfortune, gloried in the occaſion.——It was now, ſhe ſaid, ſhe would apply to the people for that emolument the enemies of their country had diſpoſſeſſed me of. That ſhe had long been ſolicited by the proprietors of certain news-papers to lend her abilities. That ſhe had deſired time to conſider of their propoſals, but was now determined; that ſhe had indeed, for ſome weeks paſt, adminiſtred helps to Old-England, and the London Evening Poſt, and had occaſionally furniſhed a few papers upon naval affairs in the Fool; but that the writers of thoſe papers were ſo incorrigibly dull, that her bare intervention was of little uſe; ſhe therefore declared, as the miniſtry had provoked her to plan their utter ruin, ſhe would heſitate no longer to undertake the ſole direction of them. That the advantages ariſing from ſuch papers would treble thoſe of the poſt I had loſt; and that I ought to look upon myſelf as the happieſt of men, in having a head to my family, who knew how to ſecure the emoluments of a huſband by the very means that muſt ſave her dearer country from deſtruction.

My

My heart was overflowing with comfort at theſe aſſurances, when the viſit of a friend interrupted the diſcourſe.—He condoled with me in the kindeſt manner for the loſs of my place; but, how, Mr Trott-plaid, ſhall I expreſs my aſtoniſhment, when he aſſured me, upon his own knowledge, that my friend the clergyman, that friend I ſo dearly loved, was the perſon to whom I was indebted for this obligation! He told me, that the buſineſs of this viper, during the time of his ſtay with us, was to pay his court to the adminiſtration, in which he ſo well ſucceeded as to obtain a promiſe of preferment. That to perfect this promiſe, and to remove any ſuſpicions they might poſſibly entertain of his principles, he had made a voluntary ſacrifice of my wife and me: concluding, that I was an avowed jacobite, and my wife the writer of every ſcurrilous pamphlet that had infeſted the public. I own to you, Mr Trott-plaid, upon this diſcovery I began to be aſhamed of the part I had acted.—It occurred to me that the principles of this man might poſſibly be as falſe as his friendſhip; but my wife conceived a different opinion. —— Bad practices, ſhe ſaid, were no proof of bad principles; hers ſhe knew were right; and however ill her friend might have treated her, his name and memory deſerved reſpect, as by his means ſhe was become a pillar of ſupport to a failing nation.

I will not tire you, Mr Trott-plaid, with my wife's arguments, or my own ſubmiſſions.———The news papers abovementioned have been ever ſince under her direction; but, whether from a want of taſte in the public, or from a knowledge that they are the writings of a woman, the propoſed advantages have fallen ſhort even of common ſubſiſtence.—It is impoſſible to repreſent to you the diſtreſſes we have ſtruggled with; but what is the worſt of all, I have the concern to ſee my children taught treaſon as ſoon as they can ſpeak; and my little boy, juſt eight years old, the hopes of my family, is turned poet, and writes the verſes, as he calls them, in the London Evening Poſt: he has juſt ſent ſome lines on the eclipſe

eclipſe * to the preſs. Dear Sir, adviſe me what to do; for tho' my wife hates you, and has often abuſed you in print, I am

Your affectionate friend,

and moſt humble ſervant,

SIMON SUPPLE.

† Note, theſe were printed in the London Evening Poſt of Saturday laſt, and are well enough for ſuch a child.

THE END